

The Plan And Purpose Of The Ages

(With Emphasis On The Pre-Adamic Ages, Jesus Our Great High Priest After The Order Of Melchizedek And The Melchizedek Priesthood)

(By Alister Hamilton, W Turner and Others)

Contents

Foreword By William H Turner – Page 2

Foreword by Alister Hamilton – Page 2

Introduction – Page 4

Before The Creation Of Heaven And Earth – Page 5

The Heavenly Ages – Page 11

The Earth Age Under Lucifer – Page 11

The Earth Age Under Satan – Page 25

The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos – Page 26

The Age Of Communion – Page 45

The Age of Forbearance – Page 47

The Age Of Stern Justice – Page 52

The Age Of Promise – Page 54

The Age Of Law – Page 70

The Age Of Grace – Page 92

The Age Of Stern Divine Government – Page 105

The Ages Of Ages – Page 105

Conclusion - 105

Appendices – Page 106

Appendix 1: Demons – Page 106

Appendix 2: In Gen 3v16, God Did Not Curse Women – Page 117

Appendix 3: Paul's Doctrine Of "Sin In The Flesh" – Page 123

Appendix 4: All The Covenant Names Of Yahweh Are Given To Us In The Name Of Jesus – Page 124

Appendix 5: Reuel (Jethro), The Priest Of Midian – Page 125

Appendix 6: Asaph, The Seer, The Levite, The Holy Ghost Singer, And Worship Leader – Page 126

Appendix 7: God Made Jesus The Perfect Saviour And High Priest Through Suffering – Page 128

Appendix 8: Looking Away Unto Jesus The Author And Perfecter Of Our Faith – Page 146

Appendix 9: Looking For And Hastening The Coming Of The Day Of God – Page 155

Appendix 10: Behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill...with the beasts of the earth Rev 6v7,8 – Page 160

Appendix 11: Radiometric Dating, A Christian Perspective by Dr. Roger C. Wiens – Page 161

All Scriptural quotations in this study are taken from the King James Version, unless otherwise stated. The King James Version follows the vast majority of Greek texts in the order of about 1,000 to 10, and it is also confirmed by the ancient manuscripts in other languages, like the Gothic and Peshitta. It is in my opinion still the most accurate translation from the original Scriptures, and is my preferred version, and other translations quoted in this study, are tested against the King James Version. The Hebrew and Greek texts are taken from The Interlinear Bible.

Foreword By William H Turner.

Alister, in his usual thorough and scholarly way, has done a detailed study on God's Plan of the Ages, which is surely one of the most important and instructive doctrines of the apostle Paul. We read in Eph 3v11, "according to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord." "According to the eternal purpose," is, "Kata prōthesin toón aionoon," literally, "According to the purpose (or plan) of the ages." Paul speaks of God's remarkable and amazing plan of the ages. Alister illuminates our minds with the details of these truly remarkable and deep things of the mind and purposes of God.

It is surprising that little has been written about "The Pre-Adamic Angelic Ages," in spite of their great importance. It appears that Satan has done his utmost to hide the important truths about them from the people of God, because it exposes his long and implacable hatred of God. Satan has made great efforts to hide from mankind the truth about God's great love for His creation, and His loving ways and purposes.

I realize that the subject of "The Pre-Adamic Ages," is highly controversial, and that there are bound to be severe criticisms of this study by Alister Hamilton. However, I can heartily recommend this study by Alister, it is very informative and scholarly, and is a magnificent and brilliant study. However, the technical nature of some of the information given by Alister will almost certainly be beyond the grasp of most ordinary people, however, study it, meditate upon it, and digest all that you can.

The dating information and fossil evidence will be among the most bitterly criticised parts of the book, however, don't throw the baby out with the bathwater, there is much valuable information in this study that is not obtainable elsewhere. Put any bones that you may find on the side of the plate and enjoy the valuable meat revealed in this study. **Appendix 11: "Radiometric Dating, A Christian Perspective" by Dr. Roger C. Wiens to receive a better understanding of the scientific methods used to calculate the different ages of organic materials, rocks and other objects.**

We read in Job 38v4-15, that all the angels sang aloud and shouted for joy at the first creation of the world, this included Lucifer, and spoke of the time before his fall. This first creation of the world was for the angels, and Satan's fall brought about the corruption and destruction of this beautiful creation of God. Failure to study Job.38. has led to an appalling ignorance and neglect of the Pre-Adamic Angelic Ages by Christian theologians, don't let their ignorance blind your eyes to the truth. Enjoy and be informed by this remarkable study by Alister.

William Turner, 18th June 2011.

Foreword By Alister Hamilton.

This study of "The Plan And Purpose Of The Ages" was not one I had intended to do, but came about as a result of another study I had started ("Jesus Our Great High Priest After The Order Of Melchizedek And The Melchizedek Priesthood") which required a few paragraphs on this very subject. So I started looking into this matter and while discussing it with a friend, he suggested that it would be a good idea to do an in depth study rather than something superficial, so with that in mind I set about this very task, however, it soon became apparent to me that the study about Our Lord's High Priestly ministry and the Melchizedek Priesthood because it was a part of His "eternal purpose" actually belonged in this study of "The Plan And Purpose Of The Ages." Psalm 110v4, Eph 3v9-11, Heb 5v6, 8v7-13, 10v1-25, 1Pet 2v1-10,

Long before I became a Christian I had always reckoned that the creation was very old, certainly much greater than the six thousand years that a lot of Christians have been taught by their (un)spiritual fathers (1Pet 1v18); they have simply believed without question what these "so-called" teachers have taught them, instead of following the example of the Jews at Berea, who searched the Scriptures daily to see if what Paul was teaching was indeed the Truth. (Searched (in Acts 17v11) is in Greek, "anakrínontes," the present active participle of "anakrino" (NT:350), which means to scrutinize, to sift up and down, make careful and exact research (as in legal processes, as in Acts 4v9, 12v19) of the Scriptures for themselves. The

present tense signifies that they kept on searching the Scriptures until they were sure that what Paul was teaching was indeed the Truth and so many of them believed, Acts 17v10-12). When a believer unquestioningly and blindly accepts an unscriptural teaching they become reprobate in mind on this issue and Truth cannot come into their spirits and minds on that line. They also fall into the same folly as the unbeliever who rejects the Light of Creation (that is the things that He has created, i.e., His handiworks) that is all around them, which Paul states in Rom 1v20 clearly reveals "his **eternal** power and Godhead." ("Eternal" is in Greek, "aidios" (NT:126) and is from "aei" (NT:104) (Eng. "ever") and means ever during (forward and backward, or forward only), eternal, everlasting. Hermann Cremer states the following, "While **aionios**... negatives the end either of a space of time or of unmeasured time, and is used chiefly where something future is spoken of, **aidios** excludes interruption and lays stress upon permanence and unchangeableness"). Creation itself in revealing "His eternal power and Godhead" also clearly shows forth the great age of His Creation, the light of which, Christians who hold onto the lie that the creation is only six thousand years old, wilfully and knowingly reject by suppressing and holding it down, which then brings great darkness upon their minds, so that light upon this subject cannot enter into their understanding. Rom 1v18-32 (esp. v28).

In my search for decent references on this subject I discovered just how very little has ever been written about it and trying to find anything decent on it was very difficult indeed and really only two persons have written anything worthwhile at all and that is C L Parker and F J Dake, both of whom have been off help to me, but also left **many** questions unanswered.

As I have prayed, studied, meditated and thought on this subject, it has become very clear to me that the Devil has placed a thick veil over the minds of not only the worldling but also the Christian to hide from them the important Truth about the Pre-Adamic Creation and Pre-Adamic man. From the worldling, he has managed to hide the Truth of Creation by replacing it with the Theory of Evolution through Charles Robert Darwin as set forth in his book "On the Origin of Species" published in 1859. (Before Charles Darwin published his work on the theory of evolution, the Devil had also energised similar lies into the minds of such people as Anaximander, Empedocles, Plato, Aristotle, Zhuangzi (a Taoist philosopher), Titus Lucretius Carus, Augustine, Pierre Louis Maupertuis, Erasmus Darwin, Jean-Baptiste Lamarck etc., which he used as preparation upon Charles Darwin (in that he read all of their "evolutionary" writings) to then bring forth fully into the public domain and for public consumption, the theory of evolution by the publication of "On The Origin Of Species.") And from the Christian he has hidden most successfully the very important Truth regarding the Pre-Adamic Creation and Pre-Adamic man and replaced it with the lie that they never existed (although Scripture and science clearly reveal otherwise and we must also remember that (good) science does not conflict with the Scriptures but complements them!) and that the Creation is only six thousand years old. The Christians who accept this lie of a six thousand year old creation have actively closed their eyes and mind and forcibly stuck their fingers in their ears to the Truth of the Pre-Adamic Creation (and the great age of the earth), making it virtually impossible for light to enter into their minds on this vital subject! The Devil is the father of these two lies and both of them originated in his mind before he was cast out of Heaven during the Pre-Adamic ages as part of his plan of evil, "the mystery of iniquity." Isaiah 25v7, Matt 13v14,15, 22v29, John 8v44, Rom 1v18-32, 2Cor 3v14,15, 2Thess 2v6,7, Rev 12v9.

The part of this study on Jesus our Great High Priest after the Order of Melchizedek and the Melchizedek Priesthood is a follow-on from two previous studies (The Epistle To The Hebrews and Jesus Prays For His Own) done by William Turner and myself; with emphasis upon their great importance during the last seven years of this Age (the Age of Grace) and especially during the second half of Daniel's seventieth prophetic week, a period of three and a half years which is known as "The Great Tribulation." Dan 9v27. (In Rev 7v14 "great tribulation," should read, "the tribulation, the great one," "tes thlipseos tes megales." It is an emphatic phrase which calls attention to the adjective "great," rather than the noun "tribulation," the same construction occurs in the references to "the city, the great one," "tes poleos tes megales," in Rev 11v8, 14v8, 16v19, 17v18, 18v10,16,18,19,21. This "Great Tribulation," is not the "much tribulation" spoken of in Acts 14v22, which all Christians can expect, it is the terrible time of world-wide distress which Jesus warned us about in Matt 24v15-21, Dan 12v1, Jer 30v7, Mark 13v14,19,24 that would occur immediately before His Glorious Second Coming. Titus 2v13).

Understanding the full Truth about the Lord's High Priestly ministry and the Melchizedek Priesthood will be vital for the believer if they are to overcome the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation triumphantly so that they may stand before Christ's Throne at His Second Coming to be judged so that they may receive a reward and be granted to wear white robes in the eternal Kingdom. Failure of the believer to grasp these most important Truths will result in their backsliding and sure apostasy due to being so overwhelmed by the great deluge of evil into the world at the beginning of the Great Tribulation when Satan and his evil angels are cast out of the Heavenly places (by Michael and his angels) into the earth and God's restraining hand is removed from them which results in the Devil being allowed to put his evil plan (the Mystery of Iniquity (or better Lawlessness)) into full operation. It should be noted that the Great Tribulation is **NOT** the wrath of God **BUT** the wrath of Satan who knows that after his expulsion from the Heavenlies (at the beginning of the Great Tribulation) only has a short time before he is cast into the Abyss for the duration of the Millennium Kingdom at the end of which he is released for a brief period of time to test the inhabitants of the Millennium (God will use him as a hired razor to weed out the apostates before the beginning of the Ages of Ages) and upon completion of this task is cast into the lake of fire where the beast and the false prophet are for eternity. Isaiah 7v20, Dan 12v1, Matt 24v12,21, Matt 24v45-25v13, 1Cor 3v11-15, 2Thess 2v1-12, 2Tim 3v1-9, Heb chapters 3 & 4, Rev 7v14, 11v15-19, 12v7-17, 19v1-10, 20v1-3,7-10, 21v27.

The Lord Jesus said that the first and greatest commandment of all is, "...Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, **and with all thy mind**, and with all thy strength." As Christians we are expected to have a love for Truth and indeed a lack of this love for the Truth during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation will result in many Christians backsliding and going into apostasy. Let us therefore worship the Lord Our God with our minds by seeking for and welcoming **ALL** Truth, especially the Truth from the wonderful Scriptures. Psalm 1 (all), Isaiah 66v2, Matt 12v30, 24v45-25-13, Acts 17v10-12, Eph 6v10-20, 2Thess 2v1-12 (esp. v10-12), 2Pet 1v16-21.

On occasions in this study I have repeated certain Truths, however, this is simply to highlight to the reader how important that particular Truth is and the necessity for it to be particularly noted!

Alister Hamilton, 15th April 2010.

Introduction

An age is a period of time having specified and clearly marked characteristics of its own.

God's "Plan of the Ages" (Eph 3v1-11 (esp. v11)), "the eternal purpose," in Greek is, "próthesin toón aioónoon," which literally means, "The Plan and Purpose of the Ages." "Age," "aion" (NT:165), is a period of time of significant character; a life; an era; an age, perpetuity of time, eternity. It is a portion of time during which God is accomplishing some purpose. When that purpose is brought to its completion, then the age changes, and the Almighty begins another purpose, which in its turn is accomplished, and gives way to yet another Age. "The ages to come" (Eph 2v7), "tois (NT:3588), aiosin (NT:165), tois (NT:3588), eperchomenois," (NT:1904), which literally means, "the ages, those which are coming on." "Dispensation" is "oikonomia" (NT:3622), it primarily signifies "the management of a household, or a stewardship of household affairs" ("oikos," "a house," "nomos," "a law"); then the management or administration of the property of others, and so "a stewardship," as in Luke 16v2-4. It only occurs elsewhere in the epistles of Paul, who uses it to describe the responsibility entrusted to him to preach the gospel. 1Cor 9v17, Eph 3v2, Col 1v25. ("Dispensation," in the KJV is "oikonomia" (NT:3622)): See also Col 1v25, Eph 3v2. It is used of God's administration of the "times and the seasons," and "the fullness of the times" or seasons, when God will sum up and bring to head all things in Heaven and earth in Christ. Eph 1v10, 3v9. See also 1Tim 1v4. A dispensation signifies the plan which a member of a family or his steward establishes for the management of his house. In each age of the world's history God has had a different clearly marked dispensation, during the Age of Grace (this present Age), the dispensation is one of "Grace" and we are said to be "under" Grace.

To men living on this earth time is measured by minutes, hours, days, years. To The Eternal these miniscule measurements do not count; a thousand years is no more to Him than a day (2Pet 3v8). Living far above all heavens the mere lapse of time is immaterial, it is His purposes only which count and He has divided time up into Ages, or Ages of Ages; that is, a succession of His Plans and Purposes, which follow each other in orderly fashion, having as an end...but there is to be no end! The Creation once begun will proceed into perfections hidden in God, without end! Eternal life is a conception beyond our grasping, an unspeakable gift!

It follows therefore that before "The Beginning of the Creation" all the processes of history were envisaged, the whole vast plan was conceived, the difficulties were faced and the success assured. It often escapes our notice that only as we read the last two chapters of the Bible do we see the beginning of the real Plan and Purpose! Up to then all has been preparation, mysterious, disappointing, heartrending, maybe; but then, and only then, as we gaze up on the beauties of the New Earth and the New Kingdom, and are entranced by the glory of the New Heaven, and shudder at the eternal smoke of Hell; then and only then will the Love and the Wisdom and the Power of the Almighty break upon our enraptured souls and inspire the songs of the Redeemed. All off the ages, from the beginning of creation right up until the end of the Millennium are all probationary for both angels and humans.

God has, however, behind this succession of Ages in the history of His dealings with His free will beings (angelic and human) one single overmastering purpose, to prove to them that there is no possible way whereby they can be happy except by a determination to love God and each other. In every age God has allowed a different method of government, only to show that selfishness, and so disobedience, has brought each successive attempt to chaos and misery. In the first pre-Adamic Ages Lucifer sought his own glory and pleasure, and brought both angels and men to ruin by so doing. The sin of Adam and Eve in disobeying God and seeking their own pleasure and advancement ended in the violence of Noah's earth where everyone fought to have his own way. The silence of God after the tremendous lesson of the Flood yet ended in the defiance and misery of the great Eastern Empires from Nimrod to Pharaoh, in which the luxury of the Rulers meant the wretchedness of the ruled. The setting up of an ideal kingdom in Palestine with wise laws and true worship ended with the apostasy of the favoured Jews into ways worse than those of the surrounding heathen (2Chron 36). The entry into the world of the Son of God with His revelation of perfect Love, Wisdom and Power has failed, and will increasingly fail, to tame the savagery of disobedient men and angels. And finally even the return of Christ with all power and wisdom to set up His ideal Kingdom in Palestine and rule the earth for a thousand years with a rod of iron, will not be able to do more than keep in check through fear the selfish desires of men, which upon the temporary release of Satan from prison will spring up into a

final repetition of age-long violence. (Rev 20v1-3,7-10). Thus will the Lord have proved beyond question that there is no possible way of governing wicked men and angels so that happiness shall reign. Sin, or selfishness, will always and everywhere bring misery. Only the final and eternal incapacitation of the wicked will enable the righteous to enjoy the happiness intended for them by God.

Before the creation of Heaven and Earth with their respective inhabitants, there were (it seems) no ages.

The Three Persons of the Godhead dwelt together eternally (in unchanging life? or does God like we, like variety of life.) It seems that there were no dispensations either, for God had as yet no house to manage. This period of time before creation or the ages is referred to in the Bible in 1Cor 2v7 and Titus 1v2, Greek, "before the ages" and "before times of ages."

In Heb 11v3, we are told that God planned the ages of time from before the creation.

From that date, age has followed age in a clearly marked sequence. By His foreknowledge God was able to map out the entire sketch of time, and has revealed to man the outline of His plan. Eph 3v11. "Eternal purpose" is "prothesis ton aionon;" literally, "the plan and purpose of the ages." "Prothesis" (NT:4286), means, a setting forth of a thing, a placing of something in view, i.e. a proposal, intention, purpose or plan.

Before the ages which began with the creation of man Adam, the Bible clearly reveals to us other ages.

When we "search" the following Scriptures, which have been put into chronological order in regards to the Pre-Adamic ages (Gen 1v1, Job 38v4-7, Ezek 28v12-19, Isaiah 14v12-21 (with Psalm 82v6,7, Jude 6,7, 2Pet 2v4), Rev 12v4, Luke 10v18, Ezek 28v2,6-10, Isaiah 14v3-11, Job 38v12-15 (with Luke 1v78, 2Pet 1v19), Jer 4v23-28, Job 38v30, Job 38v25-27, Gen 1v2), even as the Jews at Berea did in response to Paul's preaching in their city (Acts 17v10-12), the Truth regarding the Pre-Adamic creation, Pre-Adamic man and the Pre-Adamic ages is clearly revealed.

(My additions are in *italic*)

"In the beginning God created the Heaven(s) and the earth."

"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding. Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it? Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof; When the morning stars sang together, and **all** the sons of God (***including Lucifer***) shouted for joy?"

"Thus saith the Lord God; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. **Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God;** thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. **Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with *lawlessness and violence*, and thou hast sinned:** therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee (*that is the city*), it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people(s) shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more...**How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer (*Light-Bringer*)**, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, **I will** ascend into heaven, **I will** exalt my throne above the stars of God: **I will** sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: **I will** ascend above the heights of the clouds; **I will** be like the most High." Yet thou shalt be brought down to *Sheol* (hell) (Heb, she'owl (OT:7585) "sheol," Greek, "hades" (NT:86) Hades), to the sides of the pit. (I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes...The angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation...going after strange flesh...God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to *Tartaros* (hell) (from the Greek, "tartaroo" (NT:5020), which is the deepest part of the Abyss), and delivered them into chains of darkness...). They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, **Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?** All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch (with Isaiah 26v19, "...and the earth shall cast out the *Rephaim* (OT:7496) (dead)."), and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet. Thou shalt not be joined with them in burial, because thou hast destroyed thy land, and slain thy people: the seed of evildoers shall never be renowned.

Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities...And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth...I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven...Thus saith the Lord God; Because thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; yet thou art a man, and not God, though thou set thine heart as the heart of God:...Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Because thou hast set thine heart as the heart of God; Behold, therefore I will bring strangers upon thee, the terrible of the nations: and they shall draw their swords against the beauty of thy wisdom, and they shall defile thy brightness. They shall bring thee down to the pit, and thou shalt die the deaths of them that are slain in the midst of the seas. Wilt thou yet say before him that slayeth thee, I am God? but thou shalt be a man, and no God, in the hand of him that slayeth thee. Thou shalt die the deaths of the uncircumcised by the hand of strangers: for I have spoken it, saith the Lord God...**And it shall come to pass in the day that the Lord shall give thee rest from thy sorrow, and from thy fear, and from the hard bondage wherein thou wast made to serve,** That thou shalt take up this proverb..., and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! the golden city ceased! The Lord hath broken the staff of the wicked, and the sceptre of the rulers. He who smote the people in wrath with a continual stroke, he that ruled the nations in anger, is persecuted, and none hindereth. **The whole earth is at rest, and is quiet:** they break forth into singing. Yea, the fir trees rejoice at thee, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, Since thou art laid down, no feller is come up against us. *Sheol* (Hell) (Heb, she'owl (OT:7585) "sheol," Greek, "hades" (NT:86) Hades) from beneath is moved for thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the *Rephaim* (OT:7496) (dead) for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou become like unto us? Thy pomp is brought down to *Sheol* (the grave) (Heb, she'owl (OT:7585) "sheol," Greek, "hades" (NT:86) Hades), and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee."

"Hast thou commanded the morning since thy days; and caused **the Dayspring to know his place;** (That it might) **to take hold of the ends of the earth, that the wicked might be shaken out of it?** It is turned as clay to the seal; and they stand as a garment. And from the wicked their light is withholden, and the high arm shall be broken..." (with Luke 1v78, 2Pet 1v19).

"I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light. I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly. I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled. I beheld, and, lo, **the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the Lord, and by his fierce anger.** For thus hath the Lord said, **The whole earth (land) shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.** For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it."

"The waters are hid as with a stone, **and the face of the deep is frozen.**"

"Who hath divided a watercourse for the overflowing of waters, or a way for the lightning of thunder; To cause it to rain on the earth, where no man is; on the wilderness, wherein there is no man; To satisfy the desolate and waste ground; and to cause the bud of the tender herb to spring forth?"

"And the earth *became* (was) without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep..."

Hebrew - Greek Word Studies

Ezek 28v14: Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.

"Anointed" in Hebrew is "mimshach" (OT:4473) and means outspread (i.e. with outstretched wings), far-covering, hence anointed.

"Cherub" which is in Hebrew *karub*, which is from *kerub* (OT:3742), the Septuagint uses the Greek, "cheroub" (NT:5502, pl), Philo relates the name to knowledge and insight.

Ezek 28v15: Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.

"Iniquity" Hebrew, 'aw laataah which is from 'evel (OT:5766), which means "iniquity, perverseness, unrighteousness, wickedness." The Septuagint uses the Greek "adikema" (NT:92), which denotes "a wrong, injury, misdeed, evil doing, iniquity."

Ezek 28v16: By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

"Thy merchandise" in Hebrew is rakulaatakaa, which is from rekulla (OT:7404) and means trade (as peddled), merchandise, traffic. Rekulla is from rakel (OT:7402), which is a primitive root and means "to travel for trading." It should also be observed that the Hebrew word rakiyl (OT:7400) is also from rakel (OT:7402), rakiyl means a scandal-monger (as travelling about), slanderer. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "emporion" (NT:1711) which means commerce, business, trade.

"Violence," Hebrew, chaamaac which is from, chamac (OT:2555) and means violence; by implication, wrong, the Septuagint uses the Greek word "anomia" (NT:458), which means iniquity, lawlessness.

"Sinned," in Hebrew is watechaTaa', which is from chata' (OT:2398) and means properly, to miss; hence (figuratively and generally) to sin, the Septuagint used the Greek word, "hamartano" (NT:264), which means lit. "to miss the mark," sin, trespass.

"Profane," Hebrew is Waa'echalelakaa, which is from chalal (OT:2490) and means to bore, i.e. (by implication) to wound, to dissolve; figuratively, to profane (a person, place or thing), pollute, defile, violate. The Septuagint uses the Greek "traumaizo" (NT:5135), which means to inflict a wound.

"And I will destroy thee" is in Hebrew Waa'abedakaa which is from 'abad (OT:6) and means to wander away, i.e. lose oneself; by implication to perish (causative, destroy), break, destroy (-uction), not escape, fail, lose, (cause to, make) perish, spend, and surely, take, be undone, utterly, be void of, have no way to flee. The Septuagint does bring out the sense of "and I will destroy thee" from the Hebrew.

Ezek 28v17: Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee.

"Corrupted" in Hebrew is Shichataa, which is from shachath (OT:7843) and means to decay, i.e. (causatively) ruin (literally or figuratively), to corrupt, the Septuagint uses the Greek word "diaphtheiro" (NT:1311) and means to rot thoroughly, i.e. (by implication) to ruin (passively, decay utterly, figuratively, pervert), to corrupt utterly, through and through.

Ezek 28v18: Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee.

"Defiled," in Hebrew is chilaltaa, which is from chalal (OT:2490) and means to bore, i.e. (by implication) to wound, to dissolve; figuratively, to profane (a person, place or thing), pollute, defile, violate. The Septuagint use the Greek word "hamartia" (NT:266), which means lit. "a missing of the mark," offence, sin.

"Sanctuaries" in Hebrew is miqadaasheykaa, which is from miqdash (OT:4720) and means a consecrated thing or place, especially, a palace, sanctuary (whether of Jehovah or of idols), chapel, hallowed part, holy place. The Septuagint uses the Greek word, "hieron" (NT:2411) and means a sacred place, i.e. the entire precincts, which differs from "naos" (NT:3485) which denotes the central sanctuary itself and when used of the Temple at Jerusalem referred to the Holy Place and Holy of Holies, whereas "hieron" (NT:2411) refers to the complete Temple complex.

"By the multitude of" in Hebrew is Meerob, which is from rob (OT:7230) and means abundance (in any respect), abundance (-antly), all, common [sort], excellent, great (-ly, -ness, number), huge, be increased, long, many, more in number, most, much, multitude, plenty (-ifully), very [age]. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "plethos" (NT:4128), it means literally "a fullness," hence, a large company, a multitude, a large number, throng, populace.

"Iniquities," the Hebrew is 'awoneykaa, which is from 'avon (OT:5771) and means perversity, i.e. (moral) evil, iniquity, sin. Greek, "hamartia" (NT:266), which means lit. "a missing of the mark," offence, sin.

"Iniquity," the Hebrew is a'ewel, which is from 'evel (OT:5766) and means iniquity, perverseness, unrighteousness, wickedness. Greek, "adikia" (NT:93), which means "unrighteousness," lit. "unrightness" (a, negative, dike, "right"), iniquity, unjust, wrong.

"Thy traffick" in Hebrew is rkulaatakaa which is from rekulla (OT:7404) and means trade (as peddled), merchandise, traffic. Rekulla is from rakel (OT:7402), which is a primitive root and means "to travel for trading." It should also be observed that the Hebrew word rakiyl (OT:7400) is also from rakel (OT:7402), rakiyl means a scandal-monger (as travelling about), slanderer. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "emporion" (NT:1711) which means commerce, business, trade.

Isaiah 14v4: That thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! the golden city ceased!

"Oppressor" is in Hebrew *nogees*, which is from *nagash* (OT:5066) and means to be or come (causatively, bring) near (for any purpose); euphemistically, to lie with a woman; as an enemy, to attack; relig. to worship; causatively, to present; figuratively, to adduce an argument; by reversal, to stand back. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "*apaiteo*" (NT:523) and means to demand back, ask again, require.

Isaiah 14v12: How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

"Fallen" is in Hebrew *naapaltaa*, which is from *naphal* (OT:5307) and means to fall in a great variety of applications (intransitive or causative, literal or figurative). The Septuagint uses the Greek word, "*ekpipto*" (NT:1601), which means, to drop away; specially, be driven out of one's course; figuratively, to lose, become inefficient; be cast, fail, fall (away, off), take none effect, to fall out of, to fall down from.

"Cut down" in Hebrew is *nigda'ataa* which is from *gada`* (OT:1438) and means to fell a tree, generally, to destroy anything, cut (asunder, in sunder, down, off), hew down. The Septuagint uses the Greek "*suntribo*" (NT:4937), which means to crush completely, i.e. to shatter (literally or figuratively), break (in pieces), broken to shivers (+-hearted), bruise.

"Weaken" in Hebrew is *chowleesh*, which is from *chalash* (OT:2522) and means to prostrate; by implication, to overthrow, decay, waste away, weaken. The Septuagint uses the Greek "*suntribo*" (NT:4937), which means to crush completely, i.e. to shatter, break (in pieces), broken to shivers, bruise.

Jude v6,7: "The angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation...going after strange flesh..."

"Kept" in Greek is "*teereésantas*," the first aorist active participle of "*tereo*" (NT:5083) with negative *mee*, with play on "kept not" and "he hath kept." This original state of high dignity which these angels possessed, Jude says, they did not keep. The verb "*tereo*," (which means to guard, hold fast, keep (-er), (pre-, re-) serve, watch) expresses the act of watchful care. That is, these angels did not fulfil their obligation of carefully guarding and maintaining their original position in which they were created, but transgressed those limits to invade territory which was foreign to them, namely, the human race.

"First estate" in Greek is "*archeén*" which is from "*arche*" (NT:746) and means a commencement, or (concretely) chief (in various applications of order, time, place, or rank), beginning, corner, (at the, the) first (estate), magistrate, power, principality, principle, rule. Here it is referring to the position that God originally appointed to each angel.

"Their own habitation" in Greek is "*tó ídion oikeeteérion*," "*oikeeteérion*" (NT:3613) means a residence (literally or figuratively), habitation, house. It is an old word for dwelling-place (from "*oikeeteer*," dweller at home, from "*oikos*"), in the New Testament it is used only in Jude v6 and 2Cor 5v2 (the body as the abode of the spirit). In the context of this Scripture in Jude v6, I feel it is referring to Heaven and this is the same meaning of it in its use in the Book of Enoch where the fallen angels are discussed.

Isaiah 14v16: They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms.

"Shall narrowly look upon thee" is in Hebrew *yashgiychuw* which is from *shagach* (OT:7688) and means to peep, i.e. glance sharply at, look (narrowly). The Septuagint uses the Greek word "*thaumazo*" (NT:2296), which means to admire, have in admiration, marvel, wonder.

"The man" in Hebrew is *haa'iysh* which is from *'iysh* (OT:376) and means a man as an individual or a male person; often used as an adjunct to a more definite term (and in such cases frequently not expressed in translation). The Septuagint uses the Greek word "*anthropos*" (NT:444) which means literally man-faced, i.e. a human being, man.

Isaiah 14v17: That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners?

"Wilderness" is in Hebrew, *kamidbaar*, which is from *midbar* (OT:4057) and means a pasture (i.e. open field, whither cattle are driven); by implication, a desert; also speech (including its organs), desert, south, speech, wilderness. The Septuagint uses the Greek work, "*eremos*" (NT:2048) which means lonesome, i.e. (by implication) waste, desert, desolate, solitary, wilderness.

"Destroyed" in Hebrew is *haaraac* which is from *harac* (OT:2040) and means to pull down or in pieces, break, destroy, beat down, break (down, through), destroy, overthrow, pluck down, pull down, ruin, throw down, utterly. The Septuagint uses the Greek "*kathaireo*" (NT:2507), which means to lower (or with violence) demolish (literally or figuratively), cast (pull, put, take) down, destroy.

"House" is in Hebrew baay-taah, which is from bayith (OT:1004) and means a house (in the greatest variation of applications, especially family, etc.), court, daughter, door, dungeon, family, forth of, great as would contain, hangings, home [born], [winter] house (-hold), inside (-ward), palace, place, prison, steward, tablet, temple, web, within (-out). The Septuagint does not translate this Hebrew word.

"Prisoners" is in Hebrew 'Aciyraayw, which is from 'aciyr (OT:615), which means bound, i.e. a captive, (those which are) bound, prisoner. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "epagoge" (which has is not indexed in Strong's).

Job 38v12,13,15: "Hast thou commanded the morning since thy days; and caused the dayspring to know his place; That it might take hold of the ends of the earth, that the wicked might be shaken out of it?...And from the wicked their light is withholden, and the high arm shall be broken."

"The Dayspring" is in Hebrew hashachar, which is from the Hebrew shachar (OT:7837) and means dawn (literal, figurative or adverbial), day (-spring), early, light, morning, whence riseth. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "phosphoros" (NT:5459), which means "light-bearing" i.e. (specifically) the morning-star (figuratively), day star, it is used by Peter in 2Pet 1v19 when speaking of the Lord Jesus, who is The True Light (of the World), John 1v4-9, 12v46.

"The wicked" in Hebrew is rashaa'iym, which is from rasha` (OT:7563), which means, wicked, criminal, guilty, ungodly, an (actively) bad person. The Septuagint uses the Greek "asebes" (NT:765) and means, impious, wicked, ungodly.

"Shaken" is in Hebrew wayinaa'aruw, which is from na`ar (OT:5287) and means to tumble about, shake (off, outself,) overthrow, toss up and down, stir up. The Septuagint uses the Greek word, "ektinasso" (NT:1621), which means to shake out, to shake violently, shake (off).

Jer 4v26: I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the Lord, and by his fierce anger.

"Were broken down" is in Hebrew nittsuw which is from nathats (OT:5422) and means to tear down, beat down, break down (out), cast down, destroy, overthrow, pull down, throw down. The Septuagint uses the Greek words "ἐμπυρέω πῦρ" (pur (NT:4442)), which means to burn with fire.

"Fierce anger" in Hebrew is "charown 'apow" which is from charown (OT:2740), which means a burning of anger, sore displeasure, fierce (-ness), fury, (fierce) wrath (-ful) and 'aph (OT:639), which means properly, the nose or nostril; hence, the face, and occasionally a person; also (from the rapid breathing in passion) ire, wrath. The Septuagint uses the two Greek words "orge" (NT:3709) and "thumos" (NT:2372), "orge" differs from "thumos" in that it is a settled abiding anger, also referred to as the anger of a just judge, whereas "thumos" quickly blazes up and quickly subsides, it is like putting a light to dry straw, which blazes up and quickly goes out rapidly. The connecting of these two Greek words only occurs in the New Testament in two places, in Rev 16v19 (the fierceness of his wrath) and 19v15 (the fierceness and wrath), both of which refer to the great anger and wrath manifested by the Lord Jesus at His Second Coming. Isaiah 42v14,15. It should also be noted that in the New Testament "thumos" is only used twice to speak of God's anger, on all other occasions "orge" is used and the two occasions where "thumos" is used is also in Rev 16v19 and 19v15.

Jer 4v27: For thus hath the Lord said, The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.

"Desolate" is in Hebrew Shamaamaah, which is from shemamah (OT:8077) and means devastation; figuratively, astonishment, (laid, most) desolate (-ion), waste. The Septuagint uses the Greek word "eremos" (NT:2048), which means solitary, lonely, desolate, uninhabited, desert.

Another word that has been considered in these Hebrew Greek word studies but not used in the previously listed Scriptures is:

"Devil" (i.e. Demon), Lev 17v7, 2Chron 11v15, in Hebrew is sa`iyr (OT:8163) and means shaggy; as noun, a he-goat; by analogy, a faun, devil, goat, hairy, kid, rough, satyr. In Lev 17v7 the English is added as "gods" and no Greek word is used, in 2Chron 11v15, the Septuagint uses "mataios" (NT:3152) (which translates the English word "vanities") which means empty, i.e. (literally) profitless, or (specifically) an idol, vain, vanity.

"Devil" (i.e. Demon), Deut 32v17, Psalm 106v37, in Hebrew is shed (OT:7700) and means a daemon (as malignant), devil. The Septuagint (in both Deut 32v17 and Psalm 106v37) uses the Greek word "daimonion" (NT:1140) which means a daemoniac being; by extension a deity, devil, god. "Daimonion" is neuter of a derivative of "daimon" (NT:1142) from daio (to distribute fortunes) which means a daemon or supernatural spirit (of a bad nature), devil. **See Appendix 1.**

End of Hebrew Greek word studies.

If the believer misses or more usually blindly rejects the Truth about the Pre Adamic Ages and Pre-Adamic man in the full light of the Scriptures and what science proves beyond any doubt to be so, their minds become completely reprobate on this matter and so they miss the vital Truth as to how sin entered the creation. The believer, instead of seeing the very long time period between Gen 1v1 and 1v2, between which the following scriptures (Job 38v4-7, Ezek 28v12-18, Isaiah 14v12-14, Rev 12v4, Luke 10v18, Job 38v12-15, Jer 4v23-28, Job 38v30) refer too, simply blindly follows the unscriptural traditions of their rather (un)spiritual fathers and teachers and conclude that there are no other scriptures that refer to the creation of the heavens and the earth and so Gen 1v2 simply follows on from Gen 1v1 with no gap at all between them. If they also see in the margin of their Bibles specific dates relating to specific events in Scripture (Which chronology is often taken from Archbishop Ussher's book, "The Annals Of The World" which is a wonderful work on biblical chronology, apart from the fact that he makes the rather absurd statement at the very beginning of this book, that the heavens and earth were created in 4004 BC, which is certainly not correct, however, in saying that, Archbishop Ussher also states that Adam and Eve were created in 4004 BC, which would in fact be pretty much the case. He, like the vast majority of other Theologians, has wrongly assumed that Gen 1v2 follows immediately on from Gen 1v1 without any period of time intervening between these two verses, which can be seen from the preceding Scriptures to be not the case. Although Archbishop Ussher's statement regarding the creation of the heavens and earth as being the date of 4004 BC is not correct, nearly all the other dates in this scholarly work are all quite accurate.) they then further assume that their wrong ideas on the date of creation is correct, which then darkens their mind even more to the real Truth on this subject. The Christian who interpret the Scriptures in this manner fulfil the Lord Jesus' words in Matt 22v29, where He states, "...Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God."

The Rev Martin Anstey in his scholarly work, "The Romance Of Bible Chronology," makes the following comment on Gen 1v1,2 (see Vol I, pages 62-63):

"The opening verse of Genesis speaks of the Creation of the heavens, and the earth, in the undefined beginning. From this point we may date the origin of the world, but not the origin of man. For the second verse tells of a catastrophe: the earth became a ruin, and a desolation. The Hebrew verb *hayah* (*hayah*="to be") here translated "was," signifies not only "to be" but also "to become," "to take place," "to come to pass." When a Hebrew writer makes a simple affirmation, or merely predicates the existence of anything, the verb *hayah* is never expressed. Where it is expressed it must always be translated by our verb "to become," never by the verb "to be", if we desire to convey the exact shade of the meaning of the Original. The words *tohu va-bohu* (*tohu va-bohu*), translated in the AV "without form and void" and in the RV "waste and void" should be rendered *tohu*, a ruin, and *bohu*, a desolation. They do not represent the state of the heavens and the earth as they were created by God. They represent only the state of the earth as it afterwards became—"a ruin and a desolation." This interpretation is confirmed by the words of Isaiah 45v18, "He created it not *tohu* (a ruin): He formed it to be inhabited (habitable, not desolate)." This excludes the rendering of Gen 1v2 in the AV and the RV as decisively as the Hebrew of Gen 1v2 requires the rendering of *hayah* by the word "became" instead of the word "was," or better still "had become," the separation of the Vav from the verb being the Hebrew method of indicating the pluperfect tense.

The noble Cathedral, once a perfect work of art, with its crowds of devout worshippers, becomes, with the lapse of ages, a dilapidated ruin. Forsaken by those who once frequented its hallowed courts, it becomes a desolation. Similarly the words of Gen 1v2, "And the earth became without form and void" are intended to convey to us the fact that the cosmos, once a beautiful and perfect whole, became a "ruin" and a "desolation." What the cause of this catastrophe was, we are not told, though some speculative interpreters have connected it with the fall of Satan. We know neither the cause, nor the time, nor the manner in which the calamitous change took place. There is no point of contact between the Hebrew *tohu* "ruin" and the Greek conception of chaos, the primeval, shapeless, raw material out of which the world was formed. Genesis 1v2 does not describe a stage in the process of the creation, but a disaster which befell the created earth the original creation of the heavens, and the earth, is chronicled in Gen 1v1. The next verse, Gen 1v2, is a statement of the disorder, the ruin, and the state of desolation into which the earth subsequently fell. What follows in Gen 1v3-31 is the story of the restoration of a lost order by the creative word of God. Between the creation of the heavens and the earth "in the beginning" (Gen 1v1) and the catastrophe by which they became a "ruin" and a "desolation" (Gen 1v2) we place those countless ages required by the geologist for the formation of the various strata of the earth's crust, and the fossil remains embedded therein." End of quote.

They are then confronted in Gen 3v1 with the serpent (i.e. the Devil) who's only desire is to deceive Adam and Eve and lead them into sin and so kill them; the believer, because they have no explanation as to how the serpent got into this evil state automatically assumes that the serpent must have been created by God in this evil condition, which once again is a terrible lie and an awful slander upon the character of the Wonderful God of Love, Who's tender mercies are over all his works. (It was deceit, lust for power and the love of evil, that had turned Lucifer the "Light-Bringer" into the Devil, the "Prince of Darkness" in the very Presence of God in heaven. (In Isaiah 14v12, the Hebrew, "heylel" (OT:1966), or Greek, "phosphoros," (NT:5459), which is derived from "phos," light, and "phero," to bring, i.e. "Light-Bringer;" is translated in the KJV by the Latin "Lucifer.")) Having missed these most vital Truths they then go on to miss the Truth as to the reason for the Fall of Adam and Eve, which was simply because they chose the Lie rather than the Truth, which would have enabled them to resist the temptation from the Devil (by God's Grace) and stay true to their Creator and Friend; the simple fact of

the matter was that both Adam and Eve sinned because they wanted to, and **NOT** because they had too, it was simply an operation of their own free wills. These Christians then go on to even greater folly and say that **ALL** of Adam's seed is born in sin, because all inherited Adam's guilt, however, Adam's seed, like Adam and Eve, chose to sin because they wanted to and **NOT** because they had to; it is simply the same episode of what happened in the Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve repeated billions of times as each individual human being wilfully rejects the Truth, which would have enabled them to resist temptation and instead choosing sin, evil and the Devil. Isaiah states in 53v6, "All we like sheep have **gone astray**; we have turned every one to his own way..." **NOTE:** Every individual has "**GONE ASTRAY**," **NOT** was "**born astray**," i.e. it is the free will choice of each individual in rejecting God and good and going the way of sin and the Devil and so becoming spiritually dead, or as Ezek 18v4,20 puts it, "The soul that sinneth, it shall die." (**NOTE:** In Ezek 18, the phrase, "The soul that sinneth, it shall die," is spoken twice by God to really emphasise this most important Truth, that each individual human being is **NOT** "born in sin!"). The whole eighteenth chapter of Ezekiel is a deliberate repudiation by God of just this doctrine, held by Jews and lately by Christians, that the children's teeth are set on edge by their father's sins! Psalm 145v9, Ezek 18 (all), John 8v44, Rom 1v18-32, 7v7-24, 1John 4v8,16.

The Ages are as Follows:

The Ages of Angelic Administration, the Pre-Adamic Ages.

The Heavenly Ages

When we open the book of Genesis we are met in the second verse with a ruined, frozen earth without life or inhabitant or light, and later on with a fallen angel, Satan, in the lower Heaven with access to the earth. No explanation is given in Genesis of how this condition of things came to pass, but the picture is painted in broad outline in the Scriptures previously mentioned (Gen 1v1, Job 38v4-7, Ezek 28v12-19, Isaiah 14v12-21 (with Psalm 82v6,7, Jude 6,7, 2Pet 2v4), Rev 12v4, Luke 10v18, Ezek 28v2,6-10, Isaiah 14v3-11, Job 38v12-15 (with Luke 1v78, 2Pet 1v19), Jer 4v23-28, Job 38v30, Job 38v25-27, Gen 1v2).

The Heavenly Ages are referred to in Gen 1v1, Job 38v4-7, in this period the heavens were created and filled with angelic beings, referred to as Sons of God, the angels were trained in this period for the next age. Ezek 28v12.

The Creation of the Heavens.

The Heavens were created before the earth, not for God, who is far above all Heavens, but for the Angels (Eph 4v10). Of the surpassing beauty of the Heavens we get a glimpse in Ezek 28 and Rev 21. The Angels too were beautiful. Also they were mortal beings capable of wisdom or folly. There also seems to have been a period of unspecified duration in which the Angels were instructed by their Creator; for although when Lucifer was created he was full of wisdom, but he (and the other angels) also had to learn how to apply it as any other free-will creature has to do in the course of living, even as the Lord God communed with Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden for this same purpose (Gen 2v7,8,15-25, 3v8). The result of this was that Lucifer surpassed all in wisdom and brightness and glory, being next to the Throne of God. These all lived together with God in love and enjoyment. As their education proceeded they were made aware that God was educating them for a high purpose which was not yet visible, even as today God is training His Royal Family of Kings and Priests to take charge of a New Heaven and a New Earth which have not yet been created. In any case the vast scope of the Heavens with its enormous (and expanding) number of Heavenly bodies, must have aroused curiosity in their minds, and the realisation that Lucifer occupied a position of the closest proximity to God The Word, being the anointed Cherub that covereth. Rom 8v17, 2Tim 2v12 (with Rev 5v10, the correct reading being, "And hast made them kings and priests to our God, and they shall reign on earth.") Heaven, created as the abode for the Angels was probably created by God around the same time as the Universe (which recently has been dated as being created about 14 billion years ago. Astronomers estimate the age of the universe in two ways: 1) By looking for the oldest stars; and 2) By measuring the rate of expansion of the universe and extrapolating back to the Big Bang; just as crime detectives can trace the origin of a bullet from the holes in a wall.) with the Angels being created shortly afterwards.

The Earth Age Under Lucifer.

The Creation of the Earth.

The time came, however, when God took His second step, and before the astonished and delighted gaze of the Angelic Host created the Earth! (Science has clearly shown that the earth was created about 4.5 billion years ago). They shouted for joy, we are told (Job 38v7), when they saw before their eyes their life's work, for which they had been brought into being. Everything had been carefully prepared by God, and they found themselves divided into different ranks, Thrones, Dominions, Principalities, Powers (Eph 1v21) with Lucifer at their head. We are not told just how long it was before the desire to depart from God's way, the way of love, to that of his own way, the way of ambition without love, entered into Lucifer's mind, but entered in it did! It is also most important to note that Lucifer was created perfect and lived in perfect

surroundings, the same kind of beginnings that Adam and Eve had enjoyed, yet the desire to sin still entered into his mind, even as it did into Adam and Eve's! So, perfection of creation and surroundings is no guarantee against the entrance of sin! The temptation to sin will always arise in the mind of a freewill being, be they either angelic or human. The state of innocence of a freewill being, be they angelic or human is not desirable, but is dangerous. A freewill being is not "safe" until they not only love what is good **BUT** also hate what is evil, i.e. having had the full light of the horror and end of sin and evil that their free will is eternally fixed in the way of righteousness, holiness and good; then and only then can they enter the Eternal Kingdom. Heb 1v9.

The Perception Of Earthly Time By Holy Angels In Heaven

Some Christians find it hard to understand and reconcile the great age of the Universe (created by God around fourteen billion years ago) and the Earth (which was created as part of the Solar System around four and a half billion years ago) due to the great time periods involved and indeed the vast majority of Christians simply reject any Truth regarding Pre-Adamic man flat-out, no matter what evidence is presented as proof of such a fact.

An understanding of the techniques used to date rocks and other (organic) materials would be very beneficial to the reader of this study to help them grasp and understand the vast time periods involved and how these periods of time are calculated and arrived at, **so I point them to the following very informative short article, "Radiometric Dating, A Christian Perspective" by Dr. Roger C. Wiens which can be found in Appendix 11**, or downloaded from:

<http://www.asa3.org/ASA/resources/wiens2002.pdf> as a PDF file and as an HTML doc from:

<http://www.asa3.org/ASA/resources/Wiens.html>

The perception of time upon earth by humans and by the holy angels in Heaven is completely different for the following reasons:

- 1) Time upon earth is measured as a product of the rotation of it around the sun, which occurs once every 365.25 days, which is then made up of twelve months and each month being made up either 28,29,30 or 31 days depending upon the month and year, each day being made up of twenty four hours and so on.
- 2) The human body was designed and created by God to function in harmony with the 24 hour day, even having an inbuilt "body clock." The "body clock" is the result of the Circadian Rhythm, which is the cycle of night and day in a 24 hour period. The circadian rhythm also affects body temperature, blood pressure, digestive secretions and hormone production. It is also found in other organisms and is mainly controlled by temperature and light. Bird migration is an example of how changes in temperature and length of day influence behaviour. Circadian rhythm is controlled by the hypothalamus in the brain.
- 3) The life span of man has also been decreed by God to be from sixty to eighty years (however, with good living standards and medical science this has increased so that it is not uncommon to find people living to one hundred years of age and over), although from the Fall of Adam up to the time of the Exodus of Israel from Egypt it was somewhat longer, especially the years from the Fall up to the Flood and this was because of the effects of the Tree of Life that Adam and Eve had eaten from upon the human genome, the effect of which passed from one generation to the next, until its effects were completely depleted. Num 14v29,34, Psalm 90v10.
- 4) The human body is wholly suited for life upon earth and the only way a believer can live in Heaven, experiencing the full revelation of the Presence and Glory of God, is by being given a spiritual body, which will occur at the Resurrection and Rapture of the saints at the Second Coming of Christ, for Paul tells us in 1Cor 15v50-54 (with 1Thess 4v13-18, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 11v15-19):

"Now this I say, brethren, that **flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God**; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but **we shall all be changed**, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and **the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.**"

Quite simply, the human body cannot bear the full revelation of the Presence and Glory of God, for Paul tells us in 1Tim 6v16 (with Exodus 33v20-23):

"Who only hath immortality, **dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see**: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."

If a human (inhabiting an earthly body) was exposed to the full revelation of God's Presence and Glory they would die immediately. The only reason that Moses, Aaron, Nadab, Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel were able to look upon the God of Israel upon Mount Sinai was because His Glory had filters on it, otherwise they would have died.

At the Second Coming of Christ, we not only get our new spiritual body, which will be like Christ's, but we also enter into and partake of the full revelation of God's unlimited abilities (by the Holy Spirit), i.e. we partake fully of "the powers of the age to come." When the believer gets their spiritual body at the first Resurrection, "they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection;" although, the spiritual body that the Christian will get will be superior to that which an angel has because "we shall be like Him." Luke 20v36, Heb 6v4-8, 1John 3v1-3.

The perception of "earthly" time in Heaven by the Holy Angels is perceived and experienced very differently than humans upon the earth.

The Holy angels have existed for considerably more than four and a half billions years, for it is written in Job 38v7 that when the earth was created by God, "all the sons of God shouted for joy." ("Shouted for joy" in Hebrew is wayaariy'uw, which is from ruwa` (OT7321) and means literally, "to split the ears (with sound)"). There must also have been a period of time from their creation until the time that they gazed (in utter amazement) as God the Word (the Dayspring) and the other two Members of the Trinity created the earth, over which they would be set, for they had to be trained for this high calling and although at their creation they had great wisdom, they had to learn how to apply it like any other free-will being has to do. Angels are spiritual beings, who inhabit spiritual bodies, which are kept in the peak of health as they have access to the Tree of Life in Heaven from which they eat. Even as humans have to eat food to give them strength day by day, even so angels also must eat to maintain their strength, for in their ministering to the saints they expend vast amounts of spiritual energy, especially when they have to battle against the Devil and the evil angels to fulfil these ministrations to the saints and the rest of mankind. The minds of angelic beings are far superior to that of even the greatest of human minds and they also fully partake of "the powers of the age to come," i.e. they are able to enter into the unlimited abilities of God. The holy angels, by entering into the unlimited abilities of God, are neither limited in time and space, i.e. they are able to travel backwards and forwards in time and space, as is shown by the visitation of Gabriel (which means "man of El" or "man of God") to Daniel in Daniel chapter 8, when they were transported to Susa in Persia in the future and in Ezek chapter 8 when the Lord took Ezekiel back in time and space to the Temple at Jerusalem to show him all the abominations that Judah had committed over the preceding generations (and what God did with Ezekiel He can and does with the holy angels). It should also be noted, that although the Devil and the evil angels do have access into Heaven and appear to be permitted by God to eat from the Tree of Life (otherwise they would have ceased to exist sometime ago) and also eat spiritual food like the Holy angels do to give them strength, they do not partake of God's unlimited abilities because of their being irrevocably hardened in sin, even as the saints can partake of the powers of the age to come via the Gifts of the Holy Spirit and unbelievers cannot. Job chapters 1 and 2, Psalm 78v25, 1Cor 10v3, Heb 1v14, Rev 12v10, 22v1,2.

The holy angels in Heaven, because of their greatly superior minds, spiritual bodies (which are kept youthful and in the peak of condition by eating from the tree of life, see Mark 16v5) and full participation in the unlimited abilities of God and who have lived for billions of years in the very Presence of God, experience earthly time in Heaven by the principle of "one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day." The passage of large periods of earthly time (periods of hundreds or thousands of years) is perceived by the angelic hosts in Heaven as short periods, i.e. like a human experiencing the passage of a day or two. The perception of earthly time in Heaven by the holy angels can be likened to the lifecycle of a bacterium as observed by a scientist through a microscope. (Where the lifecycle of the bacterium is representative of the whole earthly life of a human being (eighty or more years or so) and the scientist as a holy angel in Heaven.) Reproduction in bacteria involves duplicating the genetic material and dividing the cell into two daughter cells, a process known as binary fission. Under very favourable conditions, certain bacterial cells can divide as often as once every twenty minutes (referred to their generation time). As such does the angelic host in Heaven perceive the life span of human beings upon earth. Psalm 90 (esp. v4), 2Pet 3v8.

It should be pointed out that from the creation of Adam to the present time, a period of just over six thousand years has elapsed and in that time (because of the short life-span of man (as compared to angels)) billions of humans have both lived and died, their individual free-wills having been set eternally either in the way of God, good and holiness or in the way of the Devil, sin and evil and their names either written or not written (as the case may be) in the Lambs Book of Life (Rev 13v8, 17v8, 20v12-15, 22v19). However, Pre-Adamic man, although he lived in an earthly body (even as Adam and his posterity do), had access to the Tree of Life and so each pre-adamic man (and woman) lived vast ages of time and only experienced physical death because of God's removal of it (the Tree of Life) when He brought judgement upon the Pre-Adamic creation (Job 38v12-15, Jer 4v23-28), although (like Adam and his posterity) they certainly experienced spiritual death when they rejected God and good and went into sin, evil and apostasy by following the Devil and his ways, (Ezek 18v4,20, Rom 6v23), hence, when Adam fell, so that this would not happen again (i.e. living vast periods of time being (spiritually) dead in sins and trespass, Eph 2v5, God cut off the Tree of Live to him and his posterity, as Gen 3v22-24 states:

"And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: **and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:** Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life."

In the New Testament two "mysteries" are referred to, "the mystery of iniquity" and "the mystery of God."

The following is a synopsis of C. L. Parker's excellent commentary on these two mysteries.

"There is something which is called 'The mystery of God', which is only ended when the Lord returns at the seventh trumpet. Rev 10v7, Eph 3v9 10, 3v9-11, Rom 16v25,26. There is also a reference to 'the mystery of iniquity' which was already working in Paul's day, but was hindered from completion by God until He was ready to allow it. The word 'mystery' does not mean mysterious, but simply a secret hidden from the outsider but revealed to the initiated, e.g. the secret teaching of Freemasons, which is only known to them. Thus both God and Satan have plans which are hidden from the man in the street, but are revealed to their own children. The Christian, of course, knows the Truth, but the ordinary Spiritist is deceived by his master. Only a few know the deep things of Satan. Luke 10v24, 1Pet 1v10-12, John 15v14,15, Rev 1v1, 2v24, 2Thess 2v7.

The Mystery of God.

The world does not credit God with any plan at all. To them it all seems a meaningless jumble without any particular purpose. Indeed, the world conceives of God as a fool who can't see His own kingdom. As a matter of fact, however, the intention of God is to put both Heaven and Earth under the rule of His Son Jesus and His bride (i.e. the Church), and to fulfil upon the earth the promise made to Abraham and his seed, Israel, that they should inherit the earth. The inhabited earth to come is not again to be put under angels, but under Christ and His brethren who overcame. Heb 2v5-13, Rom 8v12-39, Luke 19v11-27, Rev 21v7. There must therefore be begotten, educated and tested, a sufficiently large number of overcoming Sons to take the place of the present world rulers, i.e. Satan's angels, now in the first heaven but later to be cast out upon the earth, and finally into Hell. Dan 10v13-21, Rev 12v7-9, Matt 25v41, 1Cor 9v24-27, 12v31, Eph 6v12, 2Tim 4v8, James 1v12, 1Pet 5v1-4.

Now this depends not upon God but upon His children. If the Church was faithful, then the time would have been shortened, but unfortunately there have been centuries where the Gospel has hardly ever been preached at all, so hardly any overcomers have arisen as kings and priests. Therefore, the length of this period, though known to God, was not revealed to His sons lest they should be tempted to grow slack and say, 'the time is not yet,' or forget that the length of the interval depended on their exertions, and that they would hasten or retard the day of Christ or lose a crown through carelessness. 2Pet 3v12, Rev 3v11. When, however, the Lord knows that the requisite numbers of overcomers is to hand, then He will stand aside and allow Satan to proceed with His plan. 2Thess 2v6-12.

The Mystery of Satan. 2Thess 2v7, Rev 2v24.

Satan and his angels are already doomed to Hell for the ages of ages (because of their impenitence and wickedness) and therefore have no hope of success, or of establishing any successful kingdom upon earth. However, being filled with a murderous hatred of God and man, they desire to damage them as much as possible before their own final ruin. Therefore, during the last seven years of this age they will stage a kind of mock kingdom of Heaven upon earth, a Devilish parody of God's Millennial kingdom, even using God's city and Temple for this purpose. God will allow Satan to do this fearful thing for the following reasons amongst others.

- a) To show mankind the madness of preferring Satan to Jesus, and thus bring them to repentance and a willingness to accept Jesus as Lord. This folly has wrecked the human race since Eden, but this fearful experience will bring to an end Satan's power of deception during the Millennium, his mask will be torn off and he will be seen for what he is, the enemy of man. Gen 2 all, Acts 3v14, Rev 13v7,10,15, John 8v44.
- b) To show the Jews the madness of rejecting their Messiah, and so bring them to a willingness to accept Jesus as Lord.
- c) To break the pride of the Gentiles by giving them an opportunity one by one, and finally all combined, to govern the world according to their own ideas so that any hope of happiness apart from God may be finally shattered by their own failure. This will make them willing to accept God's plan of learning about Him from the despised Jews. Zech 8v23. Following Antichrist will result in the complete collapse of society and bring the earth to the brink of destruction, from which Christ will deliver them at the last moment, so that the few remaining Jews and Gentiles will enter into the Millennium broken and shocked by the judgement of God. Zech 12 all, Isaiah 13v9-16. As were Noah and his family when they saw the ruin caused by the flood and obliged, and at any rate happy, to submit to the iron rule of Christ and His Brethren. Psalm 2 all, Rev 12v5, 2v27, 19v15.

Thus God will use this last plan of Satan to break the pride of man, and when this is accomplished will imprison Him until He has again need of him to test the inhabitants of the Millennial earth. The human race as a whole will have had an experience similar to that of the prodigal son, and will return to God only after the terrible experience of trusting the Devil, having learned to obey God by the things they have suffered. It is of first importance to remember that against God Satan has absolutely no power. No evil being, demon or man can do anything other than what God permits. 2Chron 18v18-22, Job 1v12, Matt 8v31, Psalm 76v10. Satan is wholly a tool in the hands of God to punish the wicked, to correct the righteous, 1Tim 1v20, 1Cor 5v5, to bring glory to the Sons of God, Eph 6v10-20, Job 1 and 2, James 1v12, to test the true character of everyone. Rev 20v7,10, Matt 4v1. Against us Satan only has the power that is given to him by God. Job 1 all. Against God he is helpless. Rev 20v1-3. God alone knows the length of this period of waiting, Matt 24v36, Mark 13v32, Acts 1v7, but God's children will know when the last seven years, and the Great Tribulation begins. Matt 24v15-22, Dan 9v27, 2Thess 2v1-12." End of C. L. Parker's synopsis.

The Mystery of Iniquity (or better, "lawlessness") was conceived and planned and put into full operation by Lucifer quite a long time before his fall that is recorded in Isaiah 14v12-15 and indeed was why God was forced to bring judgement upon him and a third of the angels that he managed to seduce in Heaven in the very Presence of God to follow him and the way of sin and evil. Lucifer, along with a third of the other angels that he managed to seduce, left their first estate and proper habitation, coming down to the earth, and like the sons of God in Gen 6v1-12, created giant human like bodies and inhabited them, also taking to themselves the daughters of men to whom they bore "children." (NOTE: These "children" were not inhabited by human souls, but by other evil angels). It should also be noted that Lucifer was the anointed cherub that covereth, he occupied a place of great authority and position in Heaven, being right next to the Throne of God, continually experiencing being totally enveloped by God's wonderful character (which is His Glory) as recorded in Exodus 34v5-7, even as Moses momentarily experienced. Along with his great authority he also (with the other angels) had tremendous creative energies and powers and neither was there a more beautiful angel than he, being most exquisite to behold and also having the ability to produce at will, the most wonderful heavenly music sounding about him wherever he went; his wisdom also surpassed that of any of the other angels. When the other angels looked upon him, their eyes were dazzled by the tremendous light radiated by the nine precious stones and gold that were his coverings. No other angel had been given such advantages that Lucifer had been given at his creation and if any angel should have been appreciative of the gifts they had been given it should have been Lucifer; gifts that should have created the highest form of love and loyalty for his Creator, God the Word, through Whom **ALL** things were made! Ezek 28v12-16, John 1v3.

Lucifer used the very gifts that God had given him to serve others in love, to seduce and corrupt a third of the angels in Heaven in God's Presence. He completely corrupted his perfect wisdom and turned it into perfect craft and along with his great beauty, brightness, musical abilities, powers and energies managed to lead astray a third of the angelic host, who, along with all the other angels, at the creation of the earth by God the Word had jumped and shouted for joy as they saw their future work and service coming into being. God created the earth for the angels so that they might use their great creative powers and energies in looking after it.

Satan's plan of lawlessness was first conceived and planned in his mind and then put into effect, even as the Godhead conceived and planned the Mystery of God before the times of the Ages (Eph 3v1-13, Rev 10v7). The evil desires that the Devil carried out before he was cast out of Heaven, he will again fully implement through Antichrist, whom he will personally possess after he raises him from the dead at the beginning of the Great Tribulation. From the time of Adam right up to the time of the Great Tribulation, the Devil has been trying to fulfil his evil plan to rule the world but has been hindered by God from doing so (by His restraint upon him and the other evil angels), but once the Devil and his evil angels are cast out of heavenlies into the earth by Michael and his angels; God completely removes His restraint upon the Devil and he is permitted to implement his evil plan fully (2Thess 2v1-12). Some of the aspects of the Devil's evil plan that he desired to achieve during the Pre-Adamic ages were:

- 1) A desire to replace God as The Person that should be worshipped by the nations. Isaiah 14v12-14.
- 2) A desire to have an earthly throne and to rule over all the nations of the earth from his own city and any nation or kingdom that would reject his rule would be completely destroyed and its inhabitants wiped out, even as Antichrist will do during the Great Tribulation. Isaiah 14v6,16,17, Rev 13v15-17.
- 3) Being filled with a great hatred of God and despising his creation because it reveals His eternal power and Godhead, he was bent on destroying it completely. Rom 1v18-32, Rev 11v18.
- 4) A desire to rule over all the angels, both those who went the way of sin and evil and the good angels who rejected sin and evil and stayed true to God, i.e. He wanted to be like The Most High. Isaiah 14v12-14.

Points one, two and three is what he will again endeavour to fulfil through Antichrist during the Great Tribulation and part of point 4 (ruling over the evil angels that he seduced and lead astray in the Presence of God) he has done from the Pre-Adamic Ages and will continue to do so up until the second coming of the Lord Jesus. It is also important to note that although the Devil's evil desire is to rule over the world at all costs and indeed he will bring the world to the brink of

destruction during the Great Tribulation; because of the elect, God will limit those days to three and a half years, otherwise no flesh would survive. Mark 13v19,20.

The Devil and a third of the angels that rebelled with him against God, having left their first estate and proper habitation, set about conquering the nations and kingdoms of the earth so as to rule over the whole world. To achieve this, the Devil, along with many other of the fiercest evil angels, those whom he himself had appointed, took upon themselves giant human like bodies (Isaiah 14v9,10,16) and then proceeded to put his evil plan into full operation. The rest of the other evil angels, who had not been appointed by the Devil to take upon themselves giant human like bodies, remained in the heavenly places where they were continually fighting against Michael and his angels, thereby continually opposing and resisting God's loving plans and purposes that He had for His freewill beings both angelic and human. The great numbers of evil angels that took upon themselves giant human like bodies, formed the great armies that the Devil used to conquer and subdue the nations and kingdoms of the Pre-Adamic earth, even as the sons of God in Gen 6 also left their first estate and own habitation taking upon themselves giant human like bodies and having taken the daughters of men and had sexual relations with them, the result of which was that the children born to them became the habitation of other evil angels, who became the "mighty men which were of old, men of renown," even as Goliath of Gath and his brethren, all sons of the giant. Gen 6v1-8, 1Sam 17v1-58, 2Sam 21v15-22, 1Chron 20v5, Dan 10v1-21, Rev 12v7,8.

Titus Flavius Josephus in his volume, Antiquities (Book 5.2.3) writes the following regarding the Rephaim:

"For which reason they removed their camp to Hebron; and when they had taken it, they slew all the inhabitants. There were till then left the race of giants, who had bodies so large, and countenances so entirely different from other men, that they were surprising to the sight, and terrible to the hearing. The bones of these men are still shown to this very day, unlike to any credible relations of other men. Now they gave this city to the Levites as an extraordinary reward, with the suburbs of two thousand cities; but the land thereto belonging they gave as a free gift to Caleb, according to the injunctions of Moses. This Caleb was one of the spies which Moses sent into the land of Canaan. They also gave land for habitation to the posterity of Jethro, the Midianite, who was the father-in-law to Moses; for they had left their own country, and followed them, and accompanied them in the wilderness." End of quote.

Daniel writes in Dan 2v43:

"And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, **they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men:** but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

The legs of iron of Dan 2v33,40-43 and the fourth beast of Dan 7v7,8,17-28 were only partially fulfilled by Rome. The stress of these prophecies was upon the fourth kingdom and last days (i.e. The Kingdom of Antichrist, especially during the last three and a half years of this age, the period known as the Great Tribulation), as Daniel said to Nebuchadnezzar; "God hath made known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be **in the latter days.**" Dan 2v28.

"They shall mingle themselves with the seed of men" is a reference to what happened in Gen 6, but the time and complete and only fulfilment of this prophecy is during the Great Tribulation, which is why the Lord Jesus states in Luke 17v26 (see Luke 17v20-18v8), "And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man." For a complete fulfilment of the Lord's words in Luke 17v26, nothing less than the evil angels (who, along with the Devil are cast out of the Heavenlies into the earth at the beginning of the Great Tribulation) again taking upon themselves giant human like bodies, will suffice. During the Great Tribulation, the Devil will personally possess Antichrist. Rev 13v2.

The Devil and the evil angels having been cast out of the heavenlies into the earth by Michael and his angels and God's restraint being completely removed from them, the Mystery of Lawlessness then begins to work fully and the period known as the Great Tribulation starts. From the time that the last of these giants were killed after the flood and up to the beginning of the Great Tribulation, God has forbidden any evil angel from leaving their first estate and proper habitation to take upon themselves a giant human like form; the punishment for any evil angel that transgresses this command of God would be met with immediate imprisonment in the Abyss, which is in the deepest part of Hades, where all the other evil angels before and after the flood that took upon themselves giant human like forms are also imprisoned, Peter also refers to this place in 2Pet 2v4 as "Tartaros" (NT:5020). However, with the Devil and his evil angels being cast out of the heavenlies into the earth and God's restraint being fully removed from them, the Devil will again appoint many of them to once more take upon themselves giant human like bodies for the purpose of conquering the nations and kingdoms of the world through his evil servant Antichrist (whom he will personally possess) and his allies. These evil giants will make up a certain part of the armies of Antichrist and his allies, especially his allies in the far east, who are referred to as "the kings from the east" (Rev 9v13-21 (Sixth Trumpet) and 16v12-16 (Sixth Vial)) and Gog and Magog mentioned in Ezek 38 and 39. It is also worth pointing out that the use of the words Gog and Magog in Rev 20v8, show that there is some connection with Ezek 38 and 39. Certainly some of that prophecy cannot refer to the Great Tribulation, but it appears in some places to have a double fulfilment. Ezek 38v8,11,14, 39v9-15. It is possible that the nations that were involved in the destruction of Jerusalem at the end of the Great Tribulation, and led in the persecution of the people of God, will lead in the rebellion against the beloved Millennial city of Jerusalem. Gog and Magog are mentioned in Gen 10v2, 1Chron 1v5, 5v4, Ezek 38 and 39. It is

very doubtful if there is any connection between Rosh and Russia, Meshech and Moscow, Tubal and Tobolsk, and Gomer and Germany. The connection seems to be based on similarity of sound. G.H. Lang makes an interesting examination of this in his "Histories and Prophecies of Daniel," page 201 to 218. We will just quote two sentences. "In Ezekiel's day the tribes named were in and around Armenia and Asia Minor, and there seems no evidence that they became the ancestors of the Russians or Germans. The "uttermost parts of the north," known to the dwellers in the Middle East, were Armenia and the Caucasus." End of quote.

In the Scripture Luke 17v26 (Luke 7v20-18v8), the Lord Jesus says, "And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man," and in Luke 18v1 it says, "And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;" which links the parable He was about to tell them to what He had just spoken to them in Luke 17v20-37. The Lord Jesus teaches His people in this parable that to come through the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, they will not only need to have their minds filled with Truth (2Pet 1v16-19), but also to "pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) and not faint." The Greek word "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) means to pray to God, i.e. supplicate, worship, make prayer. The noun, "proseuche" (NT:4335) means to pray earnestly, prayer, a request for help, made by speaking to God. The English translation ("prayer") that is used in the Bible in any of the different versions, of this Greek word, is an extremely poor one, because on further investigation it actually means much more, and indeed it can have the same meaning as the Greek word "enteuxis," (NT:1783) which means "an intervention (with power) so as to effect a change." (Vincent writes the following on the verb "entugchano" (NT:1973) in Heb 7v25, "The idea is not "intercession," but "intervention."). Although it can have the same meaning as "enteuxis," (NT:1783), it is also clear it has another meaning, because it is used by Paul in 1Tim 2v1 with "enteuxis," (NT:1783). So the verb "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) more fully means "to make an active intervention (with power) so as to affect a change in circumstances." The Lord Jesus goes on to teach us in this parable in Luke 18v1-8, that as soon as the Great Tribulation starts there will be a complete change of emphasis upon our prayer "proseuche" (NT:4335) life; the believer will not be praying for the salvation of the wicked, but for God to bring judgement upon them.

The Lord Jesus said that the overall picture of the conditions in the world just prior to His coming will be as bad as they were in the days of Noah and Lot. Luke 17v26-31. The expulsion of evil angels from the heavenly places into the earth results in a great increase in wickedness, and a wilful ignorance of the promised judgement of God. Gen 6v1-13, 1Pet 3v19,20, Rev 12v7-12. The wicked despise the riches of God's goodness, forbearance and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God is trying to lead them to repentance and salvation. Rom 2v1-4,9, 2Pet 3v3-9, Jude v14-16. **Many signs are now being fulfilled; they are a great warning to the Church that it is time to put on the armour of God, for no lukewarm Christian will stand in this evil day.** Matt 24v12, Luke 6v46-49, Rom 13v11-14, Eph 6v10-20.

"As it was in the days of Noah." Luke 17v26.

A major cause of lawlessness will be a greed, which results in escalating crime and violence on a world scale, just as in Noah's day, when every thought of men was only evil continually, and violence filled the whole earth. Gen 6v5-13. This moral degeneration was also caused by evil spirits infiltrating mankind by taking upon themselves giant fleshly bodies, which though outwardly similar to human bodies were basically different (genetically) from those of mankind. 1Pet 3v19,20, Jude v6. These were the "giants" of Scripture, these giants are called: The Nephilim, Gen 6v4, Numb 13v32,33. The Anakim, Deut 1v28, 2v10,11,21, 3v11,13, 9v2, Josh 11v21,22, 14v12-14. The Emims, Deut 2v10,11. The Zamzummins, Deut 2v19-21. The Rephaim, Deut 2v11,20, 3v11,13, Josh 12v4, 13v12, 15v8, 18v16, 2Sam 21v16,18,20,22, 1Chron 20v4,6,8. The valley of the giants, Josh 15v8, 18v16. etc. Goliath and his compatriots were evil angels in flesh, the sons of the giant. 2Sam 21v15-22. The children that were born to the giants did not have souls and spirits given to them by God, they became the abode of evil spirits, these products of Satan's biological engineering will not be resurrected, for in Isaiah 26v14, we read the "dead," who are "deceased" (Hebrew is "rephaim" (OT:7496) "giants") will not be resurrected by God. It is when Michael and his angels cast the Devil and his angels out of Heaven into the earth, and God's restraining hand is removed from the Devil and his evil hosts, that the Great Tribulation then ensues, with the result that these evil angels that have been cast down into the earth will again mingle with the seed of men ("daughters of men," Gen 6v2), which will result in giants once again upon the earth. Dan 2v43, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 12v7-17.

It is of great importance to have the correct interpretation of the Typology of Noah and Lot. Some teach that Enoch, Elijah and Lot prove that the Church will be saved from the Great Tribulation. Our Lord clearly teaches the very opposite of this in Luke 17v26-30; the flood that destroyed the world and the fire that fell and consumed Sodom, are used as pictures, not of the tribulation, but of the day of the Lord that follows that Great Tribulation. Christ uses these Old Testament characters as illustrations of Truth, not as types, they are used to illustrate known facts, not to produce supposed facts. Christ stresses in Luke 17v22-37, that the day the saints are raptured is the day of God's wrath on the wicked, "they did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all...The same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven and destroyed them all, even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed." The day that shall burn as an oven is the day that the Son of righteousness shall rise with healing in His wings. Mal 4v1-3.

In Luke 18v1-8, Jesus informs us that persecuted Christians who are alive at this time (during the Great Tribulation) will

pray that these evil people will be judged by God. It is also of great importance to understand and note, that the souls of the saints in heaven (who certainly cannot be out of the Spirit in the very Presence of God, (see Rev 6v9-11, the opening of the fifth seal)), who had been killed by Antichrist and his followers, and other evil people, cry to God for vengeance upon their murderers. These martyrs in Heaven are told to rest for a little while and wait until their fellow servants and brethren are also killed as they have been. Matt 24v9, Luke 21v16, Dan 11v32-35, Rev 12v11,17, 13v7, 17v6. These Christians overcome the terrible darkness of the last days and are faithful unto death, and pure in soul, for they are clothed with white garments. Rev 3v5, 16v15, 19v8. This vision proves that a great number of Christians will be martyred during the Great Tribulation. We need to remember that the key words for this time are "endure," "beware," and "watch and pray," for failure to pray through in these evil days will almost certainly result in backsliding or apostasy. Matt 10v17,22, Luke 21v36. These Christian martyrs (in Rev 6v10) address God as "Ho Despotēs," which means one who exercises absolute authority, Lord, Master, Ruler; it is applied to God in Luke 2v29 and Acts 4v24, and to our Lord in 2Pet 2v1 and Jude v4. Though "Ho Despotēs," speaks of God being the ruler who has absolute power, there is no thought of tyranny here, for these martyrs also call God, "the holy and true," "ho hagios kai alethinos," that is, He rules with perfect dedicated love, and faultless truth and justice. The answer to the world's problems will never be found in human politics; it will only be found in the perfectly loving and selfless rule of the God of love. God's benevolent rule is infinitely superior to the rule of selfish and sinful men, whose desire to rule often springs out of a corrupt ambition for political, worldly and religious power and wealth. The torture and murder of God's dear children produces tremendous anger in God, and He pours His judgement out on the wicked. Isaiah 42v13-17, 63v1-6, Rev 15 and 16. The souls that had been slain are spoken of as under the altar, because they had been slain for God's sake, their blood had been poured upon the altar and flowed down beneath it. Their blood will cry from the ground, like the blood of Abel, the first martyr. Gen 4v10, 9v4, Matt 23v35. The blood of the sacrificial animals was received by the Old Testament priests and poured out at the foot of the altar. Exodus 40v29, Lev 4v7, 8v15, Isaiah 29v1. The souls of the righteous receive white garments and rest in Paradise, but they are first seen under the altar, the place where righteousness, justice and the Law, as well as forgiveness, was established by Christ's shed blood. Rom 3v31. The place where mercy is bestowed is the place where justice is dispensed. Christ's atoning death established the Law and righteousness, and ensures pardon for every repentant sinner, but it also makes condemnation sure for every hardened impenitent sinner. Rom3v21-31.

The Great Tribulation (which is the result of the Devil's great wrath, because he and his evil angels are cast out of Heaven into the earth, and God also removing His restraining hand from them at the same time, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 12v7-17) does not start gradually over a period of weeks, but rather starts with a bang overnight. On a particular day at the very end of the first three and a half years of Daniel's seventieth week, conditions on the earth will be quite bad, but still bearable, however, a day or two later (Satan and his evil angels having been cast into the earth and God's restraint removed from them), conditions will have got drastically worse, with evil and lawlessness **greatly multiplied**. The whole atmosphere of societies around the world will be one where an individual will be able to "feel" great evil all about them, it will in effect have a "smothering" effect upon them. From the time of the start of Our Lord's earthly ministry, until the last few days of the first three and a half years of Daniel's seventieth week, the emphasis has been upon Grace, Mercy and Forgiveness (as illustrated by the Lord's words, regarding those who crucified Him, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do," Luke 23v34), however, this will all change during the last few days at the end of the first three and a half years of Daniel's seventieth week and the start of the Great Tribulation. It is at this time that Christians (worldwide) will start praying for God to avenge them of their adversaries; the Two Witnesses (who will have power and authority "to strike the earth with all plagues, as often as they desire" and shall be like God (in this respect). Zech 12v8, Rev 11v6) having started their ministry about 7-10 days before the start of the Great Tribulation. Matt 24v12, Mark 13v19, Luke 18v1,3,8.

The periods of time covered by the blowing of the Seven Trumpets (Rev 8v2-9v21, 11v15-19), and that referred to in Luke 17v20-8v8 are exactly the same, the period (of three and a half years) known as the Great Tribulation; and the parable that the Lord Jesus uses in Luke 18v1-8, is referring to the events in Rev 8v2-9v21 and 11v15-19, which is God's response to the prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of the saints (Luke 18v1, Rev 8v3). The geographical area where the judgements of the Seven Trumpets fall is in the middle east (an area that is under the direct control of Antichrist, the Temple in Jerusalem being the place where he sets up his headquarters to rule from, 2Thess 2v1-12), especially Israel, and we see in Luke 18v1-8 an illustration of Truth, as to just how the Christians referred to in Rev 8v3 (with **Rev 12v1,6,14** see "**NOTE**" below) will be praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)), they will be asking God to avenge them of their adversaries (which God will do speedily, though He bears long with the wicked, Luke 18v7,8). It will not only be the Christians in the middle east who will be asking God to avenge them of their adversaries, but believers around the whole world will also be exercising this same kind of prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4435)), because the Great Tribulation will be worldwide as well. Matt 24v21,22.

A "**NOTE**" On Rev 12v1,6,14.

In Revelation 12v1-17, the glorious woman of v1-2, at the beginning of the Great Tribulation, is given wings (which could well be the kind of supernatural transport that Elijah and Philip enjoyed) by God to escape from Antichrist, and she flees into "the wilderness" where she has a place prepared for her by God. This seems to be an obvious fulfilment of the prophetic warning in Matt 24v15-20, other Christians in and around Jerusalem, who are not supernaturally transported, will make their own way to "the wilderness") where she is protected, fed and kept by God for three and a half years. "The wilderness"

that is referred to here (Rev 12v6,14) is in all probability the wilderness area in the region of Edom, Moab and Ammon (present day Jordan), which, according to Dan 11v41, never falls into the hands of Antichrist. All the countries round about Israel, at this time, fall under the control and dominion of Antichrist, except Edom, Moab and Ammon; the question therefore arises, why do these three countries escape and are never occupied by Antichrist? The answer is quite simple, because of the great "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) exercised by this glorious woman (who flees there at the start of the Great Tribulation), who represents a group of people, who are foreknown, designed, specially created and empowered by God for the Great Tribulation. **It is a group of praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) people, with prepared hearts and special ministries for the last days, who will operate with awesome power as a prayer-warrior group behind the scenes.** God gives a definite promise that He will protect, provide and empower the seeking hearts in His Church in a new and special way in the last days, and will **NOT** leave His Church defenceless in the Great Tribulation. This glorious woman reveals that part of the Church will be clothed with the fullness of God's power, and will be transported, protected and fed by God. This group is a major part of God's answer to the "mystery of iniquity," and it is one of many such groups, who operate in Israel and other parts of the world. The effect of their "interventions" with Divine power, will be felt and seen around the whole world, and not just locally in the Middle East, even as the "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) of the Lord Jesus, during His earthly life, were seen and felt around the whole world, and not just around the rim of the Mediterranean sea. Their "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) will not only bring judgment upon the wicked, but also through vision ministry, they will protect other groups of Christians and form the character of Christ in these same believers, even as Paul made "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) for the believers at Colossae and Laodicea. The Christians who have escaped to "the wilderness", are said to be fed by God (the "they" of v6, are most probably Angels); they will have miraculous provision of food stuffs through their "interventions," (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) and will be cared for in the same manner as Yahweh cared and fed the Israelites in the Wilderness for forty years. Their provision will also be similar to that of the feeding of the four and five thousand during the earthly ministry of the Lord Jesus, which were the result of His great "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) beforehand, for having seen in vision what the Father was going to do, He then prayed it into reality. Neh 9v15, Daniel 11v32, Matt 14v13-21, 15v32-39, Luke 18v1-8, John 5v19-20,30, Col 2v1-5, Rev 11v1-6.

Luke 18v1-8 states the following:

"And he spake a parable unto them to this end, **that men ought always to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)), and not to faint**; Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them (that is the wicked)? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth (or "in the land")?"

"That men ought always to pray" is in Greek, "prós tó deín pántote proseúchesthai," and means literally, "with reference to its being necessary always to pray." "And not to faint," is in Greek, "kaí meé engkakeín," and literally is, "and not to give in to evil" (en (NT:1722), kakeoo, from kakos (NT:2556), "bad or evil"), "to turn coward, lose heart, behave badly." The Amplified Bible renders it thus: "...that they ought always to pray and not to turn coward (faint, lose heart, and give up)."

Luke 21v38 is stating the same truth: "Be on watch and pray always that you will have the strength to go safely through all those things that will happen and to stand before the Son of Man." (Today's English Version)

The believer's prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) will accomplish different things for them during the Great Tribulation; it will be the means by which they will receive grace, strength and blessing from the Lord to help them overcome the great evil that will be in the world at that time. Their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) will also be the means by which God will bring judgement upon the wicked (amongst other things, the execution of the wicked) who are persecuting them. With the Devil and his evil angels being cast out of the heavenlies into the earth by Michael and his angels and God's restraint being completely removed from them with the result that the mystery of iniquity (lawlessness) will work fully; the Devil will again appoint a great number of these evil angels to take upon themselves giant human-like bodies, of which, as already stated, will make up a certain part of Antichrist's and his allies armies. Many of the "interventions with power" ("proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) that Christians will make during the Great Tribulation will be to deal with these evil giants, whether they are in the armies of Antichrist and his allies or simply causing great trouble for the saints in the believer's own locality. As David of old invoked and called upon the covenant name(s) of "Yahweh (Tsabaoth)" (The Lord of Hosts) to defeat Goliath (and not only Goliath but **ALL** his enemies), so the believer (by invoking and calling upon the name of Yahweh Tsabaoth) will bring judgement upon and defeat not only these evil giants but also wicked people and angels during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation. 1Sam 17v1-58 (esp. v45), 2Sam 22v1, Psalm 18 (all), Dan 2v43. God's judgements upon the wicked will also have a restraining effect upon evil in the world. The prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of the saints will also shut down the powers of darkness, with numbers of them being removed from the earth and put into the Abyss (This will occur from the beginning of the Great Tribulation up until the time of the blowing of the 5th Trumpet, which occurs twenty four months after the beginning of the Great Tribulation (The 5th Trumpet

lasts for 5 months (Rev 9v1-12), the 6th Trumpet for 13 months (Rev 9v13-21), and the 7th Trumpet sounding on the last day of the Age of Grace (Rev 11v15-19), so with the Great Tribulation lasting 42 months (Rev 12v6,14), this then shows that the 5th Trumpet is blown 24 months after the start of the Great Tribulation); for with the blowing of the 5th Trumpet, the Abyss will be emptied of evil spirits that had been imprisoned there, which are given authority to torment the wicked upon the earth. After the Abyss has been emptied of evil spirits at the blowing of the 5th Trumpet, during the next eighteen months (right up to the Second Coming of Christ) the saints will still be able to deal with evil angels with God's power through the gifts of the Holy Spirit and imprison them in the Abyss through their prayers ("interventions with power" (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335))). These evil spirits will either remain in the Abyss right up until the Second Coming of Christ, at which time God will send forth His angels into the Abyss to take these evil spirits and put them into the Lake of Fire where they will join all the other evil angels. Or once they have been put into the Abyss by the saints, they could be recommissioned by God to go and torment the wicked upon earth like the other evil spirits were commissioned to do so when they were let out of the Abyss at the blowing of the 5th Trumpet and then at Christ's Second Coming they would then all be put into the Lake of Fire for eternity. Isaiah 34v5, Matt 25v41, Rev 9v1-12, 11v18). At the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus, all the evil angels (except the Devil, who is put into the Abyss) upon the earth will be cast into the Lake of Fire. Isaiah 24v21, Matt 25v41, 2Cor 12v9, Phil 4v19, James 4v6,7, 2Pet 2v4, Jude v6, Rev 9v1-12, 20v1-3,10.

Believers during the last seven years of this age and even more so during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, will have to regularly invoke and call upon **ALL** the covenant names of the Lord (Yahweh) in their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)); as doing so will be the difference between either coming through those evil days with an overcoming faith or backsliding and going into apostasy and being amongst those who are put into the lake of Fire at the Lord's Second coming. Exodus 3v14,15, Matt 24v12,13,45-25v13, Luke 21v34-36, James 5v1-12.

(Please see Appendix 4: "All The Covenant Names Of Yahweh Are Given To Us In The Name Of Jesus.")

Although the unjust judge would not, at first, avenge the widow of her adversary, because of her continual coming, and the judge's concern that she might "weary" him, he then gives her justice, and avenges her of her adversary. The English word "weary" that is used in Luke 18v5, is in Greek, "hupopoiázee," the present active subjunctive of "hupopiazō" (NT:5299), (from hupopion, "the part of the face below the eye"; hupo, "under," ops, "an eye"), which means to hit under the eye and so to blacken it (buffet or disable an antagonist as a pugilist), i.e. (figuratively) to tease or annoy (into compliance), subdue (one's passions), keep under, weary. The unjust judge is actually afraid that the widow may come and assault him, literally "beat him under the eye," and so with this possibility of being injured (and that by a woman), the unjust judge gives the widow justice, by avenging her of her adversary. This word is only used once again in the New Testament, by Paul, in 1Cor 9v27, and in its literal sense, "I buffet my body;" (treat it as the boxer does his adversary). Paul, at the time of the writing of the First Epistle to The Corinthians, had been a believer for about 23 years, yet he says that he still has to severely discipline his flesh, so that he would not become disqualified, and lose his heavenly reward. This was exactly how the Lord Jesus disciplined His flesh during His earthly life, and it was this example that Paul followed, which we should **ALSO** follow! Psalm 69v7-11, Isaiah 50v3-8, 1Cor 11v1.

Although the unjust judge lingered long before dispensing justice for the widow, God will certainly **NOT** procrastinate on this issue, but will avenge His elect speedily by bringing judgement upon the wicked for their evil treatment of His children. (**NOTE:** it is the Church, not Israel, that God looks upon as the "elect" during the Age of Grace, Rom 11v5,6, Gal 6v16). The Lord Jesus then ends this parable with the words: "...Nevertheless, when the Son of Man comes, will He really find faith on the earth?"

The words "on the earth" can also be translated, "in the land" i.e. the land of Israel (Palestine), and of course it will be very hard to find many believers in the land of Palestine at the time of the Lord's second coming, immediately after the days of the Great Tribulation, because of the following reasons:

Firstly, many believers will have lost their faith. By backsliding and going into apostasy, because they did **NOT** pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" 4336) through, but fainted, or because they were expecting a secret pre-tribulation Advent and Rapture, and when that does not happen, their faith will wane (saying within themselves, "my Lord delayeth His coming," Matt 24v48), and not being spiritually prepared will be overcome by the great inrush of evil into the world when the Great Tribulation starts. Matt 24v12, Rev 2v12.

Secondly, many believers will have been killed by Antichrist's security services and secret police. Matt 24v9, Luke 17v31-37, Rev 12v4,5,11,17, 20v4-6.

Thirdly, a large group of believers (the Glorious Woman of Rev 12v1) will have escaped from the land of Israel (Palestine) into neighbouring Edom, Ammon and Moab, ("the wilderness" of Rev 12v6,14), which is never overrun and taken by Antichrist and his armies. Believers will escape from the Great Tribulation caused by Antichrist (in Jerusalem and Israel), when they see the image (the abomination of desolation) that he erects in the Temple in Jerusalem, which is the sign that they will be looking for and expecting as the time to immediately get out of it and flee for their lives. Dan 9v27, 11v31,41, Matt 24v15,16, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 12v6,14-16, 13v1-18.

(For a full study on the Greek words used for prayer in the New Testament, please see the Introduction of the study, "Jesus Prays For His Own" which can be found at www.truthforthelastdays.com)

The Devil (having taken upon himself a giant human-like body) ruled the nations and kingdoms that he conquered from the city where he had his throne and it was in this city that the nations and kingdoms were also made to come up and pay homage and worship to the Devil as he sat upon his throne, even as Antichrist will demand the same during the Great Tribulation as he sits in the Temple at Jerusalem claiming that he is God; any individual that refused to come and worship the Devil was simply immediately executed. The Devil's rule of Pre-Adamic man during the Pre-Adamic ages was utterly ruthless, he and his evil angels became filled with such great cruelty and sadism as the Devil implemented his evil plan, it was simply ruthless ambition completely devoid of love! The Devil's Pre-Adamic rule of the earth and its inhabitants and Antichrist's rule from Jerusalem during the Great Tribulation (Antichrist having been given his throne and power by the Devil, who is the real power and rule behind the nations) are simply Devilish parodies of God's Millennium Kingdom when Christ will rule over all the earth, sitting upon His Throne in Jerusalem. Isaiah 11v9, 14v4,13, 24v23, 2Cor 4v4, Eph 6v12, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 13v1-18 (esp. v2).

The very sin that cost Lucifer his place in Heaven, ambition without love, is happening in many churches today and it is seen by the infighting when individuals and groups of people within a church struggle and fight against each other for position and power and don't care who gets hurt in the process of achieving their evil selfish desires. How the ways of the world have filled the church of today which is so different to the love, humility and purity that filled the early church at Jerusalem and indeed when the Devil tried to spoil this beautiful fellowship, love and purity through the incident with Ananias and Sapphira, God moved in a very dramatic and definite way to protect it by executing both of them. The result of this judgement upon both of them brought great fear not only upon the believers but upon **ALL** that heard of it. As the end of this Age (of Grace) rapidly approaches and the great worldwide revival that will begin just before the opening of the first Seal by the Lord Jesus; what the Lord Jesus did with Ananias and Sapphira He will also be prepared to do again if His people leave Him no other choice by their wayward behaviour and sin to protect the purity of His Church. Each individual Christian should really pay great heed to Paul's injunction in Phil 2v12, where he exhorts believers to "work out your own salvation with fear and trembling;" we really must judge ourselves or the Lord Jesus will be forced to do it for us so that we are not condemned with the world! Dan 9v27, Acts 2v16-21,40-47, 5v1-11, 1Cor 11v23-32, Rev 6v1,2.

Lucifer (Light-Bringer), who became the Devil and Satan, the Prince of Darkness, even with all the great advantages he was given in his creation and that he enjoyed in Heaven in God's very Presence, being full of wisdom and great power and perfect in beauty refused to live aright, but in the full blazing light of God's wonderful character and works instead chose evil and the way of sin; his way was the way of ambition without love. No matter how well God treated him and the other angels who went into sin with him, during the various angelic ages that occurred before they were cast out of Heaven permanently, they despised the riches of His goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God was intended to lead them to repentance. During the long period when Satan and his evil angels started on the road of sin and selfish ambition and before they were cast permanently out of Heaven, God was forced to create Hades and the Lake of Fire, which were not part of the original creation. He made it very clear to **ALL** the angels that rebelled (in no uncertain terms) that if they continued on in the way of sin, they would permanently forfeit their position in Heaven and on the Earth and be put initially into Hades (God's temporary prison for wicked angels and humans) and then finally into the Lake of Fire, where they would spend eternity. The Lake of Fire was not hidden away somewhere out of the way, but was clearly visible to all the angelic hosts in the Heavens; so not only was it God's eternal prison for the wicked, but God also used it as a deterrent so that it's horror might turn a number of those angels who had gone into sin back to righteousness by repentance, who had not as yet become irrevocably hardened by sin and also be a warning to any other angel who might have thoughts of following Satan and the way of sin and selfishness. Hades and the Lake of Fire also clearly showed to all the angelic host that the wages of sin is death and that God would not let any unrepentant sinner (be they angelic or human) into the eternal kingdom, so that they could not wreck the happiness that Kingdom, like they had always done so in past Ages. Matt 25v41, Rom 6v23, Col 1v20, Rev 14v9-11, 21v8,27.

A Note On Hades (Greek), Sheol (Hebrew), Gehenna And The Lake Of Fire.

In the Old Testament all who died went to the place which is called in the Hebrew, "Sheol" (OT:7585) and in the Greek "Hades" (NT:86). However, now only unbelievers go to "Hades," its gates have no power over Christians, they are with their Lord in Heaven. Matt 16v18, Rev 1v18, 2Cor 5v1,6-8, Phil 1v21-23. That the dead consciously exist is seen in many Scriptures, e.g. Isaiah 14v9-11, Ezek 32vv21, Psalm 16v10, Luke 16v22-25.

"Hades" occurs more than 100 times in the Septuagint Greek Old Testament, nearly always to translate the Hebrew "Sheol." "Hades" occurs 11 times in the New Testament, Matt 11v23, 16v18, Luke 10v15, 16v23, Acts 2v27,31, Rev 1v18, 6v8, 20v13,14. In 1Cor 15v55, the Critical Texts read "thanatos" (NT:2288) "death," instead of the Majority Text "Hades," which the Authorised Version wrongly translates as "grave."

The English word "Hell," comes from the Saxon "helan," to cover; it originally meant, "a covered or invisible place."

However, in many people's eyes, the word "Hell," has come to mean, "the place of the future eternal punishment of the wicked." It no longer conveys the idea of "Sheol" or "Hades." It is, therefore, unfortunate that "Sheol," "Hades," "Gehenna," and "Tartarus" are all translated by the word "Hell" in the Authorised Version of the Bible. (Greek, "Tartarus" (NT:5020) is the place in the Abyss where evil angels are confined. 2Pet 2v4.)

That the Jews were confused and unscriptural in some of their theology about "Sheol," can be seen from the comment on "Hades" in Edward Robinson's, "Greek and English Lexicon." "According to the notions of the Hebrews, 'Hades' was a vast subterranean receptacle, where the souls of the dead existed in a separate state until the resurrection of their bodies. The region of the blessed during this interval, or the inferior Paradise, they supposed to be in the upper part of this receptacle; while beneath was the Abyss or Gehenna, Tartarus, in which the souls of the wicked were subjected to punishment." End of quote.

If Robinson's synopsis of the beliefs of the Jews about Hades is correct, the Jews were certainly unscriptural in their ideas about life after death. It is certainly true to say that Hades is a vast subterranean receptacle, which was divided into two separate parts for the wicked and righteous. However, to say that Gehenna is part of Hades is definitely wrong; Gehenna is the lake of fire, the place of eternal punishment, into which Hades is cast after the Millennium. Rev 20v14. No one is cast into the lake of fire until the return of Christ. Matt 25v41.

It is also very strange and unscriptural to call Sheol-Hades by the name of "the inferior Paradise," for (Greek) "paradeisos" (NT:3857) speaks of a park or garden, and of the ultimate in blessedness. The Septuagint translators use "paradeisos," when speaking of the garden of Eden in Gen 2v8 and Ezek 31v8,9 and Eden, the garden of God in Heaven in Ezek 28v13. "Paradeisos," is used in 2Cor 12v1-4 and Rev 2v7, to speak of God's incredibly beautiful garden in Heaven. In Luke 16v23-25, Jesus tells us that the Old Testament saints did receive comfort from God (and by their faith in the Resurrection), Psalm 139v7,8, but they were anticipating anything but Paradise. Gesenius says "Sheol" is, "a subterranean place full of thick darkness. Job 10v21,22." Godly Job said that when he died, he was going to "a place where the light is as darkness." Job 10v20-22. Hades was a dark and awful place, even for godly saints, and was certainly no Paradise, and they were in bondage all their lives through fear of death and going to Hades. Heb 2v15.

The translation of Luke 23v43 should be, "I say unto thee today, thou shalt be with me in paradise." Jesus told the thief that his faith had saved him THAT DAY, and that he need not wait until His kingdom was established to be assured of a place in it. Jesus did not go to Paradise that day, He went to "Hades," and to the bad side where the wicked were, for He died in the sinners place. 2Cor 5v21. When Jesus told the parable of Luke 16v19-31, He knew that to redeem us He would have to go and be imprisoned in the bad part of Hades like the selfish, greedy and evil rich man in the parable.

"Hades" and "Sheol" are both speaking of the same place, and Psalm 16v10 and Acts 2v27, confirm this.

They refer to the unseen subterranean place of departed souls and are quite distinct from the Hebrew "qeber" (OT:6913) and the Greek "mnaymion" (mnemeion, NT:3419) which are translated as grave, sepulchre, or tomb. The Authorised Version never translates "qeber" and "mnaymion" as "Hell," however, it incorrectly translates "Sheol" as "grave" 31 times out of the 65 which it occurs in the Old Testament, probably because the translators have avoided the use of "Hell" when the reference was to godly people, obviously feeling that there was some slight in using "Hell" in connection with them. Gen 37v35, 42v38, 44v29-31, 1Sam 2v6, 1Kings 2v6-9, Job 7v9, 14v13, 17v13, 21v13, 24v19, Psalm 6v5, 30v3, 31v17, 49v14,15, 88v3, 141v7, Prov 1v12, 30v16, Eccles 9v10, Song 8v6, Isaiah 14v11, 38v10,18, Ezek 31v15 Hosea 13v14.

In the Authorised Version "Sheol" is translated as "pit" 3 times, in Num 16v30,33, Job 17v16 and as "Hell" 32 times, in Deut 32v22, 2Sam 22v6, Job 11v8, 26v6, Psalm 9v17, 16v10, 18v5, 55v15, 86v13, 116v3, 139v8, Prov 5v5, 7v27, 9v18, 15v11, 23v14, 27v20, Isaiah 5v14, 14v9, 15v28, 15v18, 57v9, Ezek 31v16,17, 32v21,17, Amos 9v2, Jonah 2v2, Hab 2v5, "Abyss," "abussos" (NT:12) meaning unfathomable depth, is translated as "bottomless pit" and "deep" in the Authorised Version, it is the lowest part of "Hades" to which Christ went to pay the penalty of our sin. Rev 9v1,2,11, 11v7, 17v8, Luke 8v31, Rom 10v9.

"Sheol" and "Hades" are quite distinct from "qeber" and "mnaymion," a burying place, grave, tomb, or sepulchre.

This is clearly seen from the following facts. "Sheol" is never used in the plural, whereas both singular and plural are used with "qeber" and "mnaymion." The Hebrew "nephesh," soul, occurs over 770 times in the Old Testament, but is never said to be put into a "qeber," a grave. No corpse is ever taken to "Sheol," whereas many bodies are taken to "qebers." In Numb 16v30,33, the casting of people directly into "Sheol" was looked upon as "a new thing," and quite abnormal. Nobody is said to have seen or touched a "sheol" on earth, whereas many "qebers" have been seen and touched. No animal is ever said to go to "Sheol" at death, the comparison of Psalm 49v14, is between men who are dying and going to "Sheol" as fast as sheep are slaughtered for eating, even though in their pride men think that it will never come; compare v15, the Psalmists hope.

The Scriptures constantly affirm that men go down into "Sheol," and that "Sheol" is in the lower parts of the earth, and is so deep that it is below the mountains and seas, and it cannot be dug into. Num 16v30,33, Deut 32v22, Psalm 63v9, 68v18

with Eph 4v8-10, Ezek 31v14-18, 32v18-31, Jonah 2v2-6, Job 11v8, Amos 9v2, (The task of digging into "Sheol" is looked upon as being as impossible as climbing into Heaven.) Matt 12v40, Phil 2v10. On 5 occasions in the Scriptures, "Sheol" is used for comparison with the height of Heaven, being put as the extreme opposite in depth. Job 11v7,8, Psalm 139v8, Jonah 2v2,6, Matt 11v23. All this is in sharp contrast to a grave, sepulchre and tomb, which men dig, make, hew and are laid in. The Septuagint of "Sheol" is never called grave.

"Sheol" is certainly not a place where people are unconscious.

The wicked are in Hades "reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgement of the great day." Jude v6,13, 2Pet 2v17. See Isaiah 14v9-15, Ezek 32v27-31, Psalm 18v5, 116v3, Lk.16v19-31, Luke 20v38, Mark 12v26,27. As Jesus said, the rich man died, but in "Hades" he was tormented in soul, only wilful blindness can ignore such plain statements. Jesus was imprisoned in the Abyss to atone for our sins, while His body was in the grave, "qeber." Isaiah 53v9, Psalm 16v10, Acts 2v24,27. He preached to the dead who were imprisoned there. 1Pet 3v18-22, 4v6, 2Pet 2v4. The Old Testament saints were among "the multitude of captives," that Jesus led out of Hades. Eph 4v8, Rev 1v18.

Hades has two parts between which a great gulf is fixed, which is impassable. Luke 16v26.

Before Jesus came all souls went to one side or the other, but the good side was not in God's presence, and though the Old Testament saints had the comfort of their faith in the resurrection, they lost their spirit at death, and none of them liked to die, they lived their lives in fear of death. Eccles 12v7, Isaiah 38v1-3, Heb 2v15, Job 10v20-22, 19v25-27. We Christians, unlike the Old Testament saint, do not lose our spirits at death, and go to Hades, but we go into the presence of God in paradise in Heaven. Matt 16v18, John 8v35, 11v24-26, 2Cor 5v1,6-8, 12v2-4 with Rev 2v7, 21v10, 22v2, Phil 1v21-23, Heb 12v22-24.

Gehenna And The Lake Of Fire.

The name "Gehenna" is derived from a place in the valley of Hinnom where refuse and the dead bodies of animals and criminals were burned. Jesus uses it to describe the place to which evil souls and spirits will be sent, who are too dangerous to be allowed to live and roam free, because they are given over to unrestrained selfishness and evil. They see and hate God and righteousness, and only find pleasure by causing suffering and pain. John 15v22-25, 1Pet 5v8. No one has, as yet, been cast into the lake of fire, Antichrist and his followers are the first people to be cast into Hell, and this occurs at Christ's second coming. In the New Testament "Gehenna" (NT:1067) is used 12 times. Matt 5v22,29,30, 10v9, 23v15,33, Mark 9v43,45,47, Luke 12v5, James 3v6. However, it is also called the lake of fire in Rev 19v20, 20v10-15, 21v8. Fire is associated with the judgement of the wicked in many places. Matt 7v19, 13v40,42,50, 18v8, 25v41, Mark 9v44,46,48, Isaiah 30v33, Luke 16v24, John 15v6, 2Thess 1v8, Heb 10v27, Jude v7, Rev 14v10, Deut 32v21,22. These Scriptures should be treated with the utmost gravity, it is no wonder that Paul said "work out your salvation with fear and trembling." Phil 2v12. Hell was prepared for Satan and his angels, it destroys angelic as well as human bodies. Matt 25v41. It is called "the second death," because it destroys the bodies of wicked people for the second time. Rev 2v11, 20v14.

In Luke 16v14,19-31, Jesus warned the covetous Pharisees with two very striking metaphors, unquenchable flame and unquenchable thirst, that the consequences of their greed, would be confinement in Hades, and a fearful anticipation of judgement to come. Heb 10v27. There are flames in "Gehenna," "the Lake of fire," but no flames in Hades, the Bible states it is a dark prison, where the wicked are "reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgement of the great day." Jude v6,13, 2Pet 2v17, 1Sam 2v9. Christ's parable reveals how mentally painful confinement in Hades can be if you have lived a selfish evil life. All who are in "Hades" will come out for the Great White Throne judgement, but no one is said to come out of "Gehenna." Rev 20v11-15. "Hades" is the temporary abode of the dead, whereas "Gehenna" is the God's eternal prison for unrepentant evil people and unclean angels. We read in Rev 20v14, that "Hades" is cast into "Gehenna," the lake of fire, after the Great White Throne judgement.

The feet of Asaph nearly slipped when he was overwhelmed with numerous difficulties and trials, and compared his situation with the prosperity of the wicked, they arrogantly rejected God, and mockingly cried, "How doth God know? And is there knowledge in the Most High?" Psalm 73v11. Then Asaph saw their end. Psalm 73v16-20. The righteous have often cried out in great distress, "Yahweh, how long shall the wicked triumph?" Psalm 94v3. Our Lord gives the answer, He said, "The Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he render unto every man according to his deeds." Matt 16v27. When Jesus returns He "will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of the hearts." 1Cor 4v5, Eccles 12v13. In Rom 2v5,6, we again read of the day of wrath and the revelation of the righteous judgement of God, "who will render to everyone according to their works." See Rom 1v18-22.

So, having initially been appointed their positions in Heaven, Lucifer and the other evil angels refused to keep their first estate and own habitation coming down into the earth. Lucifer and those other evil angels he appointed took upon themselves giant human-like bodies and being filled with a murderous hatred of God, man and the creation, set about to get dominion over man and so rule over the whole earth no matter how much death and destruction would result from their actions. Even with them having made a final and irrevocable free-will choice for evil and having abandoned Heaven and their original positions there, God did not immediately destroy them, but was going to use them to manifest evil and its effects (by the out working of the Mystery of Iniquity, 2Thess 2v1-12) not only in the lives of Pre-Adamic man and the angelic host, but also in the lives of all His free-will creatures who would have existence from that time right up until the

end of the Millennium. God had to prove to all that His way, the way of Love (i.e. The necessity for His free-will creatures to love Him and love each other), was the only way that a creation could work (no matter how they were ruled), otherwise it would quickly become filled with hatred, bitterness and suffering etc., so God was going to use the Devil and the rest of the evil angels to manifest the end of evil to every living being, so that every free-will being would be faced with the choice of either God and good or the Devil, sin and evil. The state of innocence like that of Adam and Eve is not desirable but indeed is dangerous; the individual free-will being is **NOT** safe until they not only love what is good **BUT** hate what is evil, and it is only those who love what is good and hate what is evil whom God will let into the eternal kingdom to enjoy the riches and treasures of His mind and being in the Ages of Ages. God was also going to use the Devil and the mystery of iniquity to refine His saints and so prepare them to rule in the eternal kingdom. God allowed the Devil to sift Peter and the Apostles to remove the chaff out of their lives to purify and prepare them for the great anointing that they would receive on the Day of Pentecost. We also see how God used the Devil to sift His great Old Testament saint, Job, and so perfect his faith, patience and character. During the Great Tribulation when the Mystery of Iniquity is working fully, God will continue to use the Devil to purify His saints for their positions in the eternal Kingdom. **NOTE:** The Devil cannot do what he likes with God's saints, but can only do what God permits him to do after having gone in before His Throne and asking God for permission to carry out a certain action, e.g. Luke 22v31, "And the Lord said, "Simon, Simon! Indeed, **Satan has asked for you**, that he may sift you as wheat." Gen 3v1-6, Job chapters 1 & 2 (all), Dan 11v35, Luke 22v31-34, 24v52,53, Acts chapters 1 & 2 (all), 5v12-16, Rom 5v14, Eph 2v1-10 (esp. v7), 1Tim 2v14, Heb 1v9, James 5v10,11, 1Peter 1v1-12, Rev 16v15, 19v1-10.

It is also important to understand that although the Devil was able to seduce a third of the angels in Heaven in the very Presence of God to follow his way into sin and evil, two thirds of the angels resisted his seductions and stayed true to their Creator and God. We read in Rev 4v4,10, 5v5-8,14, 19v4, 7v11,13, 11v16, 14v3 of the twenty four Elders, who sit upon twenty four thrones around the Throne of God. Some have said that the elders are the raptured Church, or a company of Christians in Heaven. The Authorised Version of Rev 5v9,10, makes the elders Christians, however, several versions follow the Greek texts which put "men" for "us," "them" for "us," and "they" for "we." The alternative reading makes it clear that the elders are singing a song about another group of people and not a song about themselves. The matter cannot finally be settled by an appeal to the Greek text, both versions have good authority, one has to study the relevant Scriptures to decide which is correct. That the elders are singing a song about another group of people is clearly seen from the following facts:

- a) There are only 24 elders and the raptured Church does not consist of only 24 Christians. This number 24 is no more symbolical than the number of the living creatures, or the number of angels. Rev 5v11. God does not use a symbolic number, when he tells of the number of Christians who go through the Great Tribulation, He says that they are "a great multitude which no man could number." Rev 7v9-14.
- b) The song is sung by the living creatures as well as the elders and they are certainly not raptured saints.
- c) In Rev 7v9-11, 11v16-18, 19v4,7, 14v3, a clear distinction is made between the elders and Christians. Notice how the elders are not able to sing the new song of the Christians of Rev 14v1-3.
- d) The Church is praying and suffering on earth right until the coming of Christ after the Great Tribulation. See Rev 6v9-11, 8v3,4, 12v17, 13v7, 14v13, 17v6. The Great Tribulation ends when the seventh trumpet sounds and the dead are resurrected, this is years later than the first seal. 1Thess 4v16,17, 1Cor 15v51-53, Rev 11v15-18. In Matt 24v31, the elect which are gathered are not Jews, for Isaiah 66v19,20, informs us that the Jews are brought back to Israel by the Gentiles as an offering to the Lord. Isaiah 14v2, 45v19,20. Christians are being martyred on earth until the end of the Great Tribulation and do not sit on thrones until the Millennium begins, which is about seven years later than Rev 4 and 5. The Christian dead, whether they be martyred or otherwise, are resting, not reigning, until the Millennium starts. Rev 6v9-11, 14v12,13, 20v4-6, 6v9-11.
- e) **These elders are undoubtedly the angels that share in the government of Heaven.** The word "seats" should be translated "thrones," and Col 1v16 speaks of the thrones that are in the invisible world, the thrones of great angels that rule the heavenly world. **These angelic elders have white robes and crowns of gold, and they have proved their right to them, for they remained true to God and righteousness, and resisted the rebellion that Satan started in Heaven. They overcame Satan's lies in Heaven even as we have to overcome them on earth.**

The apostle John writes in Rev 5v11, "And I beheld, and I heard the voice of **many angels** round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and **the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands...**" John says that these "Ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands" represents "many angels" which is **NOT** all of them, but a certain percentage of the total number of good angels. This Greek construction makes the number of these "many angels" (and quite a conservative number it is too) being in the region of hundreds of (US) trillions!

Having conquered and subdued the kingdoms and nations of the earth which had resulted in the earth becoming as a wilderness and all its cities destroyed (even as much off the earth will be at the time of Christ's Second Coming, Matt

24v22, Rev 11v18), Lucifer, who by now had become the Devil, the Prince of Darkness, the lying slanderer, who's will and mind were eternally and irrevocably set in the way of sin, evil and selfishness now turned his attention to Heaven to endeavour to put the next step of his evil plan into effect. The thoughts of his mind immediately before he started on this next step of his evil plan are recorded through the prophet Isaiah, in Isaiah 14v13,14, where it is recorded, "For you have said in your heart: **I WILL** ascend into heaven, **I WILL** exalt my throne above the stars of God; **I WILL** also sit on the mount of the congregation On the farthest sides of the north; **I WILL** ascend above the heights of the clouds, **I WILL** be like the Most High." Note the five "I will's" of the Devil, which God responds too with His six "I will's" in Ezek 28v16-19, "...therefore **I WILL** cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and **I WILL** destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: **I WILL** cast thee to the ground, **I WILL** lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore **WILL I** bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and **I WILL** bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more." Isaiah 14v3-6,16,17.

These five "I will's" from the Devil, along with the earth having been made like a wilderness and all its cities destroyed through his lust for power, dominion and ruler ship of the nations; the war in the heavenlies between the Devil and his angels and Michael and his angels also being fought with such great ferocity, finally moves God to act against him by casting him and the other evil angels out of Heaven into the earth and permanently removing from them their original positions which they had enjoyed in Heaven. Having been cast down into the earth, the Lord then removed all the protection, power and authority from the Devil and those other evil angels who took upon themselves giant human-like bodies and then brought the armies of the nations, whom he had previously conquered and subdued, against him and his armies with great ferocity. This resulted in them being completely wiped out and the city were the Devil had set up his throne so that all the nations and kingdoms of the earth, having been commanded and forced if necessary to come up and worship him, was completely destroyed by being burned with fire. Because the Devil and those other evil angels that had taken upon themselves giant human-like bodies had chosen to live like men, God decreed that they would also die like men. Having been slain by the sword, they and all the other evil angels in the heavenlies were then put into the Abyss in Hades, which resulted in the earth enjoying quietness and rest. This great slaughter of the Devil and his armies of giant human-like beings by the armies of the nations (Whom God used to bring judgement upon the Devil and the evil angels upon earth, who had taken upon themselves giant human-like bodies), so that the memory of them would be wiped out, even as God used Israel (along with other nations) to bring judgement upon the giants that inhabited Canaan and the surrounding areas. He will also again bring judgement upon these evil giants during the Great Tribulation through the Church; the Two Witnesses (and other like ministries) even calling fire down from Heaven upon them so that they are incinerated. **NOTE:** God will be with His people in a new and greater way during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, imparting to them great power and authority, the likes of which has never been experienced and is unknown in all past times in the history of the Church or amongst God's people (since the time of Adam), so that the Two Witnesses (and other like ministries) will also be able "to smite the earth with all plagues, **as often as they will.**" Num 13v1-14v9, Deut 2v19-23, 1Sam 17 (all), Dan 11v32, Joel 2v28-32, Mal 4v5,6, Luke 17v20-18v8, John 14v12, Acts 2v17-21, Rev 11v3-6). God also used the judgement that he brought upon the Devil and the evil angels as a warning to all the nations and kingdoms left upon the earth that the same judgement would fall upon them if they followed the Devil's example by going the way of sin, evil and selfishness, even as He will use the devastation caused upon the earth by Antichrist and his followers and His judgement upon them at His Second Coming as a warning to the inhabitants left upon earth who will enter into the Millennium Kingdom that "the soul that sinneth, it shall die," and that happiness, joy and safety can only be enjoyed by them by loving God and their neighbour. (Ezek 28v19). Psalm 2v1-12, 82v6,7, Isaiah 14v3-21, Ezek 18v4,20, 28v2,3,6-11,15-19, Dan 10v10-20, Matt 22v37-39, 25v31-40, 2Pet 2v4, Jude v6,7, Rev 11v18, 12v7,8.

The Earth Age Under Lucifer came to an end when the Devil and the other evil angels (all of whom by this time, along with the Devil, were irrevocably hardened by sin) were removed from the earth and the heavenlies and imprisoned in God's temporary prison, the Abyss, which is in the deepest part of Hades (it is the place were our dear Lord Jesus would go to purchase our redemption, Acts 2v25-29, Rom 10v7, 1Pet 3v18-20). Here they remained for a considerable time, until God would release them in the next age, "The Earth Age Under Satan," to test the inhabitants of that age, even as God will release the Devil from the Abyss at the end of the Millennium to test the inhabitants of it. 1Pet 3v18-20, 2Pet 2v4, Jude v6,7, Rev 20v1-3,7-10.

The Earth Age Under Satan.

With the Devil and the evil angels being put into the Abyss, the inhabitants of the earth then experienced a sudden great quietness and rest; this state continued for a long period of time. The veil and covering that the Devil and the evil angels had put over all the nations of the earth was fully and completely removed, so that they might (if they wanted to) be able to think aright about God, righteousness and holiness. The cities that had been destroyed by the Devil and his many armies of giant human-like beings in his lust and desire to conquer and rule over all the nations and kingdoms of the earth, were rebuilt and the earth became a fruitful place again. Isaiah 14v3,7, 25v7, Jer 4v26.

After a considerable period of time the Devil and his evil angels were released from the Abyss by God for the sole purpose of testing the inhabitants of "The Earth Age Under Satan." The Mystery of Iniquity (lawlessness) that was working in Paul's day and which will continue right up until the second coming of Christ, was also at work in the Pre-Adamic Ages, before the Devil and the evil angels were put in the Abyss and afterwards once they were released from it, and indeed was responsible for God having to bring judgement upon Pre-Adamic man and the earth. Even as in the days of Noah, before the flood, when every intent of the thoughts of the hearts of man was only evil continually and violence filled the earth, with all mankind (except Noah, his wife and three sons and their wives) having gone into apostasy, so it was in the days preceding God's judgement upon Pre-Adamic man, which necessitated The Dayspring (God the Word) coming to the Pre-Adamic earth in fierce anger and bringing judgement upon its inhabitants (which resulted in the earth becoming without form and void and the heavens above having no light). These same evil conditions will also be upon the earth immediately before the Second Coming of Christ and indeed will once again be the cause that forces God to send forth the Lord Jesus to come in judgement (once again) upon the wicked on the earth, but this time He will deal with them permanently so that they will no longer ever be able to wreck the happiness of His creation. It should also be observed that when God removes (or sufficiently decreases) His restraint upon the Devil and his evil angels, wickedness increases greatly upon the earth and the Devil sets about creating human-like giants (which are not human at all) that become the habitation of other evil angels (Gen 6v4). This will also occur once again during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, for Daniel writes in Dan 2v43, "...They shall mingle themselves with the seed of men." At the start of the Great Tribulation, with the Devil and his evil angels having been cast out of the heavenlies by Michael and his angels into the earth are filled with great wrath (which grows with intensity as the Great Tribulation progresses), knowing that they only have a short time left (three and a half years) before they are cast into the Lake of Fire for eternity, so once again they set about creating giants which will be inhabited by other evil angels. This is what also occurred again in the times preceding God the Word's judgement upon Pre-Adamic man; once the Devil and the evil angels had been released from the Abyss (to test the inhabitants of the earth) they again created giant human-like bodies, which became the habitation of other evil angels. The main purpose of the Devil and the evil angels in creating these giants upon his release from the Abyss, was not so much to conquer the nations and kingdoms of the earth and rule over them but to corrupt Pre-Adamic man, not only morally and spiritually but also physically, in that as soon as they took upon themselves their giant bodies, they took unto themselves the daughters of men for their wives and had sexual relations with them, the result was that the offspring were not inhabited by human souls but by other evil spirits, just like as happened before the Flood. Gen 6v1-12, 1Per 3v18-22, 2Pet 2v4, Jude v6,7.

Once the Devil and the evil angels had managed to corrupt the whole of Pre-Adamic man and bring them down to the same level of death and destruction as themselves, the whole earth having become filled with violence with the thoughts and intents of their hearts being only evil continually, God was forced to bring the great suffering of the earth to an end through judgement upon its inhabitants, due to **ALL** the inhabitants of Pre-Adamic earth having gone into apostasy. This judgement upon the wicked was brought about by the personal visitation of The Dayspring (God the Word) to the earth in great wrath (even as at His second Coming when He will not only destroy the wicked, but will resurrect and rapture Old and New Testament saints). This resulted in the wicked being shaken violently out of the earth so that no human was left alive, the mountains and hills being moved and the whole geography of the earth being completely changed with the movement and breakup of landmasses. It also caused the complete removal of all animals, mammals, birds, reptiles and insects, in fact **ALL** life ceased to exist upon earth, however, organisms and ecosystems, as far as it can be determined by the fossil record, do not appear to have undergone significant change. The types of things that would have survived such conditions would have been, bacteria, spores, sponges, protozoa, fungi, corals, etc. (The great geographical changes that occurred to the earth at this time also removed **ALL** traces of the existence of Pre-Adamic man and the different species of life that inhabited the earth at that time, all was buried deep under the earth and oceans with further layers of rock, forestation etc laid down over the subsequent hundreds of millions of years, during which time other ice ages occurred, so that today there is absolutely no trace of Pre-Adamic man or the different animal life etc that lived upon the earth before God's judgement upon Pre-Adamic man. Not only was Pre-Adamic man and all the different species of life completely buried without a trace by this judgement but also most importantly the Tree of Life, which Pre-Adamic man had access to, God made sure was completely obliterated and that it would not be available upon earth again until God created Adam and Eve and put them into the Garden of Eden. Gen v3v22). The heavens had no light and a prolonged ice age occurred, when the whole earth became covered in ice on at least one occasion, including the oceans around the equator, so that a "Snowball Earth" (the condition when the earth is completely covered with ice) occurred, or at the very least a "Slushball Earth" (which is when all the oceans were covered with ice but with a thin equatorial band of open (or seasonally open) water). This judgement upon the earth by God the Word resulted in the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) Ice Age that lasted for more than two hundred millions years, from about 850 to 635 million years ago. When the wicked were shaken out of the earth by God the Word's judgement, with the result that the whole population of the Pre-Adamic world died, their souls were put into the Abyss, God's temporary prison, their spirits returned to God Who gave it and their bodies were buried deep in the earth. The Devil and the evil angels were not imprisoned in the Abyss, but were left in the heavenlies with access to the earth. Job 38v12-15,30, Eccl 12v7, Jer 4v23-28, Luke 16v19-31, Rev 20v13.

This is how "The Earth Age Under Satan" came to an abrupt end.

The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos.

The Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) Ice Age lasted for more than two hundred millions years, from about 850 to 635 million years ago, with another two ice ages occurring after that, the Karoo ice age which lasted from 350 to 250 million years ago (so this ice age lasted around 100 million years) and the Quaternary ice age that started about 2 millions years ago to the present.

From the creation of the earth, some 4.5 billion years ago, there has been at least seven ice ages recognised, at least four of them are considered significant because of the extent of their glaciations or because they lasted for an extremely long time:

- 1) 2400 to 2100 million years ago: the Huronian Ice Age.
- 2) 850 to 630 million years ago: the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) Ice Age.
- 3) 350 to 250 million years ago: the Karoo Ice Age.
- 4) About 2 million years ago to the present: the Quaternary Ice Age. Despite the many warm periods since then, we identify the entire time as one ice age because of the continuous existence of at least one large ice sheet—the one over Antarctica. (The glaciers and the Greenland ice sheet are also of long standing, but they are more recent). We are currently enjoying a warm interval: our climate represents an interglacial period that began about ten thousand years ago. The preceding glacial period lasted about eighty thousand years.

It is difficult to say what event triggered or for what purpose God brought the Huronian Ice Age upon the earth, as there is no clear indication in the Scriptures. After much prayer and reflection I think it does not appear to have been brought upon the earth as a result of the rebellion of the Devil and the evil angels when they were cast out of Heaven, although it could have occurred before they were cast out of Heaven as a warning to both angels and humans that if they continued on in evil that a more severe judgement would surely follow. Isaiah 14v12-14, Luke 10v18.

Although God brought judgement upon Pre-Adamic man with the result that **ALL** life ceased upon earth, He declared the following in Jer 4v27,28, "For thus hath the Lord said, The whole land shall be desolate; **yet will I not make a full end.** For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it." So, with the end of the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) ice age the earth received some respite from the darkness and desolation as Job 38v25-27 states, "Who hath divided a watercourse for the overflowing of waters, or a way for the lightning of thunder; To cause it to rain on the earth, where no man is; on the wilderness, wherein there is no man; To satisfy the desolate and waste ground; and to cause the bud of the tender herb to spring forth?"

It is after the end of the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) ice age that the Devil starts to further implement an important part of his plan of evil; he gave the order to the rest of the evil angels to proceed and misuse their great creative powers and energies to create vast numbers of different creatures that became ever more sophisticated as time progressed, so that when the descendants of Adam would discover them as fossils, the Devil would then energise The Lie of the theory of evolution into their minds. The start of this period of great creative activity by the Devil and the evil angels is referred to as The Cambrian Explosion, which started about five hundred and forty five million years ago, an explosion of diversity which led to the appearance over a relatively short period of 5 million to 10 million years of a huge number of complex, multi-celled organisms; this burst of animal forms would lead to most of the major animal groups found in the fossil records up too the creation of the hominids by the Devil, the last three (in terms of sophistication) of which are referred to as Homo neanderthalensis, Homo floresiensis and Homo sapiens sapiens (modern).

The following hominid fossils have been found and dated. **NOTE: They were ALL created by the Devil and the evil angels:**

- 1) Sahelanthropus tchadensis – Dated around six to seven million years.
- 2) Orrorin tugenensis – Dated around six millions years.
- 3) Ardipithecus ramidus – Dates about 5.8 million years ago.
- 4) Australopithecus anamensis – Existed between 4.2 and 3.9 million years ago.
- 5) Australopithecus afarensis – Existed between 3.9 and 3.0 million years ago.
- 6) Kenyanthropus platyops - Aged about 3.5 million years old.
- 7) Australopithecus africanus - Existed between 3 and 2 million years ago.
- 8) Australopithecus garhi – Aged about 2.5 million years.
- 9) Australopithecus aethiopicus - Existed between 2.6 and 2.3 million years ago.
- 10) Australopithecus robustus - Existed between 2 and 1.5 million years ago.
- 11) Australopithecus boisei - Existed between 2.1 and 1.1 million years ago.
- 12) Australopithecus sediba – Existed just under 2 million years old.
- 13) Homo habilis - Existed between 2.4 and 1.5 million years ago.
- 14) Homo georgicus - About 1.8 million years ago.
- 15) Homo erectus - Existed between 1.8 million and 300,000 years ago.
- 16) Homo ergaster – Existed between 1.8 and 1.3 million years ago.

- 17) Homo antecessor - Dated to at least 780,000 years ago.
- 18) Homo sapiens (archaic) - First appear about 500,000 years ago.
- 19) Homo neanderthalensis - Existed between 230,000 and 30,000 years ago.
- 20) Homo floresiensis - Existed from 94,000 to 13,000 years ago.
- 21) Homo sapiens sapiens (modern) - Modern "forms" of Homo sapiens first appear about 195,000 years ago.

There are a number of clear trends (which were neither continuous nor uniform) from early australopithecines to Homo sapiens sapiens (modern): increasing brain size, increasing body size, increasing use of and sophistication in tools, decreasing tooth size, decreasing skeletal robustness. There are no clear dividing lines between some of the later gracile australopithecines and some of the early Homo, between erectus and archaic sapiens, or archaic sapiens and modern sapiens.

The question arises: why has there been no fossils of Pre-Adamic man found dating back to before seven million years ago, i.e. back to one or two hundred of million years ago, or even further back in time?

The answer is (as already intimated) that (with the wicked being shaken out of the earth by God the Word and ALL being buried very deep under the earth and oceans with further layers of rock coverings so that nothing could ever be found with the end of "The earth Age Under Satan.") all the fossils found dating back to six or seven million year ago, starting with Sahelanthropus tchadensis to Homo sapiens sapiens (modern) were **ALL** creations of the Devil and his evil angels. Although Homo sapiens sapiens (modern) appears to be almost exactly like Adam and his offspring in outward form it is different genetically, the fact being that Homo sapiens sapiens (modern) was a direct creation of the Devil and his evil angels. This was all part of the Devil's evil plan to create the physical evidence which would become the fossils that would be found millions of years later by scientists (especially palaeontologists) and used by them as (supposed) "evidence" supporting "The Theory Of Evolution" put forward by Charles Darwin (and others).

This was another important part of the Devil's evil plan of lawlessness, for, from before his fall, part of his evil plan was to create many different kinds of creatures by the misuse of his (and the other evil angels) great creative powers and energies and once the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) Ice Age had ended, the Devil (and his evil angels) again started creating different kinds of creatures and Hominids. As the different kinds of creatures followed one after another, their level of sophistication became ever greater, which was all part of his evil plan to create The Lie of "The Theory of Evolution" many millions of years later in the future to hide the Truth of Creation from mankind. (Although ever since the creation of the world His invisible nature and attributes, that is, His eternal power and divinity, have been made intelligible and clearly discernible in and through the things that have been made (His handiworks). So [men] are without excuse [altogether without any defence or justification], because God [Himself] has shown it to them. Rom 1v19,20, Amplified Bible). Charles Darwin's Theory of Evolution is now accepted worldwide as being a fact, it is especially widely believed and held in the western democracies and taught without question at every level of education as truth.

The Devil and the powers of darkness were also responsible for the bringing into being the many different kinds of dinosaurs, i.e. the Tyrannosaurus Rex (a very large carnivorous dinosaur of the Upper Cretaceous Period of North America, characterized by small forelimbs and a large head): these large fierce creatures simply mirrored the ferocity of the Devil and his evil angels. The Devil and the evil angels not only created the dinosaurs but it is also certain that at times demons would have possessed them to not only fulfil their sadistic pleasures but also to manifest their (the dinosaur's) evil natures in an even greater way. So far the known number of genera of dinosaurs is over five hundred, with many more hundreds waiting to be discovered, which shows just how great the activity of the Devil and his evil angels was in their rampant evil creative acts of these fierce creatures. Dinosaurs appeared on earth nearly two hundred and fifty Million years ago (immediately after the end of the Karoo Ice Age), early in a period of time geologists called Triassic. They grew in numbers and types during the Jurassic time period, and dominated Earth during the Cretaceous time period. Their existence continued for nearly two hundred million years, but at the end of the Cretaceous Period, nearly sixty five million years ago God was forced to act and brought an end to the existence of the dinosaurs, they simply ceased to exist after this time, their memory, like the Rephaim, being wiped out completely by God. The same fate also happened to the Neanderthal, they first appeared upon earth around two hundred and thirty thousand years ago and the last remaining ones died out around twenty five to thirty thousand years ago; they just simply disappeared! Gen 6v1-12, Job 38v12-15, Psalm 2v1-6, Isaiah 14v12-14, 26v14, Jer 4v23-28, Ezek 18v23,32, 28v12-19, Matt 24v12,21,22, Rom 2v1-4, 2Thess 1v6-10, 2v1-12, 1Tim 2v4, 2Pet 3v9, Rev 6v12-17, 7v14, 11v15-19, 16v17-21, 19v1-6,11-21, 20v1-3.

(The average brain size of the Neanderthal is slightly larger than that of modern humans, about 1450 cc, but this is probably correlated with their greater bulk. The brain case however is longer and lower than that of modern humans, with a marked bulge at the back of the skull. Like homo erectus, they had a protruding jaw and receding forehead. The chin was usually weak. The mid facial area also protrudes, a feature that is not found in Homo erectus or Homo sapiens. There are other minor anatomical differences from modern humans, the most unusual being some peculiarities of the shoulder blade, and of the pubic bone in the pelvis. Neanderthals mostly lived in cold climates, and their body proportions are similar to those of modern cold-adapted peoples: short and solid, with short limbs. Men averaged about 168 cm (5'6") in height. Their

bones are thick and heavy, and show signs of powerful muscle attachments. Neanderthals would have been extraordinarily strong by modern standards, and their skeletons show that they endured brutally hard lives. (Many Neanderthal skeletons show signs of broken bones and other traumas. A study by Erik Trinkaus and Tomy Berger showed that the pattern of bone injuries was very similar to that of rodeo riders (Gore 1996). This suggests that Neanderthal hunting involved quite a lot of close-quarters contact with large and savage animals. Neanderthals apparently never invented thrown projectiles, and their spears seem to have been designed for thrusting while being held. One can see why this *modus operandi* might result in frequent injuries when hunting big game). A large number of tools and weapons have been found, more advanced than those of *Homo erectus*. Neanderthals were formidable hunters, and are the first of these Hominids known to have buried their dead, with the oldest known burial site being about a hundred thousand years old. They are found throughout Europe and the Middle East. Western European Neanderthals usually have a more robust form, and are sometimes called "classic Neanderthals." Neanderthals found elsewhere tend to be less excessively robust. When the Devil and the evil angels created the Neanderthals, they also created in it a living life form with a very low intelligence and it is also certain that as with the dinosaurs, demons also at different times possessed the Neanderthals for the same purpose of not only fulfilling their sadistic pleasures but also to manifest the Neanderthal's evil nature in an even greater way.)

The fossils of quite a few different types of hominids have been found stretching back some seven million years which, with the creation of the dinosaurs dating back two hundred and fifty million years and the many other different types of creatures stretching back to before and after the times of the dinosaurs, shows the great patience of God as the outworking of the mystery of iniquity was carried out and manifested by the Devil and his evil angels in their strong evil desires to brazenly try and emulate to a very small degree God as Creator.

In implementing this part of "the plan of evil" (so as to shut the mind and eyes of man in a future restored earth to the Light of Creation and the Light of Conscience and energise into their minds instead, "The Theory of Evolution" that he would inspire and bring forth through his dupe Charles Robert Darwin), the Devil and the evil angels began by creating simple unsophisticated life forms and as time went by the creatures that they made became more sophisticated, when, until 200,000 years ago, the Hominids that they were creating appeared outwardly very similar to that of Adam and his seed, however, they were different genetically and were not indwelt by human souls, but by living beings also created by the Devil and the evil angels. During "The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos" God did not create any humans, mammals, insects, birds etc., i.e. God did **NOT** create any living beings or creatures at all, however, He did maintain the weather systems and the growth of the grasses, trees, forests etc. as He is not only the Great Creator but also the Upholder and Sustainer of all things. But during these ages, God permitted the Devil and the evil angels to misuse their great creative powers and energies for their own evil purposes. Job 38v25-27, Isaiah 25v7, Jer 4v27, John 1v1-3, Rom 1v18-32, Col 1v15-20, Heb 1v1-3,10-12.

The Devil's program for the misuse of his great energies and powers for the purpose of creating life forms of ever increasing sophistication is as follows:

600 million years ago: Simple animals: Ediacara biota etc.

570 million years ago: Arthropods: from Mod Latin "Arthropoda," literally, "those with jointed feet": rudimentary insects, arachnids and crustaceans.

550 million years ago: Cambrian explosion: Complex animals, including animals, phytoplankton, and calcimicrobes.

500 million years ago: Fish and proto-amphibians: Ostracoderms etc.

400 million years ago: Insects (from the Latin "insectum," a calque of the Greek "éntomon," "cut into sections").

360 million years ago: Amphibians (from "amphi" meaning "on both sides" and "bios" meaning "life"): coelacanth, lungfish etc.

300 million years ago: Reptiles: Hylonomus, Westlothiana, Paleothyris, Mesosaurus etc., including dinosaurs, which first appeared upon earth about two hundred and thirty million years ago.

200 million years ago: Mammals: Hadrocodium, Multituberculata, Teinolophos, Sinodelphys, Eomaia etc.

150 million years ago: Birds: Archaeopteryx, Jeholornis, Enantiornithes.

65 million years since the non-avian dinosaurs died out, which was brought about by an act of judgement by God upon the Devil's evil works, even as He brought upon the Rephaim. Isaiah 26v14.

2.5 million years since the appearance of the genus *Homo*.

200,000 years since hominids started looking more like the seed of Adam and not only were the hominids created by the Devil more sophisticated in their bodily form as time progressed, but also in their behaviour and social structures, so that around 40,000 years ago, with the appearance of the Cro-Magnon culture, tool kits started becoming markedly more sophisticated, using a wider variety of raw materials such as bone and antler, and containing new implements for making clothing, engraving and sculpting. Fine artwork, in the form of decorated tools, beads, ivory carvings of hominids and animals, clay figurines, musical instruments, and spectacular cave paintings appeared over the next 20,000 years.

We should remember that God's third name (as revealed in Exodus 34v5-7) is "Long-suffering" (Heb, "apayim `erek," from 'aph (OT:639), which means "nose or nostril" and 'arek (OT:750), which means "long" and so it means literally, "a long time before breathing hard through the nose or nostrils (in anger)." The Septuagint translates these two Hebrew words as "makrothumos" (NT:3116). It is wonderful to know that it is a **LONG, LONG** time before God blows hard through His nose at us in anger!

During "The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos" (that is, after the end of the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) Ice Age) there was at least another seven distinct times when the life forms upon the Earth created by the Devil and the evil angels experienced extinction, each of which was the direct result of God's judgement upon the evil works of the Devil. The first of these occurred during a minor ice age, the Andean-Saharan, which occurred from 460 to 430 million years ago, during the Late Ordovician and the Silurian period. The second occurred around 380 million years ago and the third was around 250 million years ago (the Karoo Ice Age lasted from around 350 to 250 million years ago). The fourth occurred 210 million years ago, when most of the early dinosaurs were wiped out. The fifth occurred around 65 million years ago, when **ALL** types of dinosaurs and many other creatures created by the Devil and the evil angels were completely removed from the earth. The sixth occurred around 34 million years ago and the seventh occurred at the end of the last glacial period when **ALL** the Hominids (*Homo neanderthalensis*, *Homo floresiensis* and *Homo sapiens sapiens* (modern) etc) and **ALL** the creatures made by the Devil and the evil angels were completely wiped out, so that absolutely no "creatures" created through the misuse of the Devil and the evil angel's great creative powers was left alive. As the last glacial period ended and the massive ice sheets melted the sea-levels rose by about one hundred and thirty metres. The heavens also experienced another time of darkness as recorded in Gen 1v2, "...The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep," during the Quaternary Ice Age. It should be noted that each one of these seven extinctions was as a direct result of God's judgement upon the evil works of the Devil and the evil angels; they did **NOT** just "happen" or occur randomly as many scientists postulate. The seven distinct times when life upon earth has become extinct that have been mentioned are looked upon as "major extinction events," however there has been quite a number of other times when lesser extinctions of life have occurred and these are classed as "lesser extinction events," in the sense that they are not "mass extinctions."

The Formation Of Fossil Fuels.

It was during "The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos" that the fossil fuels, coal and oil, were formed. During this time period there was also great movements of large landmasses, with these eventually splitting up to give the continents that the earth now has (Europe, Asia, Africa, North America, South America, Australia, and Antarctica).

Coal comes from the massive accumulation of dead land-based plant life, mainly trees. This organic matter was deposited in sedimentary basins on land (of continental origin), where the water was shallow. These basins were either close to the sea, often in the form of large lagoons, or inland, in the form of lakes or marshes. As a result of climatic variations, for example an increasingly heavy annual rainfall, it is thought that enormous forests sank below water, and their debris accumulated in sedimentary basins where it was rapidly covered by large quantities of mud and sand. This sudden and premature burial sheltered the debris from the air, thus preventing it from rotting quickly. In the maritime areas, a sudden subsiding of the basin resulted in an inflow of seawater, decimating the forest. After these catastrophic episodes, the forest grew again until a new disaster happened, and so on. This repetitive cycle of events explains why, in the substratum, layers of coal alternate with layers of clay or sandstone (compacted sand). Subsequently the sedimentary basin sinks gradually under the weight of the sediments and the layers of dead plant matter are slowly transformed under conditions of increasing temperature and pressure. The cellulose in the wood is first of all changed into humic acids (products of incomplete decomposition, which give the earth its brown colour), then into bitumens and finally into elementary carbon. The process is extremely long; the oldest coal has the highest carbon content (90 to 95%) The most favourable period for the creation of coal was the Carboniferous Period (carboniferous means "coal-bearing"), between 360 and 290 million years ago. However, smaller quantities of coal continued to be formed in certain regions during all the subsequent epochs; the Permian Period (290 to 250 million years ago), and the Secondary Period (Mesozoic Era, 250 to 65 million years ago). The vegetal masses buried in the Tertiary Period (Cenozoic Era), less than 65 million years ago, are generally less developed; they are often lignite deposits which still contain a lot of volatile matter (bitumens and residual lignite), but whose carbon content is lower. Coals of excellent quality can be found dating from the Tertiary Period, brought into early maturity by the heating effects of colliding tectonic plates; Palaeocene coal (65 to 55 million years ago) from Colombia and Venezuela, or Miocene coal (20 million years ago) from Indonesia. Finally, recent deposits (from 10,000 years ago until the present time) are very rich in fibrous debris. These consist of peat and they do not contain any elementary carbon: they were not sufficiently buried for

that. Peat is found in peat marshes, boggy ground where it was plant matter such as mosses (sphagnum or peat moss) and grasses rather than the tree remains of forests that formed the deposits.

Oil forms from the remains of plants and animals that lived in the ocean between 10 to 160 million years ago. When organisms died and sank to the bottom, they were covered in mud, sand, and other mineral deposits. This rapid burial prevented immediate decay, which would normally occur if organisms remained exposed on the sea floor. The lack of oxygen in the sedimentary layers caused organisms to slowly decay into carbon-rich compounds. These compounds mixed with surrounding sediments and formed source rock, which is a type of fine-grained shale. As more layers were deposited on top of one another, pressure and heat acting on the source rock compressed the organic material into crude oil. As time passes, oil travels into rocks that have larger spaces, or pores, to hold it. Limestone and sandstone are two types of rocks with large pores, and they are called porous rocks. The rocks that oil accumulates within are reservoir rock and oil remains within these reservoirs due to rock structures called caps or traps. Cap or trap rock can hold oil within the ground because these rocks are impermeable, which means they lack pores through which oil can travel.

Viruses And Bacteria.

Viruses.

Scientists are unclear how long viruses have been around nor can they give any indication (scientifically) of their origin because they do not form fossils. However, it is extremely evident that the only thing that a virus is designed and created for is to infect a host cell for the purpose of its destruction. Their origin is most certainly from the Devil and the evil angels, who being filled with a murderous hatred of God and man only want to hurt, harm and destroy mankind and God's creation. Viruses have certainly been around for many hundreds of millions of years, for the Devil and the evil angels were creating them by the misuse of their great creative powers and energies long before they were cast out of Heaven. Isaiah 14v12-14, John 10v10.

A virus is a small infectious agent that can replicate only inside the living cells of organisms. Most viruses are too small to be seen directly with a light microscope. Viruses infect all types of organisms, from animals and plants to bacteria and archaea. Since the initial discovery of tobacco mosaic virus by Martinus Beijerinck in 1898, about 5,000 viruses have been described in detail, although there are millions of different types. Viruses are found in almost every ecosystem on Earth and are the most abundant type of biological entity. The study of viruses is known as virology, a sub-speciality of microbiology.

Virus particles (known as a virion) consist of two or three parts: genes made from either DNA or RNA, long molecules that carry genetic information; a protein coat that protects these genes; and in some cases an envelope of lipids that surrounds the protein coat when they are outside a cell. The shapes of viruses range from simple helical and icosahedral forms to more complex structures. The average virus is about one one-hundredth the size of the average bacterium.

Scientists are unclear as to the origin of viruses, however, because of their malignant behaviour, they can have no other source than that of the Devil and the evil angels, who greatly delight in the misuse of their great creative powers and energies for the purpose of causing all types of horrific suffering to mankind, whom they hate with all their beings. John 8v44.

Viruses spread in many ways; plant viruses are often transmitted from plant to plant by insects that feed on sap, such as aphids, while animal viruses can be carried by blood-sucking insects. These disease-bearing organisms are known as vectors. Influenza viruses are spread by coughing and sneezing. The norovirus and rotavirus, common causes of viral gastroenteritis, are transmitted by the faecal-oral route and are passed from person to person by contact, entering the body in food or water. HIV is one of several viruses transmitted through sexual contact and by exposure to infected blood. Viruses can infect only a limited range of host cells called the "host range." This can be broad as when a virus is capable of infecting many species or narrow.

Viral infections in animals provoke an immune response that usually eliminates the infecting virus. Immune responses can also be produced by vaccines, which confer an artificially acquired immunity to the specific viral infection. However, some viruses including those causing HIV and viral hepatitis evade these immune responses and result in chronic infections. Antibiotics have no effect on viruses, but several antiviral drugs have been developed. We can certainly see, through the possession and response of the immune system, of God's wonderful foreknowledge and provision when he created the bodies of man and animals; He knew that Adam would go into sin and that He would be forced to remove man's access to the Tree of Life, which would have kept his body in perfect health. Life for man and animals on earth would be impossible without their respective immune systems, which is responsible for many major processes for the wellbeing of every type of living body.

The Influenza Pandemic of 1918.

One such incidence of a virus (Influenza) causing millions of deaths worldwide and tremendous suffering was the Influenza Pandemic of 1918. An influenza pandemic is an epidemic of an influenza virus that spreads on a worldwide scale and infects a large proportion of the human population.

The 1918 flu pandemic (the Spanish Flu) was an influenza pandemic that spread widely across the world. Historical and epidemiological data are inadequate to identify the geographic origin. Most victims were healthy young adults, in contrast to most influenza outbreaks which predominantly affect juvenile, elderly, or weakened patients. The flu pandemic was implicated in the outbreak of encephalitis lethargica in the 1920s.

The pandemic lasted from March 1918 to June 1920, spreading even to the Arctic and remote Pacific islands. Between 50 and 100 million died, making it the deadliest natural disaster in human history. An estimated 50 million people, about 3% of the world's population (1.6 billion at the time), died of the disease. 500 million, or 1/3 were infected.

Tissue samples from frozen victims were used to reproduce the virus for study. Among the conclusions of this research is that the virus kills via a cytokine storm (overreaction of the body's immune system) which perhaps explains its unusually severe nature and the concentrated age profile of its victims. The strong immune systems of young adults ravaged the body, whereas the weaker immune systems of children and middle-aged adults resulted in fewer deaths.

Origins of name: Although the first cases were registered in the continental U.S. and the rest of Europe long before getting to Spain, the 1918 pandemic received its nickname "Spanish flu" because Spain, a neutral country in WWI, had no censorship of news regarding the disease and its consequences. Spanish King Alfonso XIII became gravely ill and was the highest-profile patient about whom there was coverage, hence the widest and most reliable news coverage came from Spain, thus giving the false impression that Spain was most affected.

History: While World War I did not cause the flu, the close troop quarters and massive troop movements hastened the pandemic and probably increased transmission, augmented mutation and may have increased the lethality of the virus. Some speculate that the soldiers' immune systems were weakened by malnourishment as well as the stresses of combat and chemical attacks, increasing their susceptibility. Andrew Price-Smith has made the controversial argument that the virus helped tip the balance of power in the latter days of the war towards the Allied cause. He provides data that the viral waves hit the Central Powers before they hit the Allied powers, and that both morbidity and mortality in Germany and Austria were considerably higher than in Britain and France.

A large factor of worldwide flu occurrence was increased travel. Modern transportation systems made it easier for soldiers, sailors, and civilian travelers to spread the disease.

Source: Some theorized that the flu originated in the Far East. Dr. C. Hannoun, leading expert of the 1918 flu for the Institute Pasteur, asserted that the former virus was likely to have come from China, mutated in the United States near Boston, and spread to Brest, France, Europe's battlefields, Europe, and the world using Allied soldiers and sailors as main spreaders. Hannoun considered several other theories of origin, such as Spain, Kansas, and Brest, as being possible but not likely.

Historian Alfred W. Crosby speculated that the flu originated in Kansas. Political scientist Andrew Price-Smith published data from the Austrian archives suggesting that the influenza had earlier origins, beginning in Austria in the spring of 1917. Popular writer John Barry echoed Crosby in describing Haskell County, Kansas as the likely point of origin. In the United States the disease was first observed at Fort Riley, Kansas, on March 4th, 1918, and Queens, New York, on March 11th, 1918. In August 1918, a more virulent strain appeared simultaneously in Brest, France, in Freetown, Sierra Leone, and in the U.S. at Boston, Massachusetts. The Allies of World War I came to call it the Spanish flu, primarily because the pandemic received greater press attention after it moved from France to Spain in November 1918. Spain was not involved in the war and had not imposed wartime censorship.

Investigative work by a British team, led by virologist John Oxford of St Bartholomew's Hospital and the Royal London Hospital, has suggested that a principal British troop staging camp in Étaples, France was at the center of the 1918 flu pandemic or was the location of a significant precursor virus.

Mortality: The global mortality rate from the 1918/1919 pandemic is not known, but it is estimated that 10% to 20% of those who were infected died. With about a third of the world population infected, this case-fatality ratio means that 3% to 6% of the entire global population died. Influenza may have killed as many as 25 million in its first 25 weeks. Older estimates say it killed 40–50 million people while current estimates say 50 to 100 million people worldwide were killed. This pandemic has been described as "the greatest medical holocaust in history" and may have killed more people than the Black Death.

As many as 17 million died in India, about 5% of the population. In Japan, 23 million people were affected, and 390,000 died. In the U.S., about 28% of the population suffered, and 500,000 to 675,000 died. In Britain as many as 250,000 died; in France more than 400,000. In Canada 50,000 died. Entire villages perished in Alaska and southern Africa. Tafari Makonnen (the future Haile Selassie) was one of the first Ethiopians who contracted influenza but survived, although many of his subjects did not; estimates for the fatalities in the capital city, Addis Ababa, range from 5,000 to 10,000, or higher, while in British Somaliland one official there estimated that 7% of the native population died. In Dutch East Indies (now Indonesia), 1.5 million assumed died from 30 million inhabitants. In Australia an estimated 12,000 people died and in the Fiji Islands, 14% of the population died during only two weeks, and in Western Samoa 22%.

This huge death toll was caused by an extremely high infection rate of up to 50% and the extreme severity of the symptoms, suspected to be caused by cytokine storms. Symptoms in 1918 were so unusual that initially influenza was misdiagnosed as dengue, cholera, or typhoid. One observer wrote, "One of the most striking of the complications was hemorrhage from mucous membranes, especially from the nose, stomach, and intestine. Bleeding from the ears and petechial haemorrhages in the skin also occurred." The majority of deaths were from bacterial pneumonia, a secondary infection caused by influenza, but the virus also killed people directly, causing massive haemorrhages and oedema in the lung.

The unusually severe disease killed between 2 and 20% of those infected, as opposed to the usual flu epidemic mortality rate of 0.1%. Another unusual feature of this pandemic was that it mostly killed young adults, with 99% of pandemic influenza deaths occurring in people under 65, and more than half in young adults 20 to 40 years old. This is unusual since influenza is normally most deadly to the very young (under age 2) and the very old (over age 70), and may have been due to partial protection caused by exposure to a previous Russian flu pandemic of 1889.

Patterns of fatality: Typical influenzas kill weak individuals, such as infants (aged 0–2 years), the elderly, and the immunocompromised. Older adults may have had some immunity from the earlier Russian flu pandemic of 1889. Another oddity was that the outbreak was widespread in the summer and autumn (in the Northern Hemisphere); influenza is usually worse in winter.

In fast-progressing cases, mortality was primarily from pneumonia, by virus-induced pulmonary consolidation. Slower-progressing cases featured secondary bacterial pneumonias, and there may have been neural involvement that led to mental disorders in some cases. Some deaths resulted from malnourishment and even animal attacks in overwhelmed communities.

Deadly second wave: The second wave of the 1918 pandemic was much deadlier than the first. The first wave had resembled typical flu epidemics; those most at risk were the sick and elderly, while younger, healthier people recovered easily. But in August, when the second wave began in France, Sierra Leone and the United States, the virus had mutated to a much deadlier form. This has been attributed to the circumstances of the First World War. In civilian life developmental pressures favour a mild strain: those who get really sick stay home, and those mildly ill continue with their lives, go to work and go shopping, preferentially spreading the mild strain. In the trenches the developmental pressures were reversed: soldiers with a mild strain remained where they were, while the severely ill were sent on crowded trains to crowded field hospitals, spreading the deadlier virus. So the second wave began and the flu quickly spread around the world again. It was the same flu, in that most of those who recovered from first-wave infections were immune, but it was now far more deadly, and the most vulnerable people were those who were like the soldiers in the trenches: young, otherwise healthy adults. Consequently, during modern pandemics, health officials pay attention when the virus reaches places with social upheaval, looking for deadlier strains of the virus.

Devastated communities: Even in areas where mortality was low, so many were incapacitated that much of everyday life was hampered. Some communities closed all stores or required customers to leave orders outside. There were reports that the health-care workers could not tend the sick nor the gravediggers bury the dead because they too were ill. Mass graves were dug by steam shovel and bodies buried without coffins in many places. Several Pacific island territories were particularly hard-hit. The pandemic reached them from New Zealand, which was too slow to implement measures to prevent ships carrying the flu from leaving its ports. From New Zealand the flu reached Tonga (killing 8% of the population), Nauru (16%) and Fiji (5%, 9,000 people). Worst affected was Western Samoa, a territory then under New Zealand military administration. A crippling 90% of the population was infected; 30% of adult men, 22% of adult women and 10% of children were killed. By contrast, the flu was kept away from American Samoa when Governor John Martin Poyer imposed a blockade. In New Zealand itself 8,573 deaths were attributed to the 1918 pandemic influenza, resulting in a total population fatality rate of 7.4 per thousand (0.74%).

Less affected areas: In Japan, 257,363 deaths were attributed to influenza by July 1919, giving an estimated 0.425% mortality rate, much lower than nearly all other Asian countries for which data are available. The Japanese government severely restricted maritime travel to and from the home islands when the pandemic struck.

In the Pacific, American Samoa and the French colony of New Caledonia also succeeded in preventing even a single death from influenza through effective quarantines. In Australia, nearly 12,000 perished.

End of the pandemic: After the lethal second wave struck in the autumn of 1918, new cases dropped abruptly; almost to nothing after the peak in the second wave. In Philadelphia for example, 4,597 people died in the week ending October 16th, but by November 11th influenza had almost disappeared from the city. One explanation for the rapid decline of the lethality of the disease is that doctors simply got better at preventing and treating the pneumonia which developed after the victims had contracted the virus, although John Barry states in his book that researchers have found no evidence to support this. Another theory holds that the 1918 virus mutated extremely rapidly to a less lethal strain. This is a common occurrence with influenza viruses: there is a tendency for pathogenic viruses to become less lethal with time, providing more living hosts.

In World War I, just over fifteen million people died, however, from the above account of the Influenza Pandemic of 1918 we can see that the great suffering caused by it was far more horrendous than that caused by The Great War. Very many soldiers who had survived WWI died from it, not only in the camps in France, but elsewhere, and because it was the 20-40 year old group of the world population that was most severely hit, it devastated the work force of just about every country in the world. Through the flu virus, the Devil managed to kill at least three times more people than the four years of World War I had done, which he also was responsible for initiating the start of, for it is the Devil and the powers of darkness who are the real world rulers. So, in just under six years the Devil managed to kill at least sixty five million persons worldwide (with a great possibility that the actual figure was over one hundred million), through the Influenza Pandemic of 1918 and World War I. Dan 10v10-21, John 8v44, 10v10, Eph 6v12.

Acquired Immunodeficiency Syndrome (AIDS).

Acquired Immunodeficiency Syndrome (AIDS) is a disease of the human immune system caused by the Human Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV). This condition progressively reduces the effectiveness of the immune system and leaves individuals susceptible to opportunistic infections and tumours. HIV is transmitted through direct contact of a mucous membrane or the bloodstream with a bodily fluid containing HIV, such as blood, semen, vaginal fluid, preseminal fluid, and breast milk.

This transmission can involve anal, vaginal or oral sex, blood transfusion, contaminated hypodermic needles, exchange between mother and baby during pregnancy, childbirth, breastfeeding or other exposure to one of the above bodily fluids.

AIDS is now a pandemic. In 2007, it was estimated that 33.2 million people lived with the disease worldwide, and that AIDS killed an estimated 2.1 million people, including 330,000 children. Over three-quarters of these deaths occurred in sub-Saharan Africa.

Genetic research indicates that HIV originated in west-central Africa during the late nineteenth or early twentieth century; although there can be no doubt that it has been around much longer (probably in different mutations) than just over a hundred years, for where there is gross immorality (as in Sodom and Gomorrah), HIV will surely be found. AIDS was first recognized by the U.S. Centers for Disease Control and Prevention in 1981 and its cause, HIV, identified in the early 1980s.

Although treatments for AIDS and HIV can slow the course of the disease, there is currently no vaccine or cure. Antiretroviral treatment reduces both the mortality and the morbidity of HIV infection, but these drugs are expensive and routine access to antiretroviral medication is not available in all countries. Due to the difficulty in treating HIV infection, preventing infection is a key aim in controlling the AIDS pandemic.

History: AIDS was first reported June 5th, 1981, when the U.S. Centers for Disease Control (CDC) recorded a cluster of Pneumocystis Carinii Pneumonia (now still classified as PCP but known to be caused by Pneumocystis Jirovecii) in five homosexual men in Los Angeles. In the beginning, the CDC did not have an official name for the disease, often referring to it by way of the diseases that were associated with it, for example, lymphadenopathy, the disease after which the discoverers of HIV originally named the virus. They also used Kaposi's Sarcoma and Opportunistic Infections, the name by which a task force had been set up in 1981.

In the general press, the term GRID, which stood for "Gay-Related Immune Deficiency," had been coined. The CDC, in search of a name, and looking at the infected communities coined "The 4H Disease," as it seemed to single out Haitians, homosexuals, haemophiliacs, and heroin users. However, after determining that AIDS was not isolated to the homosexual community, the term GRID became misleading and AIDS was introduced at a meeting in July 1982. By September 1982 the CDC started using the name AIDS, and properly defined the illness.

A more controversial theory known as the "OPV AIDS Hypothesis" suggests that the AIDS epidemic was inadvertently started in the late 1950s in the Belgian Congo by Hilary Koprowski's research into a poliomyelitis vaccine. According to scientific consensus, this scenario is not supported by the available evidence.

A recent study states that HIV probably moved from Africa to Haiti and then entered the United States around 1969.

Cause: AIDS is the most severe acceleration of infection with HIV. HIV is a retrovirus that primarily infects vital organs of the human immune system such as CD4+ T cells (a subset of T cells), macrophages and dendritic cells. It directly and indirectly destroys CD4+ T cells.

Once HIV has killed so many CD4+ T cells that there are fewer than 200 of these cells per microliter (μL) of blood, cellular immunity is lost. Acute HIV infection progresses over time to clinical latent HIV infection and then to early symptomatic HIV infection and later to AIDS, which is identified either on the basis of the amount of CD4+ T cells remaining in the blood, and/or the presence of certain infections.

In the absence of antiretroviral therapy, the median time of progression from HIV infection to AIDS is nine to ten years, and the median survival time after developing AIDS is only 9.2 months. However, the rate of clinical disease progression varies widely between individuals, from two weeks up to 20 years.

Many factors affect the rate of progression. These include factors that influence the body's ability to defend against HIV such as the infected person's general immune function. Older people have weaker immune systems, and therefore have a greater risk of rapid disease progression than younger people.

Poor access to health care and the existence of coexisting infections such as Tuberculosis also may predispose people to faster disease progression. The infected person's genetic inheritance plays an important role and some people are resistant to certain strains of HIV. An example of this is people with the homozygous CCR5- $\Delta 32$ variation are resistant to infection with certain strains of HIV. HIV is genetically variable and exists as different strains, which cause different rates of clinical disease progression.

Symptoms: The symptoms of AIDS are primarily the result of conditions that do not normally develop in individuals with healthy immune systems. Most of these conditions are infections caused by bacteria, viruses, fungi and parasites that are normally controlled by the elements of the immune system that HIV damages.

Opportunistic infections are common in people with AIDS. These infections affect nearly every organ system.

People with AIDS also have an increased risk of developing various cancers such as Kaposi's sarcoma, Cervical cancer and cancers of the immune system known as Lymphomas. Additionally, people with AIDS often have systemic symptoms of infection like fevers, sweats (particularly at night), swollen glands, chills, weakness, and weight loss. The specific opportunistic infections that AIDS patients develop depend in part on the prevalence of these infections in the geographic area in which the patient lives.

Misconceptions: A number of misconceptions have arisen surrounding HIV/AIDS. Three of the most common are that AIDS can spread through casual contact, that sexual intercourse with a virgin will cure AIDS, and that HIV can infect only homosexual men and drug users.

Pathophysiology: The pathophysiology of AIDS is complex, as is the case with all syndromes. Ultimately, HIV causes AIDS by depleting CD4+ T helper lymphocytes. This weakens the immune system and allows opportunistic infections. T lymphocytes are essential to the immune response and without them, the body cannot fight infections or kill cancerous cells. The mechanism of CD4+ T cell depletion differs in the acute and chronic phases.

During the acute phase, HIV-induced cell lysis and killing of infected cells by cytotoxic T cells accounts for CD4+ T cell depletion, although apoptosis may also be a factor. During the chronic phase, the consequences of generalized immune activation coupled with the gradual loss of the ability of the immune system to generate new T cells appear to account for the slow decline in CD4+ T cell numbers.

Although the symptoms of immune deficiency characteristic of AIDS do not appear for years after a person is infected, the bulk of CD4+ T cell loss occurs during the first weeks of infection, especially in the intestinal mucosa, which harbours the majority of the lymphocytes found in the body. The reason for the preferential loss of mucosal CD4+ T cells is that a majority of mucosal CD4+ T cells express the CCR5 co receptor, whereas a small fraction of CD4+ T cells in the bloodstream do so.

HIV seeks out and destroys CCR5 expressing CD4+ cells during acute infection. A vigorous immune response eventually controls the infection and initiates the clinically latent phase. However, CD4+ T cells in mucosal tissues remain depleted throughout the infection, although enough remain to initially ward off life-threatening infections.

Continuous HIV replication results in a state of generalized immune activation persisting throughout the chronic phase. Immune activation, which is reflected by the increased activation state of immune cells and release of proinflammatory cytokines, results from the activity of several HIV gene products and the immune response to ongoing HIV replication. Another cause is the breakdown of the immune surveillance system of the mucosal barrier caused by the depletion of mucosal CD4+ T cells during the acute phase of disease.

This results in the systemic exposure of the immune system to microbial components of the gut's normal flora, which in a healthy person is kept in check by the mucosal immune system. The activation and proliferation of T cells that results from immune activation provides fresh targets for HIV infection. However, direct killing by HIV alone cannot account for the observed depletion of CD4+ T cells since only 0.01–0.10% of CD4+ T cells in the blood are infected.

A major cause of CD4+ T cell loss appears to result from their heightened susceptibility to apoptosis when the immune system remains activated. Although new T cells are continuously produced by the thymus to replace the ones lost, the regenerative capacity of the thymus is slowly destroyed by direct infection of its thymocytes by HIV. Eventually, the minimal number of CD4+ T cells necessary to maintain a sufficient immune response is lost, leading to AIDS.

Treatment: There is currently no publicly available vaccine for HIV or cure for HIV or AIDS. Current treatment for HIV infection consists of Highly Active Antiretroviral Therapy, or HAART. This has been highly beneficial to many HIV-infected individuals since its introduction in 1996 when the protease inhibitor-based HAART initially became available. Current optimal HAART options consist of combinations (or "cocktails") consisting of at least three drugs belonging to at least two types, or "classes," of antiretroviral agents. In the US, approximately 60% of HIV patients use various forms of Complementary or Alternative Medicine (CAM). Despite the widespread use of CAM by people living with HIV/AIDS, the effectiveness of these therapies has not been established. A 2005 Cochrane review of existing high-quality scientific evidence concluded: "There is insufficient evidence to support the use of herbal medicines in HIV-infected individuals and AIDS patients." Acupuncture has only been proposed for symptomatic relief, but not to treat or cure HIV or AIDS. There are also recorded incidences when persons have been healed by the Lord Jesus, through the operation of the supernatural gifts of the Holy Spirit. ("Gifts of Healings," 1Cor 12v7-11).

Prognosis: Without treatment, the net median survival time after infection with HIV is estimated to be 9 to 11 years, depending on the HIV subtype, and the median survival rate after diagnosis of AIDS in resource-limited settings where treatment is not available ranges between 6 and 19 months. In areas where it is widely available, the development of HAART as effective therapy for HIV infection and AIDS reduced the death rate from this disease by 80%, and raised the life expectancy for a newly diagnosed HIV-infected person to about 20 years.

As new treatments continue to be developed and because HIV continues to develop resistance to treatments, estimates of survival time are likely to continue to change. Without antiretroviral therapy, death normally occurs within a year. Most patients die from opportunistic infections or malignancies associated with the progressive failure of the immune system. The rate of clinical disease progression varies widely between individuals and has been shown to be affected by many factors such as host susceptibility and immune function, health care and co-infections, as well as which particular strain of the virus is involved.

Even with antiretroviral treatment, over the long term HIV-infected patients may experience neurocognitive disorders, osteoporosis, neuropathy, cancers, nephropathy, and cardiovascular disease. It is not always clear whether these conditions result from the infection, related complications, or are side effects of treatment. The largest cause of AIDS morbidity today, globally, is Tuberculosis co-infection. In Africa, HIV is the single most important factor contributing to the increase in the incidence of TB since 1990.

Bacteria.

Bacteria (singular: bacterium) are a large group of unicellular, prokaryote microorganisms. Typically a few micrometres in length, bacteria have a wide range of shapes, ranging from spheres to rods and spirals. Bacteria are ubiquitous in every habitat on Earth, growing in soil, acidic hot springs, radioactive waste, water, and deep in the Earth's crust, as well as in organic matter and the live bodies of plants and animals. There are typically 40 million bacterial cells in a gram of soil and a million bacterial cells in a millilitre of fresh water; in all, there are approximately five nonillion (5×10^{30}) bacteria on Earth, forming much of the world's biomass. Bacteria are vital in recycling nutrients, with many steps in nutrient cycles depending on these organisms, such as the fixation of nitrogen from the atmosphere and putrefaction. However, most bacteria have not been characterized, and only about half of the phyla of bacteria have species that can be grown in the laboratory. The study of bacteria is known as bacteriology, a branch of microbiology.

There are approximately ten times as many bacterial cells in the human flora of bacteria as there are human cells in the body, with large numbers of bacteria on the skin and as gut flora. (The human flora is the assemblage of microorganisms

that reside on the surface and in deep layers of skin, in the saliva and oral mucosa, and in the gastrointestinal tracts. They include bacteria, fungi, and archaea. Some of these organisms are known to perform tasks that are useful for the human host, however the majority have no known beneficial or harmful effect. Those that are expected to be present, and that under normal circumstances do not cause disease, but instead participate in maintaining health, are deemed members of the normal flora, or micro biota.) The vast majority of the bacteria in the body are rendered harmless by the protective effects of the immune system, and a few are beneficial (this is referred to as "symbiosis"). However, a few species of bacteria are pathogenic and cause infectious diseases, including cholera, syphilis, anthrax, leprosy and bubonic plague. The most common fatal bacterial diseases are respiratory infections, with Tuberculosis alone killing about 2 million people a year, mostly in sub-Saharan Africa. In developed countries, antibiotics are used to treat bacterial infections and in agriculture, so antibiotic resistance is becoming common. In industry, bacteria are important in sewage treatment, the production of cheese and yoghurt through fermentation, as well as in biotechnology, and the manufacture of antibiotics and other chemicals.

Once regarded as plants constituting the class Schizomycetes, bacteria are now classified as prokaryotes. Unlike cells of animals and other eukaryotes, bacterial cells do not contain a nucleus and rarely harbour membrane-bound organelles. Although the term bacteria traditionally included all prokaryotes, the scientific classification changed after the discovery in the 1990s that prokaryotes consist of two very different groups of organisms that share an ancient common ancestor, these domains are called Bacteria and Archaea.

One particular group of bacteria, the cyanobacteria or "blue-green algae," have left a fossil record that extends far back into the Precambrian; the oldest cyanobacteria-like fossils known are nearly 3.5 billion years old, among the oldest fossils currently known.

History of bacteriology: Bacteria were first observed by Antonie van Leeuwenhoek in 1676, using a single-lens microscope of his own design. He called them "animalcules" and published his observations in a series of letters to the Royal Society. The name bacterium was introduced much later, by Christian Gottfried Ehrenberg in 1838.

Louis Pasteur demonstrated in 1859 that the fermentation process is caused by the growth of microorganisms, and that this growth is not due to spontaneous generation. (Yeasts and moulds, commonly associated with fermentation, are not bacteria, but rather fungi.) Along with his contemporary, Robert Koch, Pasteur was an early advocate of the germ theory of disease. Robert Koch was a pioneer in medical microbiology and worked on Cholera, Anthrax and Tuberculosis. In his research into Tuberculosis, Koch finally proved the germ theory, for which he was awarded a Nobel Prize in 1905. In Koch's postulates, he set out criteria to test if an organism is the cause of a disease, and these postulates are still used today.

Though it was known in the nineteenth century that bacteria are the cause of many diseases, no effective antibacterial treatments were available. In 1910, Paul Ehrlich developed the first antibiotic, by changing dyes that selectively stained *Treponema palladium*, the spirochaete that causes syphilis, into compounds that selectively killed the pathogen. Ehrlich had been awarded a 1908 Nobel Prize for his work on immunology, and pioneered the use of stains to detect and identify bacteria, with his work being the basis of the Gram stain and the Ziehl-Neelsen stain.

A major step forward in the study of bacteria was the recognition in 1977 by Carl Woese that archaea have a separate line from bacteria. This new phylogenetic taxonomy was based on the sequencing of 16S ribosomal RNA, and divided prokaryotes into two domains, as part of the three-domain system.

However, it is without a doubt that, like viruses, pathogenic bacteria (bacteria that cause infectious diseases) have their creation and origin from the Devil and the powers of darkness, for such bacteria are responsible for causing such horrific diseases as Tuberculosis and Bubonic Plague and we know that it is the Devil who is come to steal, kill and destroy and who gets such great delight and sadistic pleasure in causing mankind every sort of unimaginable suffering due to his great hatred of him. John 8v44, 10v10.

The following genera contain the most important human pathogenic bacteria species, the genus is listed first and the species is (bracketed), they are as follows:

Bordetella (*Bordetella pertussis*), *Borrelia* (*Borrelia burgdorferi*), *Brucella* (*Brucella abortus*, *Brucella canis*, *Brucella melitensis*, *Brucella suis*), *Campylobacter* (*Campylobacter jejuni*), *Chlamydia* (*Chlamydia pneumoniae*, *Chlamydia psittaci*, *Chlamydia trachomatis*), *Clostridium* (*Clostridium botulinum*, *Clostridium difficile*, *Clostridium perfringens*, *Clostridium tetani*), *Corynebacterium* (*Corynebacterium diphtheriae*), *Enterococcus* (*Enterococcus faecalis*, *Enterococcus faecium*), *Escherichia* (*Escherichia coli*), *Francisella* (*Francisella tularensis*), *Haemophilus* (*Haemophilus influenzae*), *Helicobacter* (*Helicobacter pylori*), *Legionella* (*Legionella pneumophila*), *Leptospira* (*Leptospira interrogans*), *Listeria* (*Listeria monocytogenes*), *Mycobacterium* (*Mycobacterium leprae*, *Mycobacterium tuberculosis*), *Mycoplasma* (*Mycoplasma pneumoniae*), *Neisseria* (*Neisseria gonorrhoeae*,

Neisseria meningitidis), *Pseudomonas* (*Pseudomonas aeruginosa*), *Rickettsia* (*Rickettsia rickettsii*), *Salmonella* (*Salmonella typhi*, *Salmonella typhimurium*), *Shigella* (*Shigella sonnei*), *Staphylococcus* (*Staphylococcus aureus*, *Staphylococcus epidermidis*, *Staphylococcus saprophyticus*), *Streptococcus* (*Streptococcus agalactiae*, *Streptococcus pneumoniae*, *Streptococcus pyogenes*), *Treponema* (*Treponema pallidum*), *Vibrio* (*Vibrio cholerae*), *Yersinia* (*Yersinia pestis*).

Treatment: Bacterial infections may be treated with antibiotics, which are classified as bactericidal if they kill bacteria, or bacteriostatic if they just prevent bacterial growth. There are many types of antibiotics and each class inhibits a process that is different in the pathogen from that found in the host. For example, the antibiotics Chloramphenicol and Tetracycline inhibit the bacterial ribosome, but not the structurally-different eukaryotic ribosome, and so exhibit selective toxicity. Antibiotics are used both in treating human disease and in intensive farming to promote animal growth. Both uses may be contributing to the rapid development of antibiotic resistance in bacterial populations. Infections can be prevented by antiseptic measures such as sterilizing the skin prior to piercing it with the needle of a syringe, and by proper care of indwelling catheters. Surgical and dental instruments are also sterilized to prevent infection by bacteria. Disinfectants such as bleach are used to kill bacteria or other pathogens on surfaces to prevent contamination and further reduce the risk of infection. Most bacteria in food are killed by cooking to temperatures above 73 °C (163°F).

Tuberculosis.

Tuberculosis or TB (short for tubercles bacillus) is a common and often deadly infectious disease caused by various strains of mycobacteria, usually *Mycobacterium Tuberculosis* in humans. Tuberculosis usually attacks the lungs but can also affect other parts of the body. It is spread through the air, when people who have the disease cough, sneeze, or spit. Most infections in humans result in an asymptomatic, latent infection, and about one in ten latent infections eventually progresses to active disease, which, if left untreated, kills more than 50% of its victims.

The classic symptoms are a chronic cough with blood-tinged sputum, fever, night sweats, and weight loss. Infection of other organs causes a wide range of symptoms. Diagnosis relies on radiology (commonly chest X-rays), a tuberculin skin test, blood tests, as well as microscopic examination and microbiological culture of bodily fluids. Treatment is difficult and requires long courses of multiple antibiotics. Contacts are also screened and treated if necessary. Antibiotic resistance is a growing problem in (extensively) multi-drug-resistant Tuberculosis. Prevention relies on screening programs and vaccination, usually with *Bacillus Calmette-Guérin* vaccine.

A third of the world's population are thought to be infected with M. Tuberculosis, and new infections occur at a rate of about one per second. The proportion of people who become sick with Tuberculosis each year is stable or falling worldwide but, because of population growth, the absolute number of new cases is still increasing. In 2007 there were an estimated 13.7 million chronic active cases, 9.3 million new cases, and 1.8 million deaths, mostly in developing countries. In addition, more people in the developed world are contracting Tuberculosis because their immune systems are compromised by immunosuppressive drugs, substance abuse, or AIDS. The distribution of Tuberculosis is not uniform across the globe; about 80% of the population in many Asian and African countries test positive in tuberculin tests, while only 5-10% of the US population test positive.

History: Tuberculosis has been present in humans since antiquity. The earliest unambiguous detection of *Mycobacterium Tuberculosis* was found in the remains of bison dated 18,000 years ago and tubercular decay has been found in the spines of mummies from 3000–2400 BC. Phthisis is a Greek term for Tuberculosis; around 460 BC, Hippocrates identified Phthisis as the most widespread disease of the times involving coughing up blood and fever, which was almost always fatal. In South America, the earliest evidence of Tuberculosis is associated with the Paracas-Caverna culture (circa 750 BC to circa 100 AD).

Other names: In the past, Tuberculosis has been called Consumption, because it seemed to consume people from within, with a bloody cough, fever, pallor, and long relentless wasting. Other names included Phthisis (Greek for Consumption) and Phthisis Pulmonalis; Scrofula (in adults), affecting the lymphatic system and resulting in swollen neck glands; *Tabes Mesenterica*, TB of the abdomen and *Lupus Vulgaris*, TB of the skin; wasting disease; white plague, because sufferers appear markedly pale; king's evil, because it was believed that a king's touch would heal scrofula; and Pott's disease, or Gibbus of the spine and joints. Miliary Tuberculosis—now commonly known as Disseminated TB, occurs when the infection invades the circulatory system, resulting in millet-like seeding of TB bacilli in the lungs as seen on an X-ray. TB is also called Koch's disease, after the scientist Robert Koch.

Folklore: Before the Industrial Revolution, Tuberculosis may sometimes have been regarded as vampirism. When one member of a family died from it, the other members that were infected would lose their health slowly. People believed that this was caused by the original victim draining the life from the other family members. Furthermore, people who had TB exhibited symptoms similar to what people considered to be vampire traits. People with TB often have symptoms such as red, swollen eyes (which also creates a sensitivity to bright light), pale skin, extremely low body heat, a weak heart and coughing blood, suggesting the idea that the only way for the afflicted to replenish this loss of blood was by sucking blood.

Another folk belief told that the affected individual was being forced, nightly, to attend fairy revels, so that the victim wasted away owing to lack of rest; this belief was most common when a strong connection was seen between the fairies and the dead. Similarly, but less commonly, it was attributed to the victims being "hag ridden," being transformed into horses by witches (hags) to travel to their nightly meetings, again resulting in a lack of rest.

TB was romanticized in the nineteenth century. Many people believed TB produced feelings of euphoria referred to as *Spes Phthisica* ("Hope of the Consumptive"). It was believed that TB sufferers who were artists had bursts of creativity as the disease progressed. It was also believed that TB sufferers acquired a final burst of energy just before they died that made women more beautiful and men more creative.

Study and treatment: The study of Tuberculosis, sometimes known as Phthisiatry, dates back to The Canon of Medicine written by Ibn Sina (Avicenna) in the 1020s. He was the first physician to identify Pulmonary Tuberculosis as a contagious disease, the first to recognise the association with Diabetes, and the first to suggest that it could spread through contact with soil and water. He developed the method of quarantine in order to limit the spread of Tuberculosis. In ancient times, treatments focused on sufferers' diets. Pliny the Elder described several methods in his *Natural History*: "wolf's liver taken in thin wine, the lard of a sow that has been fed upon grass, or the flesh of a she-ass taken in broth."

Although it was established that the Pulmonary form was associated with "Tubercles" by Dr Richard Morton in 1689, due to the variety of its symptoms, TB was not identified as a single disease until the 1820s and was not named "Tuberculosis" until 1839 by J. L. Schönlein. During the years 1838-1845, Dr. John Croghan, the owner of Mammoth Cave, brought a number of Tuberculosis sufferers into the cave in the hope of curing the disease with the constant temperature and purity of the cave air; they died within a year. The first TB sanatorium opened in 1854 in Görbersdorf, Germany (today Sokołowsko, Poland) by Hermann Brehmer.

The bacillus causing Tuberculosis, *Mycobacterium Tuberculosis*, was identified and described on 24th, March 1882 by Robert Koch. He received the Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine in 1905 for this discovery. Koch did not believe that bovine (cattle) and human Tuberculosis were similar, which delayed the recognition of infected milk as a source of infection. Later, this source was eliminated by the pasteurization process. Koch announced a glycerine extract of the Tubercle bacilli as a remedy for Tuberculosis in 1890, calling it "Tuberculin". It was not effective, but was later adapted as a test for pre-symptomatic Tuberculosis.

The first genuine success in immunizing against Tuberculosis was developed from attenuated bovine-strain Tuberculosis by Albert Calmette and Camille Guérin in 1906. It was called "BCG" (Bacillus of Calmette and Guérin). The BCG vaccine was first used on humans in 1921 in France, but it was not until after World War II that BCG received widespread acceptance in the USA, Great Britain, and Germany.

Tuberculosis, or "Consumption" as it was commonly known, caused the most widespread public concern in the 19th and early 20th centuries as an endemic disease of the urban poor. In 1815, one in four deaths in England was of Consumption; by 1918 one in six deaths in France were still caused by TB. In the 20th century, tuberculosis killed an estimated 100 million people. After the establishment in the 1880s that the disease was contagious, TB was made a notifiable disease in Britain; there were campaigns to stop spitting in public places, and the infected poor were pressured to enter sanatoria that resembled prisons; the sanatoria for the middle and upper classes offered excellent care and constant medical attention. Whatever the purported benefits of the fresh air and labour in the sanatoria, even under the best conditions, 50% of those who entered were dead within five years (1916).

The promotion of Christmas Seals began in Denmark during 1904 as a way to raise money for Tuberculosis programs. It expanded to the United States and Canada in 1907-1908 to help the National Tuberculosis Association (later called the American Lung Association).

In the United States, concern about the spread of Tuberculosis played a role in the movement to prohibit public spitting except into spittoons.

In Europe, deaths from TB fell from 500 out of 100,000 in 1850 to 50 out of 100,000 by 1950. Improvements in public health were reducing Tuberculosis even before the arrival of antibiotics. The disease remained such a significant threat to public health, that when the Medical Research Council was formed in Britain in 1913, its initial focus was Tuberculosis research.

It was not until 1946 with the development of the antibiotic Streptomycin that effective treatment and cure became possible. Prior to the introduction of this drug, the only treatment besides sanatoria were surgical interventions, including the Pneumothorax or Plombage technique, collapsing an infected lung to "rest" it and allow lesions to heal, a technique that was of little benefit and was mostly discontinued by the 1950s. The emergence of multidrug-resistant TB has again introduced surgery as part of the treatment for these infections. Here, surgical removal of chest cavities will reduce the

number of bacteria in the lungs, as well as increasing the exposure of the remaining bacteria to drugs in the bloodstream. It is therefore thought to increase the effectiveness of the chemotherapy.

Hopes that the disease could be completely eliminated have been dashed since the rise of drug-resistant strains in the 1980s. For example, Tuberculosis cases in Britain, numbering around 117,000 in 1913, had fallen to around 5,000 in 1987, but cases rose again, reaching 6,300 in 2000 and 7,600 cases in 2005. Due to the elimination of public health facilities in New York and the emergence of HIV, there was a resurgence of TB in the late 1980s. The number of patients failing to complete their course of drugs is high. New York had to cope with more than 20,000 TB patients with multidrug-resistant strains (resistant to, at least, both Rifampin and Isoniazid).

The resurgence of Tuberculosis resulted in the declaration of a global health emergency by the World Health Organization (WHO) in 1993. Every year, nearly half a million new cases of multidrug-resistant Tuberculosis (MDR-TB) are estimated to occur worldwide.

Bubonic Plague.

Bubonic plague is the best known manifestation of the plague, caused by the Gram-negative bacterium *Yersinia Pestis* (formerly known as *Pasteurella Pestis*). It belongs to the family Enterobacteriaceae. The term Bubonic plague is derived from the Greek word bubo, meaning "swollen gland". Swollen lymph nodes (buboes) especially occur in the armpit and groin in persons suffering from Bubonic plague. Bubonic plague was often used synonymously for plague, but it does in fact refer specifically to an infection that enters through the skin and travels through the lymphatics, as is often seen in flea-borne infections. The Bubonic plague kills about two out of three of infected patients in 2–6 days without treatment and was probably the cause of the Black Death that swept through Europe in the 14th century killing more than 25 million people, a third of the European population.

Signs and symptoms: The most famous symptom of Bubonic plague is painful, swollen lymph glands, called buboes. These are commonly found in the armpits, groin or neck. Due to its bite-based form of infection, the Bubonic plague is often the first step of a progressive series of illness. Two other forms of the plague, Pneumonic and Septicemic, often resulted after a patient with the Bubonic plague developed Pneumonia or blood poisoning. However, Pneumonic plague, unlike the Bubonic or Septicemic, induced coughing, was also very infectious and allowed person-to-person spread.

Other symptoms include heavy breathing, continuous blood vomiting, urination of blood, aching limbs, coughing, and extreme pain. The pain is usually caused by the decaying, or decomposing, of the skin while the person is still alive. Additional symptoms include fever, headaches, chills, extreme tiredness, gastrointestinal problems, lenticulae (black dots scattered throughout the body), delirium, and coma.

Pathophysiology: The Bubonic plague is an infection of the lymphatic system, usually resulting from the bite of an infected flea, *Xenopsylla Cheopis* (the rat flea). The fleas are often found on rodents, such as rats and mice, and seek out other prey when their rodent hosts die. The bacteria form aggregates in the gut of infected fleas and this results in the flea regurgitating ingested blood, which is now infected, into the bite site of a rodent or human host. Once established, bacteria rapidly spread to the lymph nodes and multiply. *Y. Pestis* Bacilli can resist phagocytosis and even reproduce inside phagocytes and kill them. As the disease progresses, the lymph nodes can haemorrhage and become swollen and necrotic. Bubonic plague can progress to lethal Septicemic plague in some cases. The plague is also known to spread to the lungs and become the disease known as the Pneumonic plague. This form of the disease is highly infectious as the bacteria can be transmitted in droplets emitted when coughing or sneezing, as well as physical contact with victims of the plague or flea-bearing rodents that carry the plague.

Treatment: In modern times, several classes of antibiotics are effective in treating bubonic plague. These include the Aminoglycosides Streptomycin and Gentamicin, the Tetracyclines and Doxycycline and the Fluoroquinolone Ciprofloxacin. Mortality associated with treated cases of Bubonic plague are about 1-15%, compared to a mortality rate of 40-60% in untreated cases.

History: The deadly disease has claimed nearly 200 million lives (although there is some debate as to whether all of the plagues attributed to it are in fact the same disease). The first recorded epidemic ravaged the Byzantine Empire during the sixth century, and was named the Plague of Justinian after emperor Justinian I, who was infected but survived through extensive treatment.

The most infamous and devastating instance of the plague was the Black Death, which killed a quarter to half of the population of Europe. In affected cities, proper burial rituals were abandoned and bodies were buried in mass graves, or abandoned in the street. The Black Death is thought to have originated in the Gobi Desert. Carried by the fleas on rats, it spread along trade routes and reached the Crimea in 1346. (It also spread eastward to the Yangtze River valley, and the resulting epidemic, ignored by the government, brought down the Yuan Dynasty.) In 1347 it spread to Constantinople and then Alexandria, killing thousands every day, and soon arrived in Western Europe. It is thought that the name Black Death

comes from the fact that the tissue turns a distinctive black colour during necrosis, or from the general gloominess surrounding the plague. However, this name was not applied until many years later.

Terrible conditions in medieval Europe were only part of the reason it reached such pandemic proportions. The people of Europe believed cats were evil and so domestic house cats were killed, so without these cats, the rat population was dramatically increased, there were more infectious fleas, and disease transmission was more likely. Also, poor harvests over the previous decades may have led to an undernourished European population that was more susceptible to disease.

The next few centuries were marked by several local outbreaks of lesser severity. The Great Plague of Seville, 1649, the Great Plague of London, 1665–1666, and the Great Plague of Vienna, 1679, were the last major outbreaks of the Bubonic plague in Europe.

The children's game of "Ring Around the Rosy" (or Ring a Ring o' Roses) may be derived from the appearance of the Bubonic plague. Proponents claim that "Ring around the rosy" refers to the rosy-red, rash-like ring that appeared as a symptom of the plague. "Pocket full of posy" referred to carrying flower petals as at the time it was believed the disease was spread through the ether of unhygiene and scent stopped the spread. "Ashes, ashes" referred to the burning of infected corpses, and "we all fall down" referred to the virulent deaths attributed to the plague. Some folklorists state the claim is baseless.

The plague resurfaced in the mid-19th century; like the Black Death, the Third Pandemic began in Central Asia. The disease killed millions in China and India and then spread worldwide. The outbreak continued into the early 20th century. In 1897, Pune in British India, was severely affected by the outbreak. The government responded to the plague with a committee system that used the military to perpetrate repression and tyranny as it tackled the pandemic. Nationalists publicly berated the government. On 22nd June 1897, two young Brahmins, the Chapekar brothers, shot and killed two British officers, the Committee chairman and his military escort. This act has been considered a landmark event in India's struggle for freedom as well as the worst violence against political authority seen in the world during the third plague pandemic.

Satan is also referred to in the New Testament as "Beelzebub" (NT:954), which is a reference to 2Kings 1v2 which speaks of "Baal-zebul" (OT:1176) the god of Ekron, which literally means "Baal of (the) Fly" or "the god of flies." It is certainly the Devil (and the evil angels) that are responsible for creating fleas (and other (flying) insects like the mosquito) that carry bacteria and other parasites that cause horrific diseases, sickness and suffering to humans, for it is most certainly **NOT** the God of Love, Who's only desire is to save, bless and heal.

Some Further Evidence Revealing The Existence Of The Hominids Created By The Devil And The Evil Angels With The Discovery Of An Underwater City.

The Quaternary ice age also occurred as a direct result of the judgement of God the Word upon the earth, this time upon all the creatures that were the result of the misuse of the great creative powers and energies of the Devil and the evil angels for evil purposes, however, on this occasion God the Word did not make a personal visitation to the earth for this judgement, like He did immediately before the Cryogenian (or Sturtian-Varangian) ice age started.

During the Quaternary Period (also known as the Pleistocene glaciations), the total volume of land ice, sea level, and global temperature has fluctuated initially on forty one thousand and more recently on a hundred thousand year time scales, as evidenced most clearly by ice cores for the past eight hundred thousand years and marine sediment cores for the earlier period. There have been approximately eighty glacial cycles over this time. All of this time is referred to as an ice age because at least one permanent large ice sheet, Antarctica, has existed continuously. There is uncertainty over how much of Greenland was present during the previous and earlier interglacials. During the colder episodes, referred to as glacial periods, large ice sheets also existed in Europe, North America, and Siberia. The shorter and warmer intervals between glacials are referred to as interglacials.

Currently the earth is in an interglacial period, which marked the beginning of the Holocene epoch. The current interglacial began about twelve thousand years ago, which caused the ice sheets from the last glacial period to begin to disappear. Remnants of these last glaciers, now occupying about 10% of the world's land surface, still exist in Greenland and Antarctica.

During the glacial periods, what we see as the normal (i.e. interglacial) hydrologic system was completely interrupted throughout large areas of the world and was considerably modified in others. Due to the volume of ice on land (which was three to four km (1.9 to 2.5 miles) thick), the sea level was approximately one hundred and thirty metres lower than present (which equates to about seventy to eighty million cubic kilometres of glacial ice). The evidence of such an event in the recent past is robust. Over the last century, extensive field observations have provided evidence that continental glaciers covered large parts of Europe, North America, and Siberia. Maps of glacial features were compiled after many years of fieldwork by hundreds of geologists who mapped the location and orientation of drumlins, eskers, moraines, striations, and glacial stream channels. These maps revealed the extent of the ice sheets, the direction of flow, and the locations of

systems of melt water channels, and they allowed scientists to decipher a history of multiple advances and retreats of the ice. Extensive evidence now shows that a number of periods of growth and retreat of continental glaciers occurred during the ice age (as already mentioned are called glacials and interglacials). The interglacial periods of warm climate are represented by buried soil profiles, peat beds, and lake and stream deposits separating the unsorted, unstratified deposits of glacial debris.

Glaciations has been a rare event in Earth's history, but there is evidence of widespread glaciations during the late Paleozoic Era (two hundred to three hundred million years ago) and during late Precambrian (i.e. in the Neoproterozoic Era, six hundred to eight hundred million years ago). Before the current ice age, which began about two million years ago, earth's climate was typically mild and uniform for long periods of time. This climatic history is implied by the types of fossil plants and animals and by the characteristics of sediments preserved in the stratigraphic record. There are, however, widespread glacial deposits, recording several major periods of ancient glaciations in various parts of the geologic record. Such evidence suggests major periods of glaciations prior to the current Quaternary glaciations.

The best documented record of pre-Quaternary glaciations, called the Karoo Ice Age, is found in the late Paleozoic rocks in South Africa, India, South America, Antarctica, and Australia. Exposures of ancient glacial deposits are numerous in these areas. Deposits of even older glacial sediment exist on every continent except South America. These indicate that two other periods of widespread glaciations occurred during the late Precambrian, producing the Snowball Earth during the Cryogenian Period.

The last glacial period ended about twelve thousand years ago, the glacial melt starting about fourteen thousand six hundred years ago, at which time the sea levels were about one hundred and thirty metres lower than they are today. This glacial melt continued for approximately eight thousand years or so and stopped around six thousand years ago, i.e. around 4000 BC, the time that Archbishop Ussher dates the re-adornment of the earth and creation of Adam and Eve.

In recent years man-made structures have been found underwater, one such case is when a huge lost city was found in one hundred and twenty feet of water in the Gulf of Cambay off the western coast of India which could be over nine thousand years old. The vast city, which is five miles long and two miles wide, is believed to predate the oldest known remains in the subcontinent by more than five thousand years. The site was discovered by chance in 2001 by oceanographers from India's National Institute of Ocean Technology conducting a survey of pollution. Using sidescan sonar, which sends a beam of sound waves down to the bottom of the ocean they identified huge geometrical structures at a depth of one hundred and twenty feet. Debris recovered from the site, including construction material, pottery, sections of walls, beads, sculpture and "human" (hominid) bones and teeth has been carbon dated (i.e. the use of radiometric dating) and found to be nearly nine thousand five hundred years old, i.e. dating back to around 7500 BC.

The city is believed to be even older than the ancient Harappan civilisation, which dates back around four thousand years. Marine archaeologists have used a technique known as sub-bottom profiling to show that the buildings remain stand on enormous foundations. The author and film-maker Graham Hancock, who has written extensively on the uncovering of ancient civilisations, reported the following to BBC News Online:

"The oceanographers found that they were dealing with two large blocks of apparently man made structures. Cities on this scale are not known in the archaeological record until roughly four thousand five hundred years ago when the first big cities begin to appear in Mesopotamia. Nothing else on the scale of the underwater cities of Cambay is known. The first cities of the historical period are as far away from these cities as we are today from the pyramids of Egypt."

This whole area became submerged underwater nine and a half thousand years ago (7,500 BC), as a result of the ending of the last glacial period, the vast ice sheets having started to melt some fourteen thousand six hundred years ago and continued right up to about six thousand years ago, i.e. from 12,600 BC – 4,000 BC.

Ocean Currents And Weather Patterns.

Another interesting scientific fact is that El Nino, the periodic warming of the Pacific Ocean waters that affects the weather worldwide, started about 6,000 years ago, according to a study of ancient fish bones. The journal "Science" reported that fish bones from refuse left about 6,000 years ago by ancient "peoples" in Peru show that ocean catfish lived in water that averaged six to seven degrees warmer than now and that there was little variation in the temperature. This would seem to indicate that El Nino also started around the time Adam and Eve were created, the time when the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters for the purpose of re-adorning the earth. Gen 1v2.

Towards the end of "The Ages of Judgement And Chaos" the Quaternary Ice Age started, which was just over two millions years ago. As the last glacial period ended (about twelve thousand years ago) and the massive ice sheets melted the sea-levels rose by about one hundred thirty metres. The heavens also experienced another time of darkness as recorded in Gen 1v2, "...The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep." As already stated, the Lord

also brought judgement upon **ALL** hominids, creatures, animals, insects and life-forms upon the earth that had been created by the Devil and the evil angels through the misuse of their great creative powers and energies, so that **ALL** life became extinct, so that when the earth was re-adorned and Adam and Eve created there was **NO** life left from the previous ages, "The Ages of Judgement And Chaos." However, this judgement was such that although vegetation above the ground was affected the seeds of the grasses, herbs, fruits, trees, etc. left in the ground were not, for Gen 1v11 states, "...Who-so-seeds itself on the earth," (which also proves that there was a former creation before Adam and Eve).

A FEW NOTES: Rom 1v19,20 states the following: "Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his **eternal** power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse." "Eternal" in Greek is "aídios" (NT:126) (which is from "aei" (NT:104) and in turn is from an obsolete primary noun meaning "continued duration" or "ever.") which has the meaning of ever during (forward and backward, or forward only), eternal, everlasting. Cremer makes the following comment on the two Greek words "aionios" (NT:166) (which would be better translated as "age") and "aídios" (NT:126): "While "aionios"... negatives the end either of a space of time or of unmeasured time, and is used chiefly where something future is spoken of, "**aídios**" **excludes interruption and lays stress upon permanence and unchangeableness.**" Creation itself reveals "His **eternal** power and Godhead," so it is difficult to see how the Christian can wilfully suppress this light and Truth revealed to them by God Himself and His creation and accept the Devil's lie that the earth is only six thousand years old! This false doctrine is most prevalent in the Church today and is held by many Christians and it is clear that such Christians have not followed the example of the Jews at Berea (acts 17v10-12), who searched and scrutinized (the Greek word "anakrino" (NT:350) is used in Acts 17v11 for the English word "searched" and means to sift up and down, make careful and exact research as in legal processes as in Acts 4v9, 12v19.) the Scriptures daily to see if what Paul taught was indeed the Truth, with the result that many believed. Such Christians (who accept the six thousand year age of the earth) have committed the same gross error that the Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees had, as the Lord Jesus pointed out to them in Matt 22v29, "...Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God." These same Christians also reject the truth that good science reveals regarding the Pre-Adamic creation and ages, rubbishing it with great fervour and lambasting as heretics those who have searched the Scriptures and found the Truth on the Pre-Adamic ages. These Christians who reject the Truth on the Pre-adamic creation and ages have become reprobate in mind on this most important Truth, so that Light is unable to come into their minds on this issue, so that trying to discuss with such believers about this Truth, with their minds so firmly closed, is like beating one's head against a brick wall. Rom 1v18-32 (esp. v28). These same Christians also approach **ALL** other Scriptural Truth in a like manner, in that they pick and choose the Scriptures that they want to believe and make them fit they cherished unscriptural traditions handed down to them by their (very UN)spiritual fathers! 2Tim 4v3,4, 1Per 1v18. The Christian who believes the Devil's lie that the earth is only six thousand years old feels that if they accepted the Truth regarding the Pre-Adamic creation and ages they would have to accept Darwin's "Theory of Evolution" which flatly rejects and denies the work of God as the Great Creator, however, this is just these Christians being lazy in seeking God for the Truth on this issue through study of the Scriptures and prevailing prayer which would bring Light on this most important subject. John 7v17, 1Pet 1v10-12. It takes **REAL** persevering prayer when studying the Scriptures to get Truth from God, otherwise darkness will fill the mind and keep that person imprisoned. Isaiah 25v7, 2Cor 4v4. When the believer accepts and believes the lie that the creation is only six thousand years old, the important connection between the Pre-Adamic ages (especially The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos) and the Great Tribulation is completely missed (indeed, as already stated, this type of Christian who picks and chooses the Scriptures and makes them "fit" their unscriptural man-made traditions, because of the irreverent and dishonest way they deal with the Word of God, will also have rejected the vital Truth of the Post-Tribulation Advent and Rapture and so leads them into even greater folly and darkness (in that they not only reject the Truth on the Pre-Adamic creation but also the Post-Tribulation Advent and Rapture.)), in that "they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men" again, clearly shows that the Devil and the evil angels will once more create gigantic fierce creatures and hominids as well as taking upon themselves giant human-like bodies. Gen 6v1-12, Dan 2v43, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 12v7-12. However, the Devil's main use for his activities in "The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos," was, as already stated, to use the fossil evidence (from his created creatures and hominids) of that period to bring into being many millions of years in the future, the Lie of Darwin's Theory of Evolution! It should be noted, that although it is referred to as "'Darwin's" Theory of Evolution," it was not Darwin who was the originator and inspirer of such a false doctrine, but the Devil himself, who, once he had considered the correct time had arrived and he had found the appropriate dupe, energised it into his mind over a period of time. Eph 2v1-10 (esp. v2, "...the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience," would be better rendered, "the spirit that is now constantly working in and energising the sons of disobedience."). Scientists and academics now take Darwin's Theory of Evolution, along with Mendel's Laws of Inheritance (Gregor Johann Mendel (20th July, 1822 – 6th, January 1884) was an Augustinian monk and scientist, his experiments led him to make two generalizations, the Law of Segregation and the Law of Independent Assortment, which later became known as "Mendel's Laws of Inheritance," the science of which is correct.) and one or two other areas of biological specialties and put forth the term "Modern evolutionary synthesis" which, for the unbelieving scientists and academics, provided the widely accepted account amongst themselves of evolution, which they then put forth into the wider public domain as being the accepted truth on the matter. However, this is just their attempt to deny God as the Great Creator and Sustainer of **ALL** things (those that are seen and those that are not), for both (that is God and His creation) witness to his Eternal power and Godhead! These unbelieving scientists and academics have knowingly fully suppressed the Light of Creation, which God Himself has shown unto them and hence have become guilty of intellectual dishonesty by

twisting and manipulating (good) scientific facts and truths to suit the atheistic views of their darkened and reprobate minds. John 1v9, Rom 1v18-32, Col 1v9-18.

The question arises: Why did God allow the Devil and the evil angels, what seems like unrestrained activity during "The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos," to misuse their great creative powers and energies to create ALL sorts of creatures and hominids as they so desired?

The answer is as follows: God, from before creation, in His foreknowledge knew that immediately before the beginning of the Great Tribulation there would be war in Heaven, when Michael and his angels would fight against the Devil and the evil angels, with the result that the Devil and his evil angels would be cast out of the Heavens into the earth, with God also removing His restraint upon the Devil and the evil angels so that the Devil could then put his plan of evil, "the mystery of iniquity" into **FULL** operation. This would then result in the Devil (and the rest of the evil angels) once again misusing their great creative powers and energies (which up to this time they had been hindered from doing so because of God's restraint upon them) for the purpose of creating all sorts of (giant) fierce creatures and hominids again, with many of these evil angels also taking upon themselves giant human-like bodies as the sons of God did during the Earth Age Under Lucifer, and before and after The Flood (in the days of Noah). Rev 12v12 states, "...For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time." Because the Devil knows that he has but a short time upon the earth (before he is imprisoned in the Abyss during the Millennium and the evil angels are put into the Lake of Fire at the Second Coming of Christ); as the Great Tribulation progresses the wrath of the Devil and the evil angels increases greatly, with the result that the misuse of their great creative powers and energies also increases greatly which results in even greater numbers of giant creatures and hominids appearing upon the earth. So, when the Devil came in before God, after The Dayspring was forced to bring judgement upon the inhabitants of the earth, by shaking the wicked out of it and thus bringing to an end The Earth Age Under Satan and started his slanders and accusations against God that He was (supposedly) unable to bring the creation to a successful conclusion and that he, the Devil, could seduce any of His freewill creatures into sin, so that He would be forced again to bring judgement upon the earth and its inhabitants and so because of this, He should let him have unrestrained creative activity so that he could demonstrate that he could produce happiness (which, in the case of the Devil and the evil angels is nothing else than evil sadistic pleasure) his way. So God gave the Devil permission to do just that (The Devil would also be fulfilling his great desire "to be like the Most High," in the sense that he would be "in charge" of the creative acts upon the earth. Isaiah 14v14), God also being fully aware (by His foreknowledge) of what the Devil was really planning to do, which was to implement part of his plan of evil (the mystery of iniquity) so as to create vast numbers of creatures of ever increasing sophistication ending up with the hominids with the sole purpose of implementing in the Age of Grace the lie that God (supposedly) did not exist, by manifesting his most sophisticated Lie up to that time, "The Theory of Evolution," which was not only to deceive the worldling regarding the existence of God, but also to blind the Christian to the Truth of the great age of the earth. However, although it was the Devil's intention and plan to use his great creative powers and energies during The Ages of Judgement and Chaos to deceive humans many millions of years in the future during the Age of Grace, God was going to use these very creative acts and works of the Devil and the evil angels to bring Light and Truth to Christians and anybody else who would receive such Truth as to the great evil activities of the Devil and the evil angels during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation. God was going to use these very creative acts of the Devil and the rest of the powers of darkness (during The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos) to pull the mask of the Devil during the last days of the Age of Grace and show him in his true light and prepare His people (and all those who would accept His Truth) for the great evil they should expect to face during the dark days of the Great Tribulation, for God also knew (by His foreknowledge) the vast amount of knowledge that would have been discovered from the 19th century onwards by palaeontologists, geologists and many other branches of science regarding the different forms of life that inhabited the earth hundreds of millions of years ago, so that as it is today anybody can walk into any museum and see complete skeletons of many different kinds of dinosaurs etc., they can physically see many of the fierce creatures that the Devil and the evil angels are **again** going to create upon the earth during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation in the not too distant future! Gen 6v1-8, Job 38v12-15, Isaiah 14v9-11,16,17, 25v7,8, Jer 4v23-28, Dan 2v43, Matt 8v29, 25v41, Mark 13v19, Rom 8v33, 2Thess 2v1-12, 1Peter 1v2, 2Peter 2v4, Jude v6,7, Rev 7v14, 12v7-12, Rev 20v1-3.

Another question that arises is: Why did God permit the Devil such a long time period (around six hundred million years) during which he (and the evil angels) were able exercise this unrestrained creative activity?

God, in his foreknowledge, knew all the different kinds of fierce creatures and hominids that the Devil and the evil angels would create during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, so he simply let The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos continue until He knew that all the creatures and hominids that the Devil would create during the Great Tribulation would first be created by him and the evil angels during The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos so that Christians (and anybody else who would receive the Truth from the fossil and scientific evidence found in the many hundreds of museums around the world and the abundant literature (both scientific and non-scientific) that is most ubiquitous) would have the full Light and Truth as to what (fierce) creatures and hominids to expect the Devil (and the evil angels) to create during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation **and get prepared for it by seeking the Lord and getting close to Him!** As the dinosaurs and hominids during The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos were at times possessed by demons, so once again the dinosaurs and

hominids created by the Devil during the Great Tribulation will also on different occasions be possessed by demons. The main reason that this possession will occur will be to kill, hurt, harm and completely destroy the earth, mankind and especially Christians, especially those believers who will shine as bright lights for the Lord Jesus during the terrible darkness of the Great Tribulation, these Christians the Devil will hate with a vengeance! Dan 11v33, Rev 12v4,13,17.

God's Answers For His People To Deal With The GREAT Wickedness Of The Great Tribulation.

A couple of the reasons why so many Christians accept the false doctrine of the Pre-Tribulation Advent and Rapture is because they do not believe that God can look after them during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation; basically it is a lack of faith in the Living God, such Christians are amongst "the fearful" of Rev 21v8: "fearful" in Greek is "deilois" which is from "deilos" (NT:1169) and means faithless, fearful, cowardly, one who always runs or one who runs away at nothing. In Luke 18v1, the Lord Jesus gives a very strong admonition to Christians that in the last days and especially during the Great Tribulation they should "...always pray and not to turn coward (faint, lose heart, and give up)." (Amplified Bible), because if they do, they will surely backslide and go into apostasy. Matt 24v12,13, Mark 13v13, Rev 13v9,10, 14v12, 16v15. The second reason is because Christians have been taught by their (un)spiritual fathers (Pastors and Teachers etc.) that God withdrew the wonderful gifts of the Holy Spirit from the Church at the end of the "Apostolic age" (i.e. second/third centuries) and that He no longer does any kind of signs, wonders or miracles for His people or through them in response to their faith, which really is another form of rank unbelief, even as the Israelites of old, who also limited the Holy One of Israel in the same way by their unbelief. Psalm 78v40-43. However, Acts 2v16-21, 38,39 (with Joel 2v28-32, 1Cor 12-14) clearly states that the Baptism and gifts of the Holy Spirit are available for every Christian right through the whole of the Age of Grace and indeed right up until the last day of this age, the Age of Grace, when the Lord Jesus will come in great power and glory (i.e. His Second Coming). Indeed, God has promised that He will be with His people in a new and even greater measure than at any time in all of human history (because of the great darkness and evil coming upon the earth during the last seven years of this age, but especially during the last three and a half years) so that they will know an even greater power, authority and anointing during the last days, especially during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation.

God is going to take very definite action against the wicked who (try to) hurt, harm, kill or persecute His dearly beloved children during the Great Tribulation, not only through the prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), both of which have the meaning "an intervention (with power) so as to affect a change in circumstances") of His saints by angelic ministry but also directly through the greater ministries of the Church, who will have been given great power and authority so that like the Two Witnesses they will call fire down from heaven, close the heavens so that no rain falls, turn the waters to blood and strike the earth with every curse as often as they so desire for three and a half years. The answers that God has for His people to deal with the gross wickedness of the Great Tribulation were not hobbled together by Him in a hurry at short notice, but were prepared by Him from before the Creation, as they are part of His eternal purpose. Dan 11v32, Zech 12v8, Luke 18v1-8, Acts 15v18, Eph 3v1-11, Rev 8v2-6, 11v3-6, 12v14-16, 15v1, 16v1-21.

Heb 11v3 (Amplified Version) states:

"By faith we understand that the...[...successive ages] were framed (fashioned, put in order, and equipped for their intended purpose) by the word of God, so that what we see was not made out of things which are visible."

The **only** reason for "The Ages of Judgement And Chaos" coming to an end was simply because God had fulfilled all His purposes in those ages and so was about to start another age, "The Age of Communion," however, before this age could begin proper, God would first have to re-adorn the earth, so that it could once again become inhabitable. Gen 1v2-2v25.

There then follows, as revealed in the Bible, the ages which God deals with man in seven different ways leaving no method untried where by men might be induced to live righteously....

Isaiah 45v18 states: "For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; **God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited:** I am the Lord; and there is none else."

The Age Of Communion.

With The Ages Of Judgement And Chaos having been brought to an end by God bringing judgement upon all the creatures and hominids created by the Devil and the evil angels and the earth experiencing another time of darkness upon it, the Trinity then set about re-adorning the earth so that it would once again be able to be inhabited by man. The dating by Archbishop Ussher that this event occurred around about 4000 BC would not be far off the mark, for we see widespread well organised agriculture and pastoralism in the period of between 3500 BC – 4000 BC, so a date of around 4000 BC would fit the time that Adam and Eve were cast out of the Garden of Eden with the command to till the earth. Gen 1v2-2v25, 3v23.

In The Age of Communion, God deals with man (whom He created in His own likeness and image, Gen 1v26, 1Cor 11v7, James 3v9) in His own glorious and loving person, instead of leaving it to angels as before. And so evening by evening the Son of God descended from Heaven to earth and held sweet converse with Adam and Eve in the Garden He had prepared for them; for His delights were with the children of men (Proverbs 8v31). We see a lovely picture of this intercourse in Genesis 2v18-25. Man is a gregarious creature and needs company; but amongst all the animals which God brought before Adam, not one was found sufficient to meet his need. A week, a month, a year exhausted their possibilities of companionship, and left Adam more and more acutely aware of his isolation. It was to such a hungry soul that God brought Eve, and Adam found the satisfying answer to his complaint. Now, nought remained but to taste the possibilities of this new world with their Creator at hand to answer their queries and direct their steps. It must have looked to the angels as if the stage was set for unlimited success, now that God Himself was in the midst of His Creation. Surely no harm could come to Adam and Eve in such circumstances, even if Satan was still alive and malignant. It may have seemed a mistake to have left him and his fellow angels in possession of the first heaven, and so able to visit the earth, lest the desire to regain his lost territory should enter his heart. Better surely to have incapacitated him and his hosts from doing any more damage, and to have given to Adam and Eve a fair chance of enjoying their lovely earth without interruption. Such doubts must have seemed justified, when Satan actually did enter Eden, and succeeded a second time in apparently wrecking the plan of God. Once again it looked as if evil had triumphed, and found the Almighty powerless to defend His own Creation, or bring His own designs to a successful conclusion.

And so The Age of Communion is ended by man's preference for Satan's path of disobedience and sin. The temptation to sin would have come (and possibly had come) some time apart from Satan so Satan was allowed to tempt Adam and Eve with the intent of putting backbone into them and making them hate sin. 1Pet 1v6,7, James 1v12-17. The good and lovely desires God had given were the basis of the temptation, "good for food, tasty," "a man loving his wife more than God." Gen 3v6. Scripture Period: Gen 1v2 to 3v22.

A few points worth noting on the short period of The Age of Communion:

- 1) Perfection of creation and surroundings are no guarantee that free will creatures will not choose sin and selfishness, as Lucifer, at his creation was perfect, full of wisdom and most beautiful to behold who's abode was Heaven, right next to the Throne of Glory, yet he failed to resist temptation when it entered into his mind and being, even as the creation of Adam and Eve was also perfect and like Lucifer their abode couldn't have been more desirable, yet, when temptation arose both of them, for different reasons, failed to resist it and so died spiritually. Gen 1v31, 2v17, 3v6, Ezek 18v4,20, 28v12-15.
- 2) Eve was completely deceived by the Serpent, whereas Adam in full knowledge of what he was doing chose to eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil simply because he loved his wife more than he loved God, hence the Scriptures ascribes the Fall to Adam and not to Eve. Rom 5v12, 1Tim 2v14.
- 3) The state of innocence of Adam and Eve was not desirable, but indeed was dangerous, hence God allowed the Serpent into the Garden of Eden to tempt them and so to give them the opportunity of resisting temptation so that they might grow spiritually strong and learn to love what is good and to hate what is evil. A freewill being is not "safe" until they not only love what is good **BUT** also hate what is evil, i.e. that their free will is eternally fixed in the way of righteousness, holiness and good; then and only then will God let them enter into the Eternal Kingdom. Heb 1v9, James 1v2-4,12, Rev 21v27.
- 4) Adam and Eve failed to trust God, and instead of obeying God's Word believed Satan's lies, they failed to be open with God, and refused to admit their sin and failure, and so missed forgiveness and restoration. Adam blamed Eve for his sin and Eve blamed the Serpent for hers. Gen 3v9-14.
- 5) In Gen 3v15,16, God did **NOT** curse woman. **See Appendix 2.**
- 6) Even perfect flesh, such as Adam and Eve possessed, was endowed by God with desires, which unless curbed by the soul would lead it to sin. The realisation that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasant to look at is put first in the motives that led to Eve's sin. The stronger the bodily instinct, the greater the danger of misuse. The strongest and most lovely of all physical instincts implanted by God, the sexual, is also the most dangerous unless ruled by the soul. The perfect flesh of the perfect man contained within it the possibility of temptation and sin just as inevitably as did the fallen flesh of Adam. The only safety of the most perfect flesh lies in its control by a wise and loving soul. Gen 3v6, Matt 4v2-4, Matt 26v41, 1Cor 9v27.
- 7) The fact that all men do as a matter of fact sin is not due to some taint of "original" sin in their nature which makes sin inevitable; but as the Bible says, to the fact that "all like sheep go astray." It is the herd instinct and the fear of standing alone which operates so powerfully. We are to confess Christ before men. Sin is not due to some flaw in the soul, but simply to the possession of free will. Eccl 7v29, Isaiah 53v6

8) Adam died physically not because he sinned, but because God drove him from the Tree of Life; otherwise in spite of his sin he would have lived for ever and for the same reason all men suffer physical death. God was not going to let man have access to the Tree of Life after he had sinned as He had done in the Pre-Adamic Ages. Gen 3v22-24.

9) Temptation is not sin; the hour of fiercest temptation can be the hour of greatest purity. By allowing us to inherit from our parents a body from which temptation is inevitable (i.e. "sin in the flesh," Rom 7v17,18, 8v3), God has not been unfair to us, but has given us the opportunity by resisting such temptation, of establishing ourselves for ever in His love and service. When God gave men and angels free will He made it possible for them to disobey any command He might impose and to embark on a life of selfishness instead of love. Hence temptation was possible in Heaven before sin occurred. Ezek 28v11-15, Rom 7v7-8v4. **See Appendix 3.**

10) It is obvious that temptation and sin are permanent possibilities of a "free will;" by which we mean that a man can choose his own course, whether it be good or evil, even if he lacks the power to put it into action. The whole aim of God is therefore to do away with sin, not by excluding temptation but by making the soul immune to it; as the body becomes immune to disease not by elimination of bacilli but by the setting up of a sufficient resistance to them. Heb 1v9. Only the man who hates evil is safe against temptation. Therefore God has allowed evil great liberty in this world, that by awful experience of its effects, its deceitful promises might be exposed, and mankind might learn to dread it above all things and to achieve an iron determination never to commit it. Luke 15v17, Heb 1v9, Psalm 119v97-104, Heb 12v4.

11) It is the peculiar glory of Jesus, which He shares with no other, that though tempted in all points like as we are yet He never yielded to the solicitations of sin, from whatever quarter they might come. Wherefore for this reason God has given Him the Name which is above every name. John 8v46, Luke 4v1-13, 22v28, Heb 2v14-18, 4v14-15, 5v7-10, Phil 2v5-11. It has been the tragedy of the human race on the contrary, that like sheep we have all turned to our own way and gone astray; so that, instead of growing strong in character by continuous and successful struggle against temptation, we have become the weak slaves of sin, and found out that the soul that sinneth it shall die. Let it be noted that only a living soul can die; a dead soul is already dead. The tragedy of Eden is continually repeated, so that each soul having once turned aside finds itself a captive, cut off from God by the death of the spirit; and able, and at first at any rate contented, only to live in the world of sense through its body. The whole life of such a person is described in the vivid phrase "dead works" or the life of a man dead to God. John 3v19, Rom 1v18-21, Isaiah 53v6, Luke 9v60, John 8v31-34, Rom 1v18-32, 5v12, 6v12-16, 7v9-11, Gal 5v15-16, Eph 2v1-3, 1Tim 5v6, Ezek 18v4, James 1v14-15.

12) Be it noted that a dead spirit is not an annihilated or non-existent spirit, but one which no longer performs the duty for which it was intended, that is, to contact God. A "dead spirit" though unable any longer to contact God, can yet get into touch with other dead spirits, both angels and demons, which inhabit the first Heaven and the earth. Eph 2v2, 6v12, 2Cor 4v4, 1Cor 10v19-21, Isaiah 8v19, 1Sam 28 (all), 2Kings 21v6, 1Tim 4v1, 1John 4v1-3.

13) Until the sinner is willing to retrace that step and come into relationship with God again, even God cannot help him. This willingness to change his attitude towards God is called repentance; and, since nothing can be done without it, all God's efforts are lovingly turned to bringing it about. The Holy Spirit uses in each case the most appropriate means to appeal to the heart of the one with whom He is dealing. It may be fear of judgment, fear of consequences, dreadful experiences of an ungodly life, revelation of the love of God in sending His Son to die for sinners, experience of His power in signs and wonders, the hope of eternal life instead of the fear of death. The variety of the means He uses is as great as that of the hearts with which He has to deal, but the end is always the same, to persuade the ungodly to be willing to come into contact with a Living God, to be reconciled to the One they have distrusted. John 16v8, Mark 1v15, Acts 9v32-35, 8v6-8, 16v27-30, 17v30-31, 2v37, Luke 11v31-32, 13v1-9, Rom 5v8, John 3v16.

14) God does give space for repentance, but does not wait beyond the appointed time. Gen 6v1-7, Luke 13v1-9, Rev 2v21, Heb 12v17, 6v4-8, 10v26-30, Rom 2v1-11, Dan 4v27-31, Jonah 3v4, Jer 18v7-10, 2Chron 36v14-16, Eccl 8v11.

15) Repentance always leads to action. Jonah 3 (all), Luke 3v8, Acts 2v38, Luke 15v17-19, 19v8-9. It includes hatred of sin, sorrow for those we have wronged, and a desire to put things right; remorse is sorrow for oneself, because one's sin has been exposed and must be paid for. Matt 27v3-5, 2Sam 17v23.

16) From Adam justification was no longer by works but by faith; and the rite of blood-sacrifice for sin was well known from Abel, who was the first of a long line of men and women who have pleased God by their faith. 2Chron 20v7, Ezek 14v14, Hab 2v4, Acts 10v35, Heb 11v1-40.

The Age of Forbearance.

In this age God leaves man to his own choice, after making a way to return to God, by offerings. This age could well be called the Age of Conscience. This age is ended by universal violence and misery, which forces God to send the flood in kindness on the righteousness, (and the wicked who were so grievously hurting one another.) It was kinder to let them die than to let them live. Scripture Period: Gen 3v23 to 8v19.

Paul writes in Heb 11v4, "By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh."

A couple of things worth considering at this point, firstly the institution of a long line of blood sacrifices that was to end at Calvary; and secondly, God's picking out of a few friends whose loyalty withstood all attacks, Abel was the first of these friends. Abel (Greek, "Habel" (NT:6) which is from the Hebrew "Hebel" (OT:1893) and means breath, emptiness or vanity; figuratively, something transitory and unsatisfactory; often used as an adverb.) was the first in a long line of saints in the Old Testament, who being justified by faith, looked for, not an earthly inheritance, but a Heavenly one, they looked for a Heavenly City. They had believed God's promises of such an inheritance and had answered the call to rise up with their Lord to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness in the heavenly places and so to occupy their Heavenly Canaan, manifesting God's power and love through the gifts of the Holy Spirit, not only in the heavenly places but also upon the earth; through their prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) both of which can have the meaning of "the making of interventions with power so as to effect a change in circumstances.") In obeying this call from their Lord to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness in the heavenly places and so enter their Heavenly Canaan, they enter into God's rest. Hab 2v4, Heb 4v3, 11v1-40 (esp. 11v13,16,39,40)

The reason behind Cain's murder of his brother Abel was simply that of "envy" (Greek, "phthonos" (NT:5335)), he became filled with murderous envy because of God's acceptance of Abel's sacrifice and not his. Envy is more destructive and malignant than jealousy; (Greek) "zelos" (NT:2205) casts hostile grudging looks; "phthonos," "envy," has arrived at the stage of hostile acts. It is grief at another person's good fortune, it is not just the pain that they do not possess their good fortune or blessing, but the bitterness that the other person does. It is not so much the desire for what another person has; it is the desire to take away from them what they have, or prevent them from possessing it. "Zelos," "jealousy," can sometimes speak of noble ambition, and desire for something good, as well as a covetous evil desire; whereas "phthonos," "envy," can only speak of a bitter ill will. It is not just the pain over an enemy's good fortune; it is the grief over a friend's good fortune. The jealousy, "zelos," of the Jews led to the active opposition of the more malignant "phthonos," "envy;" and caused them to murder Jesus. Though Judas became possessed by Satan, it is not recorded that any of the leaders of Israel became possessed, the evil jealousy and envy in their hearts drove them to oppose and murder Jesus. Mark 2v5-7,16,23,24, 3v1,2, 15v10, Matt 27v18.

NB The mindset behind Augustine's doctrine of "Original Sin" has been around since the days of Adam and Eve.

People have usually tried to deny their guilt, or "excuse" their actions by blaming someone else for their own wilful individual personal sin, when they have been confronted with their sin! Eve blamed the Serpent; Adam blamed Eve, and suggested that it was even God's fault for giving him Eve. Gen 3v12,13.

In the account of Cain's murder of his brother Abel, God said in Gen 4v7, "If you do well, will you not be accepted? **And if you do not do well, sin lies at the door. And its desire is for you, but you should rule over it.**" God told Cain to follow his brother Abel's example of "faith" and godly living, and then, by God's grace, Cain would be able to resist and "overcome" the temptation to wilfully sin. Heb 11v4. It is quite clear that God did **NOT** consider either Cain or Abel as being "born in sin," and incapable of living right, (as most Theologians incorrectly state!), for **God very clearly tells Cain that he "should rule over sin."** The word for "rule" is "mashal" (OT:4910), which means, to master, to have dominion, to reign, to rule.

However, we know that Cain rejected God's instruction on this issue and murdered his brother Abel. When God asked Cain where his brother was, Cain replied, "Am I my brother's keeper?" Gen 4v9. This was a vain attempt to deny his guilt. No doubt, like many today, Cain tried to excuse his evil actions to himself, with the excuse that he could not be blamed for his sin, for how could he be expected to lead a righteous life, when his father and mother had set him such a bad example, and sinned so grievously. **We see that in the first family the foundation for the mindset of the "born in sin" doctrine was clearly laid down, they all desired to evade personal responsibility for their sin, and this was the bush to hide behind.**

Enoch.

Archbishop Ussher dates the birth of Enoch as 3382 BC and his translation by God into Heaven as 3017 BC when he was 365 years old.

There is not much written in the Scriptures about Enoch, but what is speaks volumes, Gen 5v18,21-24, Heb 11v5, Jude v14,15 states the following:

"And Jared lived an hundred sixty and two years, and he begat Enoch...And Enoch lived sixty and five years, and begat Methuselah: **And Enoch walked with God after he begat Methuselah three hundred years,** and begat sons and daughters: And all the days of Enoch were three hundred sixty and five years: And Enoch walked with God: and he was not;

for God took him...**By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God...**And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him."

The defining time in Enoch's life was when his son Methuselah was born, having already been justified by faith; after the birth of his son the Scriptures simply state, "Enoch walked with God...three hundred years." The walk that he had with the Lord was such that he was well pleasing to God, to the extent that he didn't experience death, but simply was translated into Heaven to be with his Lord. The fact that he didn't taste of death enabled God to take him into Heaven to be with Him, because from the legal viewpoint that if he had died, because of his sin, Enoch would, like all the other Old Testament saints (apart from Elijah) have had to go down into Hades, to the "good" side of it, where he would have been comforted by the Holy Spirit, his faith and the knowledge of a sure resurrection, but cut off from God's Presence having lost his spirit (at death) which would have returned to God Who gave it. Eccl 12v7, Ezek 18v4v20, Hab 2v4, Rom 3v23.

Enoch, like Abel, also looked for a Heavenly City and was obedient to the call off His Lord, to rise up with Him into the heavenly places to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness so as to occupy his Heavenly inheritance and to manifest God's power and love not only in the heavenly places but also upon earth, through the gifts of the Holy Spirit, by his prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) both of which have the meaning of "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") This prayer ministry that Enoch exercised in the heavenly places was like that which Melchizedek and the Melchizedek priesthood exercised; Enoch, like Abel and the other Old Testament saints who looked for a Heavenly city, entered into God's rest. Gen 14v18-20, Heb 4v3, 11v1-40.

Enoch also exercised a full mature prophetic ministry, for he saw not only the glorious second coming of the Lord Jesus, but also His first coming, when God the Word would take upon Himself sinful flesh and become man (the One Who was the Promised Seed, Who would bruise the Serpent's head), His life and ministry and the Truth of the Cross, that His Lord was the Lamb of God Who taketh away the sin of the world, Who's soul would be made an offering for sin, when He descended into the Abyss, which is in the deepest part of Hades, where the evil angels who sinned in the time of Noah were imprisoned. It was in Tartaros where He would experience the "birth pangs of death" and after having been quickened in spirit, would proclaim as a herald His victory to those evil angels and then preach the Gospel to the rest of the dead in Hades. Then having crossed over the great gulf separating the two parts of Hades would preach the Truth to the Old Testament saints, who all received it, then He would take ALL those who had received the Truth into Heaven, as Eph 4v8 states, "He lead a multitude of captives." Enoch also had revealed to him, that he would be in the lineage of this Promised Seed, the One Who would be called "The Coming One," "Messiah." Gen 3v15, 6v1-8, Isaiah 53v7, Psalm 24 (all), Matt 11v3, Luke 3v23-38, John 1v29, Acts 2v23-28, Rom 10v7, 1Peter 3v18-20, 4v6, 2Pet 2v4, Jude v6,7,14,15.

Enoch, like Job, shone as a radiant light upon the earth during his lifetime, as a witness for his Lord.

Noah.

Noah was born in 2948 BC and died in 1998 BC (according to Ussher's dating) at the age of 950 years.

Ussher dates the Flood as 2349 BC (the Scriptures state that Noah was 600 years old when God sent the Flood upon the earth, Gen 7v6): God had given the inhabitants of the earth one hundred and twenty years to repent of their sin and so avert the judgement that He would bring upon the earth through the Flood. This would make the date of His decree of this judgement as stated in Gen 6v1-8 as 2469 BC and Noah 480 years old. When God made this decree in 2469 BC, already, for some hundreds of years many of the sons of God had left their first estate and proper habitation, having seen that the daughters of men were beautiful, came down to earth, made themselves giant human-like bodies and inhabited them and took for their wives the daughters of men and the children born to them were not inhabited by human souls, but by other evil spirits, like Goliath and his three brothers who were born to the giant in Gath. 2Sam 21v18-22. These evil angels leaving the heavenlies and taking upon themselves giant human-like bodies was part of the outworking of the Devil's plan of evil (the mystery of iniquity) and its main purpose was to corrupt ALL of mankind and bring them down to the same level of death and destruction as themselves, so that God would be forced to bring judgement upon the earth. And this, unfortunately, they succeeded in doing once again! These giants (translated in Gen 6v4 by the Hebrew word "nephil," (plural "nephilim"), (OT:5303), which means literally, "a feller," the Septuagint translates this Hebrew word by the Greek word, "gigantes"), because they are inhabited by evil spirits and not human souls, God says in Isaiah 26v14 that their memory would perish from the earth and that at the Resurrection they would not rise.

The Great Pyramids, consisting of Great Pyramid of Giza (also called the Pyramid of Khufu, built around 2560 BC (the dates cited here for the reigns of these Pharaohs and the building of the different pyramids are approximate)), the somewhat smaller Pyramid of Khafre (built about 2532 BC) and the relatively modest-sized Pyramid of Menkaure (built around 2472 BC), were all built within a period of a hundred years. (Djedefre ruled in the intervening years between Khufu and Khafre and Baka between Khafre and Menkaure, these Pharaohs were all part of the IV Dynasty, which had as its capital Memphis).

They were the places of burial for three successive generations of Pharaohs, Khufu (who reigned from 2589 BC to 2566 BC), his son Khafra (his reign was from 2558 BC to 2532 BC) and Khafra's son Menkaure (who reigned from 2490 BC to 2472 BC). The Great Sphinx of Giza (or, commonly, the Sphinx) was also built within this same one hundred year period that the three great Pyramids were built and it is the common consensus that the Sphinx was built by the Pharaoh Khafra during his reign. The Sphinx is the largest monolith statue in the world, standing 73.5 metres (241 ft) long, 6 metres (20 ft) wide, and 20.22 m (66.34 ft) high and is the oldest known monumental sculpture. The sides of all three of the Giza pyramids were astronomically oriented to be north-south and east-west within a small fraction of a degree.

Menkaure died one hundred and twenty three years before the flood. It has long been a mystery how these great structures were built, as researchers estimate that 2.3 million limestone blocks were used to alone build the Great Pyramid, with an average weight of about 2.5 metric tons per block, the largest block weighs as much as 15 metric tons. One possibility could be that the giants assisted in not only their construction but also in their design and materials used. It is also worth pointing out that these giants were inhabited by evil angels and **NOT** human souls, so their minds and intelligences were much greater than that of humans and certainly more than able to design and build such incredible structures like the Great Pyramids and Sphinx.

Noah ((OT:5143) which means "quiet" or "rest") was the great grandson of Enoch and as a child he was inspired and awed by the accounts of his ancestor Enoch's wonderful three hundred year walk with the Lord. This Truth that was handed down through four generations regarding the faith of his great grandfather Enoch brought Noah into a living relationship with the Lord early in his life, so that he was justified by faith and walked with God even before the Lord appeared to him one hundred and twenty years before the flood and showed him in vision that the whole earth would go into apostasy and that He would be forced to bring judgement upon the earth so as to stop the great suffering that man was inflicting upon man, due to every intent of the thoughts of his heart being only evil continually, resulting in the earth being filled with violence. Hab 2v4. When God appeared to him one hundred and twenty years before the flood and showed him that man would go into apostasy which would then force Him to bring judgement upon all of mankind because **ALL** flesh had corrupted their way upon the earth:

(NOTE: Gen 6v12 states "...all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth."

It does **NOT** say that man was "born astray" or "born in sin" **BUT that man corrupted him own way!** This is exactly the same Truth that the prophet Isaiah states in Isaiah 53v6 which says **"All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way..."** Man sins because he wants to **NOT** because he has to! **Ezek 18 (all)**

Noah believed this divine revelation and from that time onwards looked for a Heavenly City (and also understanding that he would be in the Messianic line, the Seed who would bruise the Serpents head, Gen 3v15), the Lord also taking him into the heavenly places and through his prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") he defeated and subdued the powers of darkness and occupied his heavenly inheritance, also manifesting God's Love and Power in the heavenlies and upon the earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit.

It states in Gen 6v9: "Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God."

Like his great grandfather, Enoch, Noah also shone as a bright light for his Lord, the Hebrew word for "perfect" is tamiym (OT:8549), which means entire, integrity and is the same word that is used to describe Job, Abraham and Jacob. Gen 17v1, 25v27, Job 1v8. Like Enoch, the Scriptures state that Noah walked with God and by his faith was pleasing to God. Heb 11v5,6. Peter tells use in 2Pet 2v5 that Noah was "a preacher of righteousness," "preacher" is in Greek "kerux" (NT:2783) (which is from "kerusso" (NT:2784) and means to proclaim as a herald. For one hundred and twenty years Noah by his life, actions and words told out to everybody he came in contact with, that unless they repented of their sin, God was surely going to bring judgement upon mankind because of their wickedness. However, all the people did was scoff at him and like as in the days immediately preceding the Lord's Second Coming, "they did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage," right up until the day that Noah entered the ark. Gen 5v22-24, Luke 3v36,37, Luke 17v26,27, 2Pet 3v3.

The question that arises is: How was Noah (and his family) able to go about their daily business and with the task of building the ark with the Nephilim and great wickedness upon the earth and not be hurt, harmed, injured or killed?

Firstly, God put a hedge of divine power around Noah, his family and all that he had like which was around Job and his family and household, so that the Devil (or any evil angel or wicked person) could not get anywhere near them. Job 1&2 (all) (esp. Job 1v10), Psalm 76v10.

Secondly, through his prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances."), Noah, like Christians during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, brought divine judgement upon any wicked persons who even remotely posed a threat to Noah and his

family by executing them with divine power. This in turn caused a real healthy fear off the Living God far and wide around Noah, which also had a restraining effect upon the wicked, because they knew that if they started entertaining evil thoughts about harming Noah and his family, God would show Noah, so that he would through his prayers bring judgement upon them. Dan 11v32, Luke 17v20-18v8.

The knowledge of what Noah was building and why he was building it went far and wide and the common consensus must have been that Noah and all his family were lacking in their mental faculties, however, Noah knew that God had appeared to him and shown him in vision that **ALL** the inhabitants (except Noah and his family) of the earth would go into apostasy and that He would be forced to destroy **ALL** life upon earth. It was this prophetic Truth that gave Noah and his family light in the time during the great darkness that was upon the earth during those one hundred and twenty years while the longsuffering of God waited ("Longsuffering" is the Lord's third Name as listed in Exodus 34v5-7), as it will be the correct interpretation of prophetic Truth that will also give light to Christians during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation. 1Pet 3v18-20, 2Pet 1v19. Noah followed all of God's instructions regarding the building of the ark, even as Moses followed the exact instructions given to him on Mount Sinai by God in the construction of the Tabernacle. Gen 6v22, Heb 3v5, 8v5. An important point that must be made here, is that God's great heart was broken by what action mankind, by their impenitence, was forcing upon Him to bring upon the earth; which was the destruction of **ALL** life (that is of man, animals, birds and insects), apart from Noah and his family. God has **NO** pleasure in the death of the wicked, but that **ALL** should come to a knowledge of the Truth and be saved. Hosea 11v1-11, 1Tim 2v4, 2Pet3v9.

The ark that Noah built was three hundred cubits long, fifty cubits wide and thirty cubits high and if we take the cubit (which was measured from the elbow to tip of the middle finger) as eighteen inches, the ark measured four hundred and fifty feet in length, seventy-five in breadth, and forty-five in height. However, if we take the cubit as being the "ancient" cubit, which was almost twenty two inches (21.888 inches), it would give the following measurements, five hundred and forty-seven feet long, ninety-one feet two inches wide and fifty-four feet eight inches high. Taking these second set of measurements, it has been calculated that the ark fully laden with all the animals, birds, insects, food etc, with Noah and his family would weigh over eighty thousand tons.

The time came at the end of the one hundred and twenty years, that God instructed Noah to gather the animals, birds and insects (by a divine command they actually came to Noah, Gen 6v20, 7v9) and that they, he and his family should enter the ark, with God shutting them in. The gathering of the animals, birds and insects took seven days to complete. Noah was six hundred years old when he entered the ark, the date of which Ussher gives as 2349 BC. Gen 7v11 and 8v14-16 states; **"In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened....And it came to pass in the six hundredth and first year...in the second month, on the seven and twentieth day of the month, was the earth dried.** And God spake unto Noah, saying, Go forth of the ark, thou, and thy wife, and thy sons, and thy sons' wives with thee." From this we can see that Noah and his family were in the ark for one (Hebrew "lunar") year and eleven days. (The months of the ancient Hebrews were lunar; the first six consisted of thirty days each, the latter six of twenty-nine, the whole twelve months making three hundred and fifty-four days: add to this eleven days, (for though he entered the ark the preceding year on the seventeenth day of the second month, he did not come out till the twenty-seventh of the same month in the following year,) which make exactly three hundred and sixty-five days, the period of a complete solar revolution). The months must be reckoned, not according to the Mosaic ecclesiastical year, which commenced in the spring, but according to the natural or civil year, which commenced in the autumn at the beginning of sowing time, or the autumnal equinox; so that the flood would be pouring upon the earth in October and November.

A few points about Noah and the Flood:

- 1) It was a worldwide flood and not just local. Gen 6v17, 7v11,12,17-23.
- 2) This is a true historical record of what actually happened at that time which was written by Moses under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, it is not some kind of story, myth or fiction, **BUT FACT**.

Note on the historicity of Noah's flood.

a) In different parts of Mesopotamia Professor Langdon of Oxford and Sir Leonard Woolley dug down to reach 8-11 feet of water-laid clay. To quote the latter's words "The flood which deposited it must have been of a magnitude unparalleled in local history. That it was so is further proved by the fact that the clay bank marks a definite break in the continuity of the local culture. A whole civilisation, which existed before it, is lacking above it, and seems to have been submerged by the waters. When we made these observations two months ago we were loath to believe that we had obtained confirmation of the deluge of Genesis, but there is no doubt of it now". It is strange that a scientist should be 'loath to believe' any fact! The sad truth is that the evolutionary theory is the unproved child of atheism, believed against the evidence because of a hatred for the truth, and a refusal to bow down before a living God.

b) All over the earth are caves on the tops of mountains over 1000 feet high which are filled with the bones of men and animals which entered them in a mad rush from engulfing waters, and were dashed together in inextricable confusion.

- c) A whole Creation of Palaeolithic men and animals all over the earth was wiped out, and succeeded by one which was completely different.
- d) Huge boulders are found, which have been carried hundreds of miles from the place where they originated, as only vast masses of water could have accomplished.
- e) There are also hills, e.g. in Norway, of fresh and sea water shells, mixed up together and yet unbroken. Only water could have raised them so gently for so many miles.
- f) In Europe, the American continent, Africa, India, China and even Australia there are enormous tracts of gravel and mud, such as only a tremendous flood could have carried and deposited, the one above the other.
- g) Around 2200 BC there was widespread drought around the world for many years, so it would seem that this event was the result of the Flood in Noah's day.

3) Noah is also referred to by the Lord in Ezek 14v14,20 along with the great Old Testament saints Daniel and Job and by the Lord Jesus during His earthly ministry in the New Testament in Matt 24v37,38, Luke 17v26,27, by Paul in Heb v7 and Peter in 1Pet 3v20 and 2Pet 2v5. It should be noted that the two references to Noah in the New Testament by the Lord Jesus is in reference to the period known as the Great Tribulation, His Second Coming and the antediluvian conditions upon the earth at that time.

So, "The Age of Forbearance" ends with Noah, his wife and sons and their wives coming out of the ark. Gen 8v14-19.

The Age Of Stern Justice.

In this age God leaves man to live in memory of a fearful punishment, and gives them a law against murder. During this age the rebellion at Babel occurred with God confusing the language of all the earth; and from there the Lord scattered them abroad over the face of all the earth. This period ends with the call of Abraham by God. Scripture Period: Gen 8v20 to 11v25.

After the Flood there is little recorded about Noah and what is, is not very flattering. However, Noah through his prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") certainly shaped the lives of his descendents and the nations that they formed. Gen 10v1-32, 11v26. Noah died in 1998 BC at the age of nine hundred and fifty years, two years before the birth of Abram in 1996 BC.

Whatever lessons we can learn in the Bible from the Pre-Adamic Ages of the earth had to be learned afresh by Adam and his progeny, for no account of the ruined past was available to them. But history repeated itself, and the sin of Cain spread such violence through the earth that once again the Lord was forced to destroy man because of his wickedness by sending a flood, which swept away all traces of any civilizations. Yet even after such a tremendous lesson and the kindly promises (the rainbow in the clouds after a rain shower and the one that is around the Throne of God in Heaven, speaks of God's faithfulness in fulfilling His promises. Gen 9v11-17, Rev 4v3) and warnings of God to Noah and his family, a corrupt society again rose up. Men preferred their own handiwork to the loving provision of the Almighty, and simple country life degenerated into the dangerous pleasures of city life, which proved so alluring that not even the memories of the flood were sufficient to deter men from their selfishness and cruelty. They built the Tower of Babel to reach unto Heaven and so save themselves from another flood, and God was obliged (by the confusion of tongues, Gen 11v1-9) to separate them into mutually hostile camps lest together they should exceed in evil. Thus it again became apparent that men could turn a Paradise into a nightmare of fear and cruelty, if they so desired, and that free will had its dangers.

It was also made plain that sin not only destroyed our neighbour's happiness but also our own. For by slaying Abel, Cain raised up the antagonism of all around, who felt unsafe so long as he was alive. It was actually God who had to protect him from his neighbours (Gen 4v15). Thus began, and developed into full growth after Babel, that system of mutual fear and antagonism, which has ever since dominated society, and threatens today to put an end to human existence. It also became clear that even the most dramatic and fearful punishment was not sufficient to keep men from sin. The Flood exhausted the possibilities of that sort of intervention on the part of God, and left a big question-mark in the world. Could anything be done by the Lord sufficient to overcome the attractions of selfishness? There arose, however, two other small lights in the world at this time in spite of the surrounding gloom. If the serpent of Genesis 3 had wrought such havoc, it should not last for ever. The seed of the woman should trample the serpent to death, though not without suffering to Himself. And to Enoch was given the wonderful hope that the God who had been, as it were, chased out of the Garden, should one day return to it, and have the delight of fellowship with His Creatures after He had finally destroyed the wicked. (Jude v14,15)

The confusion of tongues marked the end of God's endeavour to deal with mankind as a whole, and for many years it seemed as if He had given up all hope of the earth, and had left men to go their own way and sink into greater and yet greater darkness.

It must be noted that the incident of the confusion of tongues at Babel and the subsequent scattering of all the peoples over the whole earth is also documented by other historians and cultures, which shows that these two events DID indeed happen.

Jamieson, Fausset & Brown's commentary makes the following remark on Gen 10v10 on the confusion of tongues at Babel:

"Besides, the Mosaic record of this memorable occurrence is confirmed by a variety of independent testimonies. The account of Berossus, the Chaldean historian, is substantially the same as that of Moses, as also is the Hindu tradition, according to Sir William Jones. The Egyptian monuments attest the fact of the dispersion at Shinar (Osburn's 'Egypt and her Testimony'), and the cuneiform inscriptions speak of Chaldea or Babylonia as 'the land of tongues' (Fox Talbot). The most eminent ethnologists also have come to this conclusion. 'There is the greatest probability that the human race, no less than their language, go back to one common stock-to a first man-and not to several, dispersed in different parts of the world. And it is asserted, with the greatest confidence, that from an extensive examination of languages, the separation among mankind is shown to have been violent; not, indeed, that they voluntarily changed their language, but that they were rudely and suddenly (brusquement) divided from one another' (Wiseman's 'Lectures'). And Sir H. Rawlinson ('Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society,' xv., p. 232) says, that 'if we were guided by the mere intersection of linguistic paths, and independently of all reference to the Scriptural record, we should be led to fix on the plains of Shinar as the focus from which the various lines had radiated.'" End of quote.

From when the confusion of tongues occurred and the scattering of the peoples abroad over the face of the earth (which Ussher dates as 2247 BC) to the call of Abraham by the Lord in 1922 BC a period of around three hundred and twenty five years passed. During this time, apart from Noah, two other great Old Testament saints lived, Melchizedek (whom will be discussed in the next age, "The Age Of Promise") and Job.

The times put forward as to when Job lived upon the earth vary greatly, but the most lightly time is around 2100 – 2000 BC, as his age at death is "patriarchal." The Hebrew text states in Job 42v16, "After this lived Job an hundred and forty years..." and the Septuagint reads, "And Job lived after his affliction a hundred and seventy years: and all the years he lived were two hundred and forty." So, taking either the Hebrew or the Septuagint text, he lived to be a great age, certainly greater than that of Abraham. (1996 BC to 1821 BC, 175 years)

In the very first verse of the book of Job, it states, "There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; **and that man was perfect and upright, and one that feared God, and eschewed evil.**" God, Who knows the heart and mind of every one of His living free will beings, adds (in Job 1v8) to this witness of those who knew or had contact with Job, **"that there is none like him in the earth!"**

Job was another one of God's great Old Testament saints who shone brightly for the Lord. Job did not need to preach to those around him to witness for His Lord, but simply by his good deeds did He bring glory to His Lord and reveal His beautiful character, Job's walk with His Lord brought "flavour" and "seasoning" to all he met and everywhere he went. Job 29v12-16, Matt 5v13-16. His walk with the Lord was sustained by his communion with Him and through his prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.")), he rose up with His Lord into the heavenly places, conquering and subduing the powers of darkness and thus occupying his heavenly inheritance and manifesting God's Power and Love in the heavenlies and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit, thus entering into God's rest. Job 1v5, 16v17, 42v8, Eph 6v12, Heb 4v3, 11v6.

Job, by divine revelation, was fully aware of the incarnation of His Lord, His life, ministry, death upon the Cross, descent into Hades, His preaching of the Gospel to all its inhabitants (including himself) of that place and leading all of those who received the Truth, out of Hades and into Heaven in a triumphal procession. Job looked for a Heavenly City and not an earthly inheritance. Job 10v21,22, 19v25,27, Psalm 16v8-11, 24 (all), Rom 10v7, Eph 4v8-10, Heb 11v16,39,40, 1Pet 3v18-20, 4v6.

Many people, believers and unbelievers alike, find it hard to accept that this great Old Testament saint actually lived, however, live, he certainly did, as he is referred to elsewhere in the Scriptures, in Ezek 14v14,20 the Living God Himself states: "Though these three men, **Noah, Daniel, and Job**, were in it, they should deliver but their own souls by their righteousness, saith the Lord God... Though **Noah, Daniel, and Job**, were in it, as I live, saith the Lord God, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter; they shall but deliver their own souls by their righteousness." He is also referred to in James 5v11, by James, the Lord's half brother, where it states: "Behold, we count them happy which endure. **Ye have heard of the patience of Job**, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy." Even to the worldling, the patience of Job is not only known, but legendary!

We can see God's opinion of Job in Job 1v8, which states: "...that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil." Yet, although Noah, Melchizedek and Abraham all lived at some point during the lifetime of Job, at no time did God give such a glowing report to any off them like that which He gave unto Job and this wonderful report was before God let the Devil sift him at wheat, **NOT** afterwards. The question that is always

asked and very rarely answered about Job is: Why did God let the Devil sift him as wheat? The answer was quite simply to remove any chaff that was in him and to perfect his faith, patience and character. The sifting of Peter by the Devil produced a new humble and lowly minded Peter, which meant he knew an anointing greater than any of the other apostles! Luke 22v24-34, Acts 2v1-47, 5v14-16, James 1v2-4,12, 5v11, 1Pet 1v6-9.

This brings The Age Of Stern Justice to a close.

The Age Of Promise.

The Age Of Promise, in which God ceases to deal with all mankind, and gives a glorious promise of universal blessing through a single family (Abraham and his seed) in response to faith. Gal 3v6-9. This is ended by a family, now grown to a nation, forgetting and neglecting these promises, where upon the Lord gives them the Law. Scripture Period: Gen 11v26 (with Acts 7v1-3) to Exodus 19v1,8.

The History Of Melchizedek And The Melchizedek Priesthood.

The Order Of Melchizedek. (Heb 7-10)

It is amazing to find that "the order of Melchizedek" of which Christ is High Priest, was instituted long before the Aaronic Priesthood, but so far as we know, was not in operation until Christ Jesus revived it after the resurrection. (However, although the Melchizedek Priesthood was not in operation after it died out after the death of Melchizedek, God was not without a Melchizedek type priesthood which He could use not only to bring His Power, Presence and Love to His saints but also to a needy world and also to act as a restraint upon the powers of darkness, the wicked and wickedness upon the earth. This type of Priesthood was seen and realised through the calling of Abraham (the beginning of the Age of Promise) and his (spiritual) seed, i.e. all those who would follow his example of faith, spiritual walk and obedience and seek a heavenly inheritance; those who would rise up with their Lord, the preincarnate Christ, into the heavenlies to conquer and subdue the Devil and the powers of darkness so as to occupy their Heavenly Canaan through their prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") and manifesting the gifts of the Holy Spirit not only in the heavenlies but also upon earth so as to enter God's promised rest, during not only the Age of Promise, but also during the Age of Law. Gen 22v18, Exodus 19v6, Heb 4v1-3, 11v8-40). Genesis 14v18-24 should be read together with John 8v56, Luke 22v19,20, Psalm 110v4. Hebrews 7 and 8 are taken up with showing the shortcomings of the Aaronic Priesthood, which necessitated a better one being raised up. The Melchizedek priesthood is eternal, the Aaronic priesthood was a temporary part of the Law. We read in Heb 8v13, "In speaking of "a new covenant," he has made the first one obsolete. And what is obsolete and growing old will soon disappear." (NRSV)

Hebrews 9 and 10 point out that, although the old Law and Priesthood were insufficient, yet, as coming events cast their shadows before, so all the details of the old were typical of the good things to come in the new. In asking the Jewish Christians to give up the Temple and its Aaronic God-ordained ministry of Priests and Levites and sacrifices, Paul (the writer of the Epistle to the Hebrews) is careful to point out not only the ineffectiveness of the Old Covenant, Acts 13v39, 15v10, Gal 2v16 Rom 8v4; but also the vast superiority of the Christian Priesthood, which resumed the Melchizedek order, so that they might be willing to exchange the Jewish shadow for the Christian substance. Rev 14v17, 15v5,8.

It is amazing that the Melchizedek order, like all the Christian Blessings, went back to Pre-Jewish Days (e.g. Justification by faith etc., Hab 2v4, Rom 4v1-3) and here in Gen 14v18-24 the Christian breaking of bread is seen to date back to the days of Abraham. Both Melchizedek and Abraham must have known the significance of the bread and wine. Possibly it was at this very meeting when Abraham was tempted to fall as Lot did, into close and profitable fellowship with the king of Sodom (Gen 19v1) that John 8v56 was fulfilled and Abraham had explained to him the coming sacrifice of God's Son at Calvary and His resurrection. If so, then Heb 11v17-19 receives fresh light. The God who was going to raise His own Son from the dead after he was killed by evil men, could also raise Isaac! Abraham's meeting with Melchizedek was no chance meeting. Melchizedek came to strengthen Abraham in an hour of trial. The fact that Abraham gave him tithes shows that he recognised his superior authority and dignity. He was received by Abraham as the messenger of the most High God.

Lot who had already moved towards Sodom for the sake of earthly prosperity and had been shown that he would be safer with Abraham, now adds this terrible sin of accepting what Abraham had just refused. When we next come across him he is in an official position in Sodom in spite of his dislike for their dreadful ways. So he ruined his wife and family and ended up in abject fear in a cave! Gen 19, 2Pet 2v7. The admonition and exposition of Melchizedek found no lodging place in his heart. How deep and grievous was the breach between uncle and nephew is seen by the fact that Abraham, when praying for Sodom, never took his appeal below ten souls, and never mentioned Lot's name to the Lord. So far as we know the breach was final and irremediable. If Abraham is a type of the over comer, Lot certainly reminds us of those who suffer loss and are saved through fire. 1Cor 3.

Theologians have found it difficult to decide who Melchizedek was or what the description of Heb 7v2,3 means.

Three main theories are held:-

- a) That it was Christ Himself: but it is difficult to believe that he lived on earth as king of Salem.
- b) That it was an angelic being who was sent upon earth by God as a kind of counter blast to Satan's wicked angels.
- c) That he was a man, about whom the Scriptures left out all details, and made him in this way a type of Christ. We see that Heb 7v3, could then mean, that Melchizedek was, a mere nobody of whose birth and death no one was sufficiently interested to leave any record. We can imagine a godly king being as despised in those days as he might be now.

Salem means "peaceful." It is the name of a place linked with Melchizedek as its king. Gen 14v18, Heb 7v1,2. See Psalm 76v2. The main identification of Salem according to Jewish commentators, from Onkelos (Targum) and Josephus (War, 6, 10; Ant. 1, 10, 2; 7); is that Salem is Jerusalem, on the ground that in Psalm 76v2, Jerusalem is so called. However, the Samaritans have always identified Salem with Salim, East of Nablus. Jerome states without hesitation, though he was apparently alone in his belief, that the Salem of Melchizedek was not Jerusalem, but a town near Scythopolis, which in his day was still called Salem, and where the vast ruins of the palace of Melchizedek were still to be seen. There can be no doubt that a Salem existed where Jerome places it, for a Salem is mentioned in Judith 4v4, among the places which were seized and fortified by the Jews on the approach of "The valley of Salem," as it appears in the Apocrypha, this Salem must surely be that mentioned by Jerome.

"Without father, without mother, without genealogy," Heb 7v3, Greek, "apator, ameter, agenealogetos." There is no record concerning his parentage, or his genealogy. This indicates a totally different type of priesthood from the Levitical, in which genealogy was most important. No one could exercise priestly functions who was not of the lineage of Aaron. The phrase, "Having neither beginning of days nor end of life," does not mean that he was a miraculous being, without birth or death, it probably means that history is silent concerning his birth and death. This could mean that the pedigree of Melchizedek was of no consequence, and his parentage did not count in any way, and so they never troubled to keep a genealogy. In this way he would be like our Melchizedek, the Lord Jesus, whose parents were nobodies and whose occupation was despised. All priests of this Melchizedek Order seem to be despised and rejected by worldly people. When Jesus became High Priest of this order by being raised by God His Father from the dead, He created a heavenly Brotherhood of the Kings and Priests of the Most High God.

Although there is very little written in the Scriptures about Melchizedek, what is written speaks volumes, Gen 14v18-24 states:

"And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abraham of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth: And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all. And the king of Sodom said unto Abraham, Give me the persons, and take the goods to thyself. And Abraham said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand unto the Lord, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth, That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet, and that I will not take any thing that is thine, lest thou shouldest say, I have made Abraham rich: Save only that which the young men have eaten, and the portion of the men which went with me, Aner, Eshcol, and Mamre; let them take their portion."

Archbishop Ussher dates Abraham's meeting with Melchizedek as 1912 BC (with Abraham's (meaning "exalted father") original call to come out of Ur of the Chaldeans in 1922 BC (his birth was 1996 BC), so when he met Melchizedek at the valley of Shaveh (later called the King's valley or dale, where Absalom built a pillar to himself, probably by brook Kidron near Jerusalem, 2Sam 18v18), he was about 84 years old and had been a believer in the Most High God, El Shaddai (Exodus 6v3), for about ten years. Also note that the great Old Testament saint Job would also have most probably been alive at this time. (Job 42v16, the Septuagint for this verse reads, "And Job lived after his affliction a hundred and seventy years: and all the years he lived were two hundred and forty: and Job saw his sons and his sons' sons, the fourth generation"). It states in Gen 14v19 that "he (Melchizedek) blessed him (Abraham);" this was not mere words spoken by Melchizedek but real impartation of divine power and spirit, for Paul tells us in Heb 7v6,7:

"But he whose descent is not counted from them received tithes of Abraham, **and blessed him that had the promises.** And without all contradiction **the less is blessed of the better.**"

This impartation of divine power and spirit by Melchizedek upon Abraham was exactly the same thing that Paul was longing to do with the saints in Rome when he visited them; Melchizedek imparted a spiritual ministry gift to Abraham for the purpose of strengthening and establishing him. Rom 1v11.

It was because of this blessing that we read immediately after the account of Gen 14v18-24 in Gen 15v1:

"After these things the word of the Lord came unto Abraham in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abraham: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward..."

The Lord (the pre-incarnate Christ, not only the Sent One (The Angel of The Lord, Heb "Yahweh Malak", Exodus 3v2,4,14, Isaiah 48v12-16, Zech 2v8-11, Mal 3v1, John 8v58) under the New Covenant, but also the Sent One under the Old Covenant as well, John 3v17) appears to Abraham in a vision and makes a Covenant with him saying:

"...Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: The Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites."

This visitation by Yahweh Jesus to Abraham was for the purpose of "strengthening his faith;" Rom 4v20 states:

"And at the promise of God did not stagger in unbelief, **but was strengthened in faith,** having given glory to God." (Young's Literal Translation)

"Was strengthened" is in the "passive voice" which indicates that it was this visitation by God that strengthened Abraham's faith, as Rom 4v3 (with Gen 15v6) states:

"For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness."

Genesis 15 was not the only time when Yahweh Jesus (and angels) visited Abraham and Sarah for the purpose of strengthening their faith (when it had failed with the passage of time), see also Genesis chapters 17 and 18.

In Gen 14v20, Melchizedek states:

"And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all."

Melchizedek was fully aware that it had been God and God alone Who had given Abraham victory over the four kings. One of these four kings was Amraphel king of Shinar (Babylon), who has been identified as the great king and renowned law-maker Hammurabi, whose "Hammurabi Code" was a landmark in history, for it not only stated legal rights and responsibilities, it also fixed the rates of wages. There was also the great and famous Chedorlaomer king of Elam, and Arioch king of Ellasar (Larsa), and Tidal king of Goiim, usually rendered as "nations." Gen 14v9,17.

Melchizedek was the one who had made "interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), 1Tim 2v1, which means "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") in the Heavenly places against the Devil and the powers of darkness; he had manifested divine power in the Heavens through the gifts of the Holy Spirit defeating the evil principalities and powers behind these four kings so that their power, strength and protection had been completely removed, so that when they went out to fight against Abraham they were unable to stand against him, and were routed by him. Melchizedek (and the priests of the Melchizedek order), like Abraham, also looked for a Heavenly city and like Elijah the prophet stood before the Throne of God in spirit. Melchizedek and the priests of the Melchizedek order were the real defence of Salem and the effects of the "interventions with power" made by them was felt far and wide around the middle east and beyond. It is also worthy of note that one of the most important functions of Melchizedek and the priesthood was to make "interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), 1Tim 2v1) in the heavens, manifesting God's great power against the powers of darkness and also against the wicked upon earth so that they actively restrained the powers of darkness, wicked people and wickedness in the world. This ministry is also operated by the New Testament Melchizedek priesthood throughout the whole of the Age of Grace and will have a vital place during the last seven years of this age and especially during the last three and a half years, which is the period known as the Great Tribulation, when the Devil and his angels will have been cast out of the heavens into the earth and God's restraint is removed completely from them, with the result that the manifestation of evil in the world will be greatly multiplied overnight. It will be the responsibility of the Melchizedek priesthood to actively restrain the powers of darkness and wicked people in the world during the Great Tribulation so that the world is not totally destroyed before the Lord Jesus comes immediately after that three and a half year period. 1Kings 17v1, Dan 11v32, Matt 24v12,21,22, Luke 18v1-8, Acts 5v1-11, 12v20-24, 13v4-12, Eph 6v10-20, 2Thess 2v1-12, 1Tim 2v1-9, Heb 11v13-16,39,40, Rev 7v14, 11v3-6, 12v7-14.

The priestly ministry operated and fulfilled by Melchizedek and the priests of this priesthood is exactly the same as that which Christ calls each believer in Him to exercise and fulfil; that is to rise up with Him into the Heavenly places and to defeat and subdue the powers of darkness through their prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances."), by binding the strongman and then to live in and occupy the Heavenly places in Christ, manifesting His power and love in the Heavens through the gifts of the Holy Spirit and being a blessing to the other members of the Family of God and the world about them; being watchful to the end that they do not become lazy and slothful, so that they are overcome by the giants in their Heavenly

Canaan and are then expelled from it, like the Israelites of old. Judges 2v11-23, Deut 28v44, John 3v13, 17v24, 1Cor 12v7-11, Col 3v1,2, Heb 2v4, 1Pet 2v1-9, Rev 1v6 (RSV), 5v10.

The Lord Jesus was a prophet like unto Moses and also a priest like unto Melchizedek; Melchizedek (although called a priest in the Scriptures, also had a full prophetic ministry, even as Abraham had, Psalm 105v9,10,15) had the same kind of spiritual walk and communion with Yahweh (the pre-incarnate Christ) that both the Lord Jesus and Moses enjoyed with God. Melchizedek had a Christ like character, he was meek and lowly and although a king, was completely devoid of all pride and love of power, position and wealth. Like the Lord Jesus during both His earthly and heavenly High Priestly ministry, Melchizedek was also a servant (Greek, "doulos" (NT:1401)) of all. One of the most important responsibilities of the Lord Jesus was to inspire His apostles and disciples to desire their own ministries and to then to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which has the same meaning as "entugchano" (NT:1793), "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") them into that ministry and this was also the case with Melchizedek. He also had the great responsibility of firstly inspiring the citizens of Salem (and any others who thirsted after the Living God) to desire to become priests in the order of Melchizedek and then to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) them through so that they entered into the heavenlies, conquered and subdued the powers of darkness through their prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") and occupied their heavenly inheritance, so that they manifested God's power and spiritual gifts in the heavenly places and became channels of God's Love and Power in the world so that they might be a blessing to those around them. Like the Lord Jesus, Melchizedek was not content until each priest had entered into God's promised rest. Melchizedek, like Paul and Jesus, was able to watch other believers (including Abraham, whom he had watched on different occasions and prayed for) in prophetic vision and pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) them through their difficulties by both strengthening them and changing their circumstances, this in turn had the result of perfecting the character, faith and patience of those whom he was praying for. Exodus 3v14,15, Deut 18v15-22, Psalm 110v4, Matt 4v19, 10v1-4, 20v20-28, Luke 22v24-27,31-34, John 8v58, 13v1-17, Acts 1v12-26, 3v22, 7v37, Rom 5v1-5, Eph 6v10-20, Col 2v1-5, Heb 4v1-10, 5v6,10, 7v17,21, 1Per 1v3-9.

Justification, since the time of the fall of Adam, has always been by faith, so Melchizedek and the priests of the Melchizedek order were all, like Abraham, justified by faith in the Living God. All Christians receive a definite call from their Lord to rise up with Him into their Heavenly Canaan to conquer, subdue and inhabit it, i.e., to act as priests with their Great High Priest, the Lord Jesus, by making "interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) in the Heavenlies to bind the strong man so that God's will is done upon earth and that they are a blessing to other Christians and the world about them. However many Christians, like the Israelites of old, when they hear this call prefer to disobey it and play it safe by staying in the Wilderness and indeed some of these do not even remain in the Wilderness but "return to Egypt" i.e., they die spiritually again and so become "twice dead." Even so the Melchizedek priesthood was made up of the inhabitants of Salem (and possibly from elsewhere) who thirsted after the Living God and who desired to be channels of His Power and Love in world. Just because they were inhabitants of Salem, they were not automatically members of the Melchizedek priesthood, there had to be a deep desire in them for this and a divine call to them from the Living God that they might then enter this priesthood, which performed the very same function in the world as the Melchizedek priesthood does under the New Covenant with the Great High Priest, the Lord Jesus at its Head; i.e., to be channels for God's Love and Power in the world. There is no mention that there was any kind of Temple at Salem for the Most High God and we see the informality of the meeting between Abraham and Melchizedek when they come together to worship the Living God and to thank Him for the great victory that He had given to Abraham. This kind of informal fellowship meeting is exactly the same as that practised by the Lord Jesus and His Apostles which was also carried on by the early Church in every part of the (Roman) world where the Name of the Lord Jesus was called upon right up until 313 AD when Constantine issued the Edict Of Milan (Toleration). It was this kind of informal fellowship meeting that enabled the Church to have continual revival right from the time that Christ started preaching the Gospel in late 26 AD/early 27 AD right up until 313 AD, at which time with the issue of the Edict of Milan, Constantine heaped wealth, power, position and prosperity upon the Church (It should be noted that it was the Devil that was energising Constantine, who was the sixth head of the Beast, to issue the Edict of Milan), which resulted in its loss of God's Presence and Power; which was the very same thing that happened to the Church at Laodicea. With the issue of the Edict of Milan, the Church started trusting in their new found wealth, power and prosperity, which meant that they stopped seeking the Lord Jesus for His plans and purposes and His Presence and Power to carry them out. And so it is to this very day that the vast majority of Christians still think that they need money, political power and wealth to preach the Gospel instead of seeking their Lord for his Presence and Power so that they might preach the Gospel with the Holy Spirit sent down from Heaven having it confirmed by mighty signs, wonders and miracles. Num 13v1-14v38, Psalm 42v1,2, Dan 4v30, Matt 6v9,10, 18v18-20, Mark 3v27, Luke 22v14-38, John chapters 13-17, Acts 2v16-21,26, Rom 15v18-21, 1Cor 11v17-14v40, Eph 2v1-3, Heb 2v1-4, 3v7-11 (with Psalm 95v7-11),16-19, 4v10, 7v25, 10v38, 11v1-40, 1Pet 1v10-12, 2v1-10, 2Pet 2v18-22, Jude 12, Rev 3v14-22, Rev 13v2, 17v10.

The reason for the demise of the Melchizedek priesthood in the period of time following Abraham's meeting with Melchizedek is quite simple; the kings and leaders of Salem failed to seek the Living God for a priestly ministry like their predecessor Melchizedek had had and also all the inhabitants of Salem also stopped seeking the Living God and desiring to be priests of the Most High God. (It should also be remembered that, like Christ's, Melchizedek's priestly ministry was untransferable, Heb 7v24). This resulted in ALL the inhabitants of Salem backsliding and going into apostasy which also

resulted in ALL of God's protection being completely removed, so that without man-made fortifications they became completely defenceless, with the result that the surrounding nations of Canaan would certainly have attacked them. A recent archaeological dig in Jerusalem discovered a twenty six foot high wall, which had been built by the Canaanite inhabitants and is dated around 1700 BC, which was a structure to protect the city's water supply and is described as the region's earliest fortifications. With the removal of God's protection from them because of their apostasy, did the inhabitants of Salem build large fortifications to protect themselves against the danger from the surrounding nations? We don't read in Genesis 14 of what (if any) man-made fortifications Salem had. The next time we read in the Scriptures about Salem (after the meeting of Abraham with Melchizedek) is in Joshua chapter 10 (see v1,5), which took place in 1451 BC, it had been renamed Jerusalem (which signifies "a peaceful possession" or "a vision of peace") and was ruled by an Amorite, king Adoni-zedek (which means "lord of righteousness" and is synonymous with Melchizedek, "king of righteousness"), which was a title of the Jebusite kings. Adoni-zedek was most probably a distant descendant of Melchizedek, for it is difficult to see how Jerusalem had been conquered by the surrounding Canaanite nations and then the conquering king discarding his title and name and taking the name and title of the king whom he has conquered. Jerusalem is also mentioned in the Amarna letters which were written in the 14th century BC. (The Amarna letters (sometimes "Amarna correspondence" or "Amarna tablets") are an archive of correspondence on clay tablets, mostly diplomatic, between the Egyptian administration and its representatives in Canaan and Amurru during the New Kingdom. They are an important record of Egypt during a period of 15 to 30 years during the later part of Amenophis III's (1391-1353 BC) rule and the rule of Akhenaten (1353-1336 BC). The letters were found in Upper Egypt at Amarna, the modern name for the Egyptian capital of Akhetaten, founded by Pharaoh Akhenaten (1356 - 1336 BC) during the Eighteenth dynasty of Egypt. The Amarna letters are unusual in Egyptological research, being mostly written in Akkadian cuneiform, the writing system of ancient Mesopotamia rather than ancient Egypt.)

Seeing Is Believing!

The question that needs to be asked is, "what was revealed to both Abraham and Melchizedek at their informal fellowship meeting at the Valley of Shaveh in Gen 14v18-24?"

Previous to their meeting, God had shown Melchizedek the eventual demise of the Melchizedek priesthood because after his death no other person would arise as king of Salem who would thirst for the Living God and follow Melchizedek's example and seek the same kind of prophetic and priestly ministry that he had had. Because of this the great "interventions with power" (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), "proseuche" (NT:4335)) which Melchizedek had continually made were no longer happening, with the result that the Melchizedek priesthood would eventually die out and all the inhabitants backslide and go into apostasy. This is seen from what God says to Abraham in Gen 15v16:

"But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full."

Or as the New Living Translation" puts it:

"After four generations your descendants will return here to this land, for the sins of the Amorites do not yet warrant their destruction."

The presence and prayers ("interventions with power" (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of Melchizedek and the priesthood in the land of Canaan hindered the slide of the surrounding nations from going speedily into apostasy and it was only after the death of Melchizedek that the decline started to speed up and then with the complete disappearance of the Melchizedek priesthood the progression to total apostasy (Note: "full iniquity" means "full disease," i.e., complete defilement of the flesh with even children being born with "social diseases", this is when God is forced to bring judgement upon such a people) progressed rapidly. The revelation from God of the complete demise of the Melchizedek priesthood after his death caused Melchizedek (and the priesthood) great sorrow! Gen 15v16, Prov 14v34, Matt 5v13-16, 1Tim 2v1-8, Jude v7,8.

Before this incident in Gen 14v18-24, Melchizedek had already been shown the Cross of Christ, but not in full detail. It was at this informal meeting with Abraham that God showed Melchizedek that the "Promised Seed" of Abraham in Whom all the nations would be blessed was none other than the Lord of Glory Himself (emptied). That He would be born veiled in human flesh, the same kind of flesh that he himself had and would live a life of obscurity being despised and rejected of men because of His beautiful character and godly life which revealed their sin and darkness of being. He also saw that it was during this time of obscurity that He would be prepared for both His earthly and heavenly ministries and that His earthly ministry would surpass any other that had or ever would be sent forth by God. God also had shown Melchizedek that His earthly ministry would end with His horrific death upon the Cross (which type of death would have been unknown to him, as it was many centuries later (around the 6th century BC) that the Persians first used it and it was eventually adopted and used by the Romans) and then the most horrific suffering would then ensue when He would loose both His spirit (which would return to God) and His body (which would lie in the tomb for three days and three nights) and His soul would descend into Tartaros (the deepest part of the Abyss) where He would suffer the (birth) pangs of death (a torment of soul that was equivalent to the worst pain suffered in child birth). It was there in the Abyss where His soul would be made an offering for

his sin and the sin off the world, that would result in the making of atonement and his (and the world's) redemption purchased. After atonement had been made, God would then quicken Him in spirit (i.e. give Him back His spirit that He had lost at His death) at which time He would proclaim as a herald His victory over sin, death and Hades to the evil angels that had been disobedient in the days of Noah, having left their first estate, created giant human like bodies (which they were not, because they were not inhabited by human souls but became the habitation of other evil angels) and mingled with the daughters of the sons of men to whom the children born were also inhabited by other evil angels. After He declared His victory to these evil spirits in prison, He then preached the Gospel to ALL the inhabitants of Hades, this included ALL the Old Testament saints and the ignorant and wicked dead (NOTE: It was after death that the Old Testament saints got saved). After this God would raise Him out from amongst the dead, giving Him back His earthly body, at which time He would lead ALL of those in Hades who had accepted the Truth which He had preached, into Heaven. Melchizedek also saw that it was on the day of His Resurrection that His High Priestly ministry would start and that the Melchizedek priesthood would be reinstated, this time with an exceedingly great glory and ministrations of the Holy Spirit. Gen 6v1-12, 12v3, Psalm 2v7, 16v8-11, 24 (all), 22v16,17, 110 (all), Eccl 12v7, Isaiah 26v14, 49v2, 53v3,9,10, Jer 31v31-34, Hosea 6v2, Joel 2v28-32, Jonah 1v17, Zech 12v10, Matt 12v40, Luke 23v46, John 1v10, 3v19,20, 20v17, Acts 2v16-21, Rom 10v7, 2Cor 3v1-18, Gal 3v8, Phil 2v5-11, Heb 2v15-18, 4v15, 5v5,6,8-10, 1Pet 3v18-22, 4v6, 2Pet 2v4, Jude v6,7, Rev 1v7.

The question that arises is; with no more priests arising with the same kind of priestly and prophetic ministries like Melchizedek had and the demise of the Melchizedek priesthood, to whom was God going to raise up and use in their place, who could God use to be channels for His Love and Power to a needy world? Well, the answer is quite simple; God in His wonderful foreknowledge had already known from before the foundation of the world of the eventual demise of the Melchizedek priesthood after the death of Melchizedek, so in 1922 BC, God called Abraham out of Ur of the Chaldeans, Acts 7v2-4 states:

"And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken; The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee. Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran..."

However, Abraham's kindred came with him and they dwelt in Haran until 1921 BC when Terah, Abraham's father died, after which the Lord spoke again to Abraham, Gen 12v1-3 (with Acts 7v4,5) states:

"...Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed."

Abraham was obedient to this call and journeyed to the land of Canaan and it was here in the land of Canaan that God prepared Abraham for his priestly and prophetic ministries that would see him and his spiritual seed in the coming centuries being the replacement for Melchizedek and the Melchizedek priesthood as channels for God's Love and Power into the world. The spiritual seed of Abraham would be those justified by faith and who were seeking a Heavenly City, just as Abraham was, those who would rise up with Yahweh (Jesus), fight their way into the heavenly places, conquer and subdue the powers of darkness and occupy their heavenly Canaan; manifesting God's Love and Power in the heavenlies and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit, bringing healing, deliverance and blessing to a needy world and people of God through their prayers. (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") This kind of priestly ministry, which Paul refers to as "God's rest" in Hebrews chapters 3 and 4 (see esp. Heb 4v3), was available in God right from the time when He had finished re-adorning the creation in the time of Adam and Eve and was participated in by Abel, Enoch and Noah (and perhaps others) before the flood. Some of those who would join Abraham in this wonderful priestly ministry would be Sarah, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph and many others, both in the Age of Promise (God ceases to deal with all mankind (as He had done in the Age of Stern Justice) and gives a glorious promise of universal blessing through Abraham and his in response to faith. Gal 3v6-9. This is ended by a family, now grown to a nation, forgetting and neglecting these promises, where upon the Lord gives them the Law) and the Age of Law (God gave a perfect code of Law to the Jews, such as the world had never seen, so that the heathen realising its superiority might desire to join themselves to Israel and enjoy its perfect happiness. Israel however, constantly rebelled and forsook God and broke His Law, and cast away their privileges and rights, and preferred the cruelty and emptiness of heathendom to God's Law); this arrangement continuing right up until the Promised One came, Who, after being hidden away at Nazareth for thirty years and having fulfilled His earthly ministry, was crucified, descended into the Abyss, where He purchased redemption for ALL His free-will creatures (both angelic and human), preached the Gospel to all the inhabitants of Hades (after having been quickened in spirit), was raised out from amongst the dead receiving again His earthly body and leading all those who had embraced the Truth (at His preaching in Hades) into Heaven, then giving spiritual ministries and gifts unto the Church and re-instating the Melchizedek priesthood being appointed by God as its Great High Priest (after the order of Melchizedek). John 17v4, Eph 4v7-16, 2Tim 1v10, Heb 4v1-3,6-10, 5v5,6 chapter 11 (all), 1Peter 3v18-22, 4v6.

And so because God (by His foreknowledge), was fully aware (from before the foundation of the world) of the eventual demise of the Melchizedek priesthood after the death of Melchizedek, with all the inhabitants of Salem and the surrounding

nations eventually going into apostasy, He was then able to make the following covenant and promise to Abraham in Gen 15v1-21:

"After these things the word of the Lord came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abraham: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward. And Abram said, Lord God, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus? And Abram said, Behold, to me thou hast given no seed: and, lo, one born in my house is mine heir. And, behold, the word of the Lord came unto him, saying, This shall not be thine heir; but **he that shall come forth out of thine own bowels shall be thine heir. And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be. And he believed in the Lord; and he counted it to him for righteousness.** And he said unto him, **I am the Lord that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it.** And he said, Lord God, whereby shall I know that I shall inherit it? And he said unto him, Take me an heifer of three years old, and a she goat of three years old, and a ram of three years old, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon. And he took unto him all these, and divided them in the midst, and laid each piece one against another: but the birds divided he not. And when the fowls came down upon the carcases, Abram drove them away. And when the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell upon Abram; and, lo, an horror of great darkness fell upon him. And he said unto Abram, **Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years; And also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance.** And thou shalt go to thy fathers in peace; thou shalt be buried in a good old age. **But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.** And it came to pass, that, when the sun went down, and it was dark, behold a smoking furnace, and a burning lamp that passed between those pieces. In the same day the Lord made a covenant with Abraham, saying, **Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: The Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites."**

A most important bit of information in this passage in Gen 15 is in v16, which states:

"...for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full."

Once the iniquity of the Amorites was filled full, then God would bring judgement upon the Egyptians, bringing His people out of Egypt so that they might then enter Canaan and conquer the nations of it, and in this way God would bring judgement upon the apostate nations of Canaan (as well as the Egyptians). In the nations of Canaan we see what full iniquity is really like, in that although ALL the nations trembled and quaked with fear at the thought of fighting against the God of Israel, there was absolutely NO repentance of any of them, they simply suppressed their great fear and went out to fight against the God of Israel. From ALL the nations in Canaan, there was only one person and her extended family who were saved from God's judgement through Israel and that was Rahab the prostitute. Rahab the prostitute got saved and in amongst the people of God by faith, marrying a prince (Salma/Salmon) of the tribe of Judah and getting into the lineage of Messiah. Faith can open doors even when divine law has shut them! Deut 20v16,17, Joshua 2v9-11, 6v1,17, 2Chron 2v11,12, Hab 2v4, Matt 1v5,6, Luke 3v31,32, Heb 11v31, James 2v25.

The full iniquity of the nations in Canaan in the first half of the 1500 century BC will be exactly the same as the total apostasy that will fill the whole earth at the time of Our Lord's Second Coming. The same kind of conditions that caused the Lord to bring judgement upon the nations of Canaan (through Israel) will also prevail upon the whole of the earth during the last three and a half years of this age and will be the cause for the Lord Jesus to bring judgement upon the wicked at His Second Coming. Like the wicked nations of Canaan suppressing their fear and fighting against the Lord of Glory; we will see exactly the same kind thing from the wicked when the Lord Jesus appears in Glory (at His Second Coming), Antichrist and his armies do **NOT** repent, but instead suppress their fear and prepare to fight against their Creator, even thinking that they can defeat Him with their nuclear missiles and other weapons of mass destruction. However, Antichrist and his armies will be destroyed by the brightness of His coming, being consumed by the breath of His mouth. Psalm 2v1-6, Dan 8v23, Zech 14v12, Matt 24v12, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 6v12-17, 19v11-21.

The total apostasy that existed among the nations of Canaan at the time of Israel's exodus from Egypt (in 1491 BC) was exactly the same as that which immediately preceded the Flood (which Ussher dates as 2349 BC) in the days of Noah (when every thought of men was only evil continually, and violence filled the whole earth. Gen 6v5-13). As, at that time, in 1491 BC there were also giants in the land of Canaan, evil spirits infiltrating mankind by taking upon themselves fleshly bodies, which though outwardly similar to human bodies were basically different (genetically) from those of mankind. 1Pet 3v19,20, Jude v6. These were the "giants" of Scripture, these giants are called: The Nephilim, Gen 6v4, Numb 13v32,33. The Anakim, Deut 1v28, 2v10,11,21, 3v11,13, 9v2, Josh 11v21,22, 14v12-14. The Emims, Deut 2v10,11. The Zamzummins, Deut 2v19-21. The Rephaim, Deut 2v11,20, 3v11,13, Josh 12v4, 13v12, 15v8, 18v16, 2Sam 21v16,18,20,22, 1Chron 20v4,6,8. The valley of the giants, Josh 15v8, 18v16. etc. Goliath and his compatriots were evil angels in flesh, the sons of the giant. 2Sam 21v15-22. The children that were born to the giants did not have souls and spirits given to them by God, they became the abode of other evil spirits; these products of Satan's biological engineering will not be resurrected, for in Isaiah 26v14, we read the "dead," who are "deceased" (Hebrew "rephaim" (OT:7496) "giants") will not be resurrected by

God. When Michael and his angels cast the Devil and his angels out of Heaven into the earth, and God's restraining hand is removed from the Devil and his evil hosts, then the Great Tribulation then ensues, with the result that these evil angels that have been cast down into the earth will again mingle with the seed of men, which will result in giants once again upon the earth. Dan 2v43, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 12v7-17.

The Destruction Of Sodom And The Cities Of The Plain Of Jordan.

We read in Genesis 13v13:

"But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the Lord exceedingly."

(**NOTE:** Many Christians, but more so unbelievers, doubt the very existence of the cities of the plains (Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah and Zeboiim), however, they surely did exist, as the Jewish historian Titus Flavius Josephus and the Roman historian Tacitus **BOTH** refer to them:

"Returning to Josephus, the first century historian, he stated that the ruins of the five cities were still visible to his day (as does Tacitus, History 5.7). Josephus clearly ties the location of the five cities to the southern and eastern side of the Dead Sea, making specific note of Zoar. This excerpt of Josephus is primarily for the last few sentences, but we included those before it as they provide Josephus' description of the Dead Sea; then called Lake Asphaltitis.

The nature of the lake Asphaltitis is also worth describing. It is, as I have said already, bitter and unfruitful. It is so light [or thick] that it bears up the heaviest things that are thrown into it; nor is it easy for any one to make things sink therein to the bottom, if he had a mind so to do. Accordingly, when Vespasian went to see it, he commanded that some who could not swim should have their hands tied behind them, and be thrown into the deep, when it so happened that they all swam as if a wind had forced them upwards. Moreover, the change of the colour of this lake is wonderful, for it changes its appearance thrice every day; and as the rays of the sun fall differently upon it, the light is variously reflected. However, it casts up black clods of bitumen in many parts of it; these swim at the top of the water, and resemble both in shape and bigness headless bulls; and when the labourers that belong to the lake come to it, and catch hold of it as it hangs together, they draw it into their ships; but when the ship is full, it is not easy to cut off the rest, for it is so tenacious as to make the ship hang upon its clods till they set it loose with the menstrual blood of women, and with urine, to which alone it yields. This bitumen is not only useful for the caulking of ships, but for the cure of men's bodies; accordingly, it is mixed in a great many medicines. The length of this lake is five hundred and eighty furlongs, where it is extended as far as Zoar in Arabia; and its breadth is a hundred and fifty. The country of Sodom borders upon it. It was of old a most happy land, both for the fruits it bore and the riches of its cities, although it be now all burnt up. It is related how, for the impiety of its inhabitants, it was burnt by lightning; in consequence of which there are still the remainders of that Divine fire, and the traces [or shadows] of the five cities are still to be seen... (Josephus: Wars of the Jews, Book 4.8.4)." End of quote.)

This Scripture (Gen 13v13) is referring to a date of around 1921 BC, about twenty four years before it's destruction in 1897 BC; Sodom (Hebrew, "Cedom" (OT:5467) which means "scorched" or "burnt," i.e., volcanic or bituminous) and the other cities of the plain were even then, renowned for their wickedness, so one has to wonder why Lot (which means a veil or covering; also note that there is no record of the birth or death of Lot in Scripture, so we cannot work out at what age he died) decided to go and live there. When Lot and Abraham separated, Abraham gave Lot the first choice as regards where he would go and live, Gen 13v10,11 states:

"And Lot lifted his eyes and saw all the plain of Jordan, that it was well watered everywhere (before the Lord destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah) like the garden of the Lord, like the land of Egypt as you go toward Zoar. Then Lot chose for himself all the plain of Jordan, and Lot journeyed east. And they separated from each other."

It was not only a plentiful supply of grass and water for his flocks that caused Lot to choose to go to the plain of Jordan, but the desire for city life, where life in its living would be so much easier than that of living in tents, so Lot departed from Abraham and went to live in Sodom, no longer looking upon himself as a "sojourner in the land of promise," but actually as living among the inhabitants of the land. Heb 11v8-16. But all this came with a very high price, in that life in Sodom almost destroyed him completely, even as it did his wife, two daughters, sons in law and possibly grandchildren. Although Lot is called "that righteous man" (Greek, "ho díkaíos" (NT:1342), "dikaíos" meaning, just, meet, right (-eous)) in 2Pet 2v8, he (with his wife and two daughters) actually had to be taken by the hand and brought out of Sodom because they "lingered," Gen 19v15,16 states:

"And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city. **And while he lingered, the men laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of his two daughters; the Lord being merciful unto him: and they brought him forth, and set him without the city.**"

"And while he lingered" is in Hebrew, "Wayitmahmaah," which is from "mahahh" (OT:4102) and means "to question or

hesitate, i.e., (by implication) to be reluctant, delay, linger, stay selves, tarry."

We can see just how true the words of 1Pet 4v18 are, which state:

"And if it is difficult even for a righteous man to be saved, what will become of irreligious men and sinners?" (Weymouth)

Although righteous, Lot certainly was quite "carnal," not wanting to leave the wealth, power and position he had found in Sodom and only getting out of Sodom by the skin of his teeth. He certainly was not looking for a heavenly inheritance, like Abraham and Sarah were; neither is he mentioned in Hebrews 11 in the portion dealing with Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Sarah as looking for one and because he was not looking for a heavenly inheritance, neither did he exercise any kind of priestly or prophetic ministry as Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Sarah did. Indeed, Lot finally ended up in a cave filled with fear, getting drunk and having sexual relations with both of his daughters. The example of Lot really shows just how spiritually destructive seeking wealth, position and power can be to a believer; with Lot the Word of God certainly was choked with the cares, riches, and pleasures of this life, and brought no fruit to maturity, even as the seed that fell among the thorns. However, with Abraham, the Word of God was received with a good and noble heart and he was diligent to keep the received Truth, bearing fruit with patience, even as the seed that fell upon good ground, springing up, and yielding a crop a hundredfold. Abraham sought first the Kingdom of God and all things were added unto him, humbling himself under the mighty hand of God and being exalted in due time and casting **ALL** his cares upon Him, in the full knowledge that He was always thinking about him and watching out for everything that concerned him. Lot is he who is saved but as through fire suffering the loss of everything, while Abraham is saved with glory, having an abundant entrance into the Kingdom of God. Gen 19v1,9,30-38, Matt 6v25-34, Luke 8v4-15, 1Cor 3v12-15, 1Pet 5v6,7, 2Pet 1v11, Jude v23. (**Note:** God's judgement upon Sodom and the other cities of the plain was a strange and alien act for Him to do, for God's great desire is **ALWAYS** that of to save and bless and it is only as a last resort, when His free-will creatures refuse to repent and leave Him no other choice that He is forced to bring judgement upon them to preserve the purity of the flesh. Isaiah 28v21, Hosea 11v1-12, 1Tim 2v4, 2Pet 2v6-10, 3v9, 1John 4v8,16, Jude v7,8).

The Lord Jesus states in Matt 11v23,24:

"And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee."

In this very enlightening Scripture the Lord Jesus makes known that the people of Capernaum were in a worse moral and spiritual condition than those of Sodom at the time of its destruction by the Yahweh. If the Lord Jesus had done the same mighty signs, wonders and miracles in Sodom, the people would have repented and Sodom (and the other cities of the plain) would not have been destroyed by brimstone and fire from heaven and would still be in existence in the day when the Judge of all the earth became incarnate. One of the things that was revealed by the ministry of the Lord Jesus was that immoral people repented at the mighty signs, wonders and miracles far quicker and in vastly greater numbers than the hardened religious hypocrites that had been produced by the unscriptural man-made traditions of the Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees. So often the response of these hardened hypocrites to the wonderful miracles of the Lord Jesus was that they became filled with hatred and rage with a strong desire to kill Him. However, when the prostitutes and sinners saw these miracles they repented in droves, having fully revealed to them the character and works of the welcoming God of Love. Matt 9v9-13, 11v19, Luke 4v16-30, 7v36-50, 15v11-32, John 15v18-25.

Another example of a notorious immoral city like Sodom is the Greek city of Corinth located on the isthmus which joins the Peloponnesus to the mainland of Greece; such was its terrible debauchery that its name even served to coin an expression that became famous for corrupt practices: "Corinthianize" means to practice prostitution. It was the Greeks that invented the term, to "Corinthianize," which meant to live an immoral life and to call a young woman "a Corinthian" meant she was an immoral person. (The name "Sodom" (i.e., "sodomy") has also been taken and used to refer to sinful immoral practises as the name "Corinth" was and in the thirteenth century AD started to be used in the English and French languages to denote (amongst other things) the sexual act performed between homosexuals. The etymology is as follows: it is from the Anglo-French "sodomie," sexual intercourse between men, from Old French, from late Latin "Sodoma," Sodom). Paul, in the first epistle to the Corinthians, lists the characters of some of the persons who became believers in the Living God, the Lord Jesus, when he preached the Gospel to them by the Holy Spirit sent down from Heaven, compelling them to believe in the Risen Saviour by the mighty signs, wonder and miracles that He did through him (Rom 15v18-21, 2Cor 12v11,12, 1Pet 1v10-12), 1Cor 6v9-11 states:

"Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."

Paul spent about two years at Corinth (the population during Roman times could have exceeded four hundred thousand people), from 53 AD to 54 AD (Acts 18v1,9-11,18). The principal deity worshipped in the city was Aphrodite (identified by the Romans with Venus), Corinth was devoted, or dedicated thus to the goddess of "love," which really was used as an excuse for licentious passion; and the effect may be easily conceived. The temple of Aphrodite was erected on the north side or slope of the Acrocorinthus, a mountain about half a mile in height on the south of the city, and from the summit of which a magnificent prospect opened on the north to Parnassus and Helicon, to the eastward the island of Aegina and the citadel of Athens, and to the west the rich and beautiful plains of Sicyon. This mountain was covered with temples and splendid houses; but was especially devoted to Aphrodite, and was the plaque of her worship. Her shrine appeared above those of the other gods; and it was enjoined by law, that one thousand beautiful females should officiate as courtesans, or public prostitutes, before the altar of the goddess of love. In a time of public calamity and imminent danger, these women attended at the sacrifices, and walked with the other citizens singing sacred hymns. They were supported chiefly by foreigners; and from the avails of their vice a copious revenue was derived to the city. Individuals, in order to ensure success in their undertakings, vowed to present to Venus a certain number of courtesans, which they obtained by sending to distant countries. Foreign merchants were attracted in this way to Corinth; and, in a few days, would be stripped of all their property. It thus became a proverb, "It is not for everyone to go to Corinth." The effect of this on the morals of the city can be easily understood. It became the most frivolous, dissipated, corrupt, and ultimately the most effeminate and feeble portion of Greece. Even with this terrible debauchery rife in it, the Lord Jesus was able to say to Paul in Acts 18v9,10:

"...Do not be afraid, but speak, and do not keep silent; for I am with you, and no one will attack you to hurt you; for I have many people in this city."

The Lord Jesus saw by His foreknowledge the multitudes of Corinthians who would repent of their sin and believe in Him as the Risen Saviour because they were compelled to believe by the mighty signs, wonders and miracles that He did through His servant Paul, 2Cor 12v11,12 states:

"I am become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing. Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds."

When Paul wrote the 1st Corinthian epistle in the spring (before Pentecost) of (probably) 57 AD from Ephesus (1Cor 16v8), he was able to say of the Corinthians in 1Cor 1v7 "...that ye come behind in no gift..." and this was in spite of the carnality and immorality of quite a lot of them. 1Cor 3v1-9, 5v1-5, 11v23-31. The effect of Paul's first epistle on them was very substantial, for we read in 2Cor 7v11 (which was written six months later in the autumn of 57 AD in Macedonia (probably Philippi, 2Cor 2v13)):

"For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter."

The result of Paul preaching the Gospel to the Corinthians has had long lasting effects, indeed almost two thousand years on, (unlike Sodom), Corinth still exists to this day! We can see then that the words of the Lord Jesus in Matt 11v23,24 not only hold true for Sodom but also for Corinth as well and indeed it is a principle that holds true for any city that repents. The other cities that the Lord Jesus refers to in Matt 11v20-24, Chorazin, Bethsaida and Capernaum have all but disappeared today. Bethsaida is not even marked upon a modern map today, Capernaum is simply a name marked on the map but with no dwellings etc., and Chorazin, identified as Khirbet Kerazeh, which became uninhabited by the 3rd Century AD, is just a ruin; during the days of the earthly ministry of the Lord Jesus, Chorazin was a prominent city. The inhabitants of these three places refused to repent having been given the full light and full revelation of the character and works of God through the mightiest signs, wonders and miracles ever done in human history because of the unscriptural man-made traditions of the Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees that had filled their minds and imprisoned them in great darkness so that they simply didn't want to repent, being so hardened in sin. The Lord Jesus also says of Sodom in Matt 11v24:

"But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee."

These words of the Lord Jesus clearly indicate that at the Great White Throne judgement there will be amongst those who's names are written in the Book of Life a number of the inhabitants of Sodom (and the other cities of the plain). These very same persons were amongst those who received the Truth from the Lord Jesus, Whom, after having made atonement and quickened in spirit, preached the Gospel to **ALL** the inhabitants (Old Testament saints, the ignorant and wicked dead and evil angels) of Hades, who He then led into Heaven so "that they might be judged according to men in the flesh (which would take place at the Great White Throne judgement), but live according to God in the spirit (i.e., live in God's presence in Heaven)." Isaiah 6v9,10, Matt 13v10-17, Acts 2v22-32, Rom 10v7, 2Cor 2v16, Eph 4v7-16, 1Pet 3v18-22, 4v6, Rev 22v11.

The divine visitation of Yahweh (Jesus) and the two angels (Gen 18) to Abraham and Sarah (to strengthen their faith, Rom

4v20) occurred in the year 1897 BC, Abraham's meeting with Melchizedek having taken place in 1912 BC, so a time of fifteen years had elapsed between these two epochal events. Another question that needs to be asked is what had become of Melchizedek during these fifteen years; was he still alive or was he dead? As already mentioned there is no record or either Melchizedek's birth or death, so no concrete statement about the time of his death can be made. However, one would have thought that the Lord surely would have told His great servant Melchizedek (if he was still alive) on what He was planning on doing to Sodom and the cities of the plain if He found out on going down to visit them for Himself that the outcries against them were true. But, instead of reading about any kind of divine communication taking place between the Lord and Melchizedek on this matter, we find it rather taking place between the Lord and Abraham. This turn of events would strongly suggest that Melchizedek had indeed died by this time and that Abraham had taken a place before the Lord (in spirit) similar to that which Melchizedek had exercised. Abraham at this time stood before the Judge of all the earth in spirit, having been taken into the heavenly places by his Lord (the preincarnate Christ); conquering and subduing the powers of darkness through his prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") and occupying these same heavenly places and manifesting God power and love in the heavenlies and upon earth by manifesting the gifts of the Spirit. Abraham was now at this time (1897 BC) exercising a priestly (and prophetic) ministry like that which Melchizedek and the Melchizedek priesthood exercised. The spiritual seed of Abraham (both Old and New Testament believers), that is, those who followed the same example of his life, faith and works, would also carry out the same kind of priestly ministry that Abraham had exercised (the New Testament believers as members of the Melchizedek priesthood under the Lord Jesus as their Great High Priest), that is entering into God's promised rest by rising up into the heavenlies with Yahweh, conquering and subduing the powers of darkness through their prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances."), occupying the heavenly places and manifesting God's power in the heavenlies and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Gen 20v7, John 8v39, Rom 4v1-25, Gal 3v5-9,11,29, Heb 11v1-40, James 2v14-26.

Gen 12v3 states:

"And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed."

Although this Scripture, "...and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed," has its primary fulfilment in the Lord Jesus, it also has another secondary fulfilment in the spiritual seed of Abraham, both Old and New Testament believers, who by entering into God's promised rest and making "interventions with power" (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), "proseuche" (NT:4335)) for kings and all who are in authority (so that people may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and reverence) and who are also channels for God's love and power into a needy world to be a blessing to those around them by the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Exodus 19v5,6, Isaiah 8v18, Mark 16v14-18, 1Tim 2v1-8, Heb 2v4,13, 4v3,10, 1Pet 2v1-10.

Yahweh Jesus, Is Not Only The Author And Perfector Of The New Testament Believer's Faith, But Also The Old Testament Saint's As Well! (Heb 12v2, James 2v21-23 with Heb 11v1-12v1)

Isaac was born in 1896 BC when Abraham was a hundred years old and it was twenty five years later (by Archbishop Ussher's dating) in 1871 BC (Gen 22v1-19) that God tested Abraham by directing him to the land of Moriah (Hebrew, "Mowriyah," (OT:4179), which means "seen of Jah" or "the shown of Yahweh," i.e., the manifestation or appearance of Yahweh. Some commentators say that the name of "Moriah" is used proleptically with reference to Yahweh's appearance to Abraham in Gen 22v11-18 and to David in 2Chron 3v1, however, I think that it was already named "Moriah" due to the fact that it was in the immediate vicinity of Salem and we can be sure that the Lord certainly had appeared to Melchizedek, the priest of the Most High God.) where he was to offer up Isaac as a burnt offering on a certain mountain that God would show him. By the time of this epochal event, Abraham had been a believer in the Living God ("Eel Shadaay" ("El Shaddai"), "God All-sufficient" (Gen 17v1 with Exodus 6v3)) for fifty one years and it is here (in Gen 22v1-19) that we see the final trial of his faith that would bring his faith, patience and character to perfection. Fifty one years earlier, Yahweh Malek (the pre-incarnate Christ, Exodus 3v14,15, John 8v56-58) had appeared to Abraham (who at that time worshipped idols, Joshua 24v2,3) in Ur of the Chaldeans and gave him glorious promises, which Abraham believed because he had a born again experience; God the Holy Spirit (knowing that he would receive the Truth) had quickened his dead spirit which enabled him to believe the word of God and be obedient to this call to leave Ur of the Chaldeans. **Note:** Abraham's ability to believe the wonderful promises that God spoke to him was simply as a result of being quickened in spirit, Abraham's faith was a result of a living spirit, it was **NOT** the cause of it; his ability to believe the word of God was a wholly gracious act of God, due to his spirit being born again. John 3v1-21, 1Cor 2v6-16, Eph 2v1-10. Over the coming years God gave Abraham further manifestations of Himself and revelations of Truth which Abraham received and believed; these revelations and manifestations increased and strengthened Abraham's faith in the Living God, which had the effect of taking his faith from one level of belief to a higher one, or as Paul describes this process in Rom 1v17, ""by" faith "unto" faith." As Abraham received and believed the word of God and was obedient to it the process of sanctification was taking place and as he sat in His Presence communing with the Living God, beholding His beautiful character Abraham was transformed (Greek, "metamorphoo" (NT:3339), which means, "to change into another form") into His image from one degree of glory to another by the Spirit of Yahweh. Isaiah 28v10, John 17v17,19, 2Cor 3v16-18. From before the foundation of the world, God

had seen what Abraham would become through His mercy, grace, strength and blessing; He saw Abraham's faith brought to perfection, He also saw when Abraham and Sarah's faith waned and so at those times He would come and visit them to strengthen them. The meek and lowly pre-incarnate Christ, the God of Love would come alongside them and gently put their faith back on track, it was His gentleness that made Abraham (and Sarah) great. Psalm 18v35.

Paul, when writing the epistle to the Hebrews states in Heb 11v17:

"By faith Abraham, **when he was tried, offered up** Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son..."

"...When he was tried, offered up..." is in Greek "peirazómenos proseneénóchen." The full sense of the statement is missed in the King James Version. The meaning is that "while the trial is yet in progress," Abraham "hath already offered up" his son, before the trial has come to an issue, by the act of his obedient will, through faith in God.

(A bit of a note on Gen 22v1,2: This divine communication from the Lord to Abraham to offer up his only son, Isaac, as a burnt offering was not simply thoughts coming into his mind, but the Lord Himself would have appeared to Abraham personally and left him in no doubt what He wanted him to do.)

Abraham's "offering up" of Isaac in his mind immediately God spoke to him (Gen 22v1,2) was because Abraham believed that God was able to raise Isaac from the dead and restore him to life, as God had already said to Abraham in Gen 21v12, "...in Isaac shall thy seed be called." (This feast occurred in 1891 BC when Isaac was five years old). Abraham's belief in the Resurrection was due to the fact that he had seen and had the full revelation from God of Christ's birth, life, ministry, crucifixion, descent into Hades, the preaching of the Gospel to all it's inhabitants, the deliverance of **ALL** those who received the Truth of it (including **ALL** the Old Testament saints), His Resurrection and Ascension and the leading of **ALL** those delivered from Hades into Heaven which was accompanied by a great triumphal choral from the angelic hosts, His sitting down on the Throne of His Father at His right hand and the beginning of His High Priestly Ministry after the order of Melchizedek on the day of His Resurrection. Abraham was fully assured that because the Promised Seed (Messiah) would be raised from the dead, that he, Sarah and Isaac and all the rest of humanity would also be raised from the dead (at the first and second resurrections) and be judged by the "Judge of all the earth," the man Christ Jesus (The Promised Seed). (Isaac also believed in the Resurrection and had initially been told by Abraham (and Sarah) all the Truth pertaining to Christ's birth, life, ministry, death upon the cross, descent into Hades, preaching to its inhabitants, His Resurrection and the delivering of all those in Hades who had received the Truth by being taken into Heaven. Isaac also received confirmation of the Truth from the Lord as he grew in wisdom and spiritual strength and was given more revelations regarding the Promised Seed. Gen 26v2-5,24). And because Abraham had seen and had revealed to him the full Truth regarding Messiah, The Promised Seed, His birth and life etc., this was also further confirmation that if he offered up Isaac to the Lord as a sacrifice, God would raise him up from the dead, because he had already seen the fulfilment of the promises regarding the Promised Seed in prophetic vision. Also, the fulfilment of God's promise in the birth of Isaac was a tremendous miracle and boosted both Abraham and Sarah's faith greatly because of the simple fact that both "were as good as dead," and the fulfilment of the promise regarding the birth of Isaac also fully confirmed that the rest of God's promises regarding Isaac would also be fulfilled, i.e., "...in Isaac shall thy seed be called." So, because of Abraham's full confidence and belief in Yahweh, the Most High God and His promises, he did not hesitate but was obedient to God's command. Abraham instantly knew and recognised that it was the Lord speaking to him when He said to him (in Gen 22v2), "Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest...and offer him there for a burnt offering." There was absolutely no doubt in his mind Who was speaking to him, because Abraham "by reason of use had his senses exercised to discern both good and evil;" he was so used to sitting in his Lord's Presence and communing with him continually that he knew His voice as well as or even better than Sarah's. Gen 3v12, 18v25, 14v18-24, Psalm 24, John 8v56-58, Acts 2v23-31, 17v31, 1Cor 15v22,54,55, Eph 4v8-10, Heb 2v15, 5v5,6,14, 11v12,17-19, 1Pet 3v18-22, 4v6.

Gen 22v2,12,(16), states:

"...Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest...seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me."

Bishop Warburton states the following on the sentence, "Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest:" "The order in which the words are placed in the original gradually increases the sense, and raises the passions higher and higher: Take now thy son, (rather, take I beseech thee Naa'), thine only son whom thou lovest, even Isaac."

When Abraham and Isaac left the two young men at the camp to go to Moriah to worship, Isaac made the following observation (Gen 22v7):

"...My father: and he said, Here am I, my son. And he said, Behold the fire and the wood: but where is the lamb for a burnt offering?"

So even at this point in time Isaac was still unaware that Abraham's intention was to slay him and offer him up to the Lord as a burnt offering. Abraham's reply to him was (Gen 22v8):

"...My son, God will provide himself (a) **The** lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together."

The correct translation should read "the lamb" and not "a lamb." "The Lamb" that Abraham had in mind here was none other than The Lamb of God Himself, the Lord Jesus, slain from before the foundation of the world, Who would make atonement by the shedding of His blood and His descent into Hades, where His soul would be made an offering for sin, thereby taking away the sin of the world. Isaiah 53v10, John 1v29, Rom 10v7, Eph 1v7.

It was most probably between verses 8 and 9 that Abraham revealed to Isaac what Yahweh had commanded him to do and it is by what Isaac did **NOT** do (i.e., he did not flee), that we know that he must have consented (albeit reluctantly one would think) to let his father sacrifice him. This kind of obedience by Isaac reveals to us the great revelation that he already had at this time of the birth, life, ministry, death (by crucifixion), descent into Hades, Resurrection, Ascension and the beginning of the High Priestly after the order of Melchizedek on the day of His Resurrection of the Promised Seed in Whom all the nations of the earth would be blessed and because of His Resurrection, all the rest of mankind (including himself) would be resurrected; like Abraham, Isaac also fully believed in the Resurrection and that God was able to (and would) raise him from the dead. In the sacrificing of Isaac it was also clearly revealed to them both the penalty of sin, i.e., the wages of sin is death and the soul that sinneth it shall die and that it was essential for the Promised Seed to make atonement for their sin (and indeed for all) or else they (nor anybody else) would (or could) enter into the Heavenly City that they had seen afar off and embraced, confessing that they were pilgrims and strangers upon the earth. Psalm 2v7, 16v8-11, 110v1,4, Isaiah 53 (all), 58v6, 61v1,2 Ezek chapter 18 (all), Hosea 6v1-3, Zech 12v10, 13v7, Matt 1v1, Luke 3v23-34, 4v18,19, Rom 3v23, 6v23, Heb 2v14,15, 11v13.

During this trial of Abraham's faith, he and Isaac experienced to a degree (up to the time when Abraham was about to slay Isaac) the same kind of great turmoil, anguish and suffering of heart, soul and mind that God the Father and the Lord Jesus (also the Holy Spirit) would each experience and go through as the epochal time of the Cross approached and when the Lamb of God slain from before the foundation of the world was actually offered up as a sacrifice to make atonement for the sin of the world by the shedding of His blood, which would open the Kingdom of Heaven and bring in the New Covenant. Matt 26v26-28,36-46, 27v45,54, Luke 9v27-36,51, John 1v29, 19v34, Heb 2v15, 5v7,9v12, 11v40, 12v24, Rev 5v6, 13v8.

Abraham also saw and fully believed in the true humanity of Messiah, he knew that He would not be some kind of Docetic phantom (nor that which was taught by Cerinthus or that found described in the Apocryphal Gospels); the destructive heresy that the Gnostics (being energised by the Devil) would later introduce in the late 50's early 60's AD into the Church, which has continued in the Church right up to the present time in the guise of Augustine's Doctrine of Original Sin (Please see the study, "The Disastrous Effects Of The Doctrine Of Original Sin" which can be found at www.truthforthe lastdays.com for a more in depth study on this destructive heresy) and indeed will be most prevalent during the last seven years of this Age (of Grace), especially during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, causing many of those who believe it to backslide and go into apostasy during those last three and a half years (of this Age). The apostle John writes in 1John 4v1-6 the following:

"Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: **And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.** Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. **They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.** We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."

Abraham knew that Christ, The Promised Seed, was none other than the Seed (promised by the Lord to Eve) Who would bruise the head of the serpent, the One Who would be called in Isaac, in Whom **ALL** the nations of the earth would be blessed. As Abraham raised the knife to slay Isaac he also saw in vision Christ hanging upon the Cross (which would occur at Golgotha (which means "The place of a Skull") just six hundred metres away to the west (or if the position given by Gordon is accepted, one thousand metres NNW, below which in a cave called "Jeremiah's Grotto", the Ark of the Covenant was found by Ron Wyatt, see the article, "The Ark of the Covenant, Has It Been Found" at <http://www.prophetic.net/arkcov.htm>), one thousand nine hundred years later on Thursday, 6th, April 30 AD. Tradition states that the actual position on Mount Moriah where Abraham was going to sacrifice Isaac is where the Brazen Alter stood in the Inner Court of Solomon's Temple, the Post Captivity Temple and Herod's Temple, which was immediately in front of the building that housed the Holy of Holies and the Holy Place (where now stands the Dome of the Rock (the Mosque of Omar). It was also at this location that the Lord (Yahweh Jesus) appeared to David. As Abraham saw the Promised One hanging upon the Cross, the full extent of the great pain, sadness and suffering that God the Father was experiencing filled his heart and being (albeit greatly filtered, as he would not be able to bear it). At the same time, Isaac also saw Christ hanging upon the Cross and it was Christ's suffering (mental, physical and emotional) that filled Isaac's soul and being, this

also being filtered as well. This great act of obedience by Abraham and Isaac spoke to God and the preincarnate Christ (God the Word) of the fearful day when for the redemption of the world He would actually watch His Beloved Son suffer and die upon the cruel cross amid the jeers of the wicked. Gen 3v15, 17v7, 21v12, 2Chron 3v1, Isaiah 53v7,8, Matt 24v12,45-25v13, Luke 3v22-38, John 8v56-58, Gal 3v16, Eph 2v1-10, Phil 2v5-11, Col 2v8-10, Heb 2v16, 2Pet 2v1-3.

However, just as Abraham was about to plunge the knife into Isaac, Yahweh Malak (the preincarnate Christ) called to him from heaven telling not to lay his hand upon him or to hurt him in any way. This great act of obedience by Abraham had demonstrated to all that Abraham did indeed fear the Lord (Gen 22v12) and had placed Him first in his life, so that he fulfilled the first and greatest commandment of all (Mark 12v30 with Luke 14v25-33):

"Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength."

Over a period of fifty one years (1922 BC - 1871 BC), the preincarnate Christ (Yahweh Malak, i.e., Yahweh Messenger) had brought Abraham's faith to perfection (Heb 12v2 "finisher," Greek, "teleiotes" (NT:5047), which means "to bring to the goal" and hence "completeness" or "perfection") so that he was called "the friend (Isaiah 41v8, Hebrew, "'ahab" (OT:157), which means "loved" or "to have affection for," the Greek word used in James 2v23 is "philos" (NT:5384), which mean "dear" or "fond") of God." The Lord had formed a Christ like character in Abraham during this time and he had reached a spiritual maturity like that which Melchizedek had demonstrated forty one years earlier (in 1912 BC) when they met in the Valley of Shaveh (Gen 14v18-24) after Abraham's great victory over the four kings, which had been given to him by the Lord through Melchizedek's "interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)). The Fruit of the Spirit (love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance) had also been fully formed in Abraham's character and was constantly observed by others as being continually manifested in the everyday life of this meek, humble, godly and prayerful person. Like Elijah of old, Abraham stood before the Throne of God in spirit in the full knowledge that he stood in His Presence in the Throne Room of heaven, beholding the Throne of God, the rainbow around it, with Seraphim above, the twenty fours Elders on twenty four thrones around it and the seven Spirits of God (who are the seven great Archangels) before the Throne, the sea of glass and the hundreds of billions of angels around it and the great activity of the Trinity (revealed by the mighty thunderings, lightnings and voices proceeding from the Throne) as They tend and care for Their creatures and creation. Abraham knew that this was the City that God had prepared for him (and the rest of those who had called upon the name of the Lord and had entered into God's rest), the place where he would spend eternity (the Millennium and the Ages of Ages) with Sarah, Isaac, Jacob and all the rest of God's saints of all Ages. 1Kings 22v1-28, Isaiah chapter 6, Ezek chapters 1 to 3, Gal 5v16-26, Heb 4v1-3, 5v5,6, 7v25, 11v8-40, Rev chapters 4 to 5.

With the sacrifice already accomplished in his mind and heart, he had fully satisfied the requirements of God (Heb 11v17), so with Yahweh Malak's intervention, Abraham lifted his eyes and saw a ram caught by its horns in a thicket, which he offered in sacrifice, regarding it as a substitute for his son, directly provided by God Himself for a burnt offering (Septuagint, "eis holokarpooisin"). The burnt offering was the greatest of all sacrifices, and consisted in the immolation of a male victim, either a sheep or goat of a year old; a bullock of three years old sometimes; and, more rarely, a young pigeon or turtle dove. It was always placed entire on the altar, and consumed in the fire. Lev 1v4. It has been remarked that the ram offering as a burnt-offering in Isaac's stead, was a figure of Christ crowned with thorns and hanging on the Cross. Christ is typified by both: His Death and Resurrection were represented: the one by the ram and the other by Isaac on Mount Moriah to Abraham, who "was glad that he might see His day; and he saw, and did rejoice." John 8v56, Rom 5v8, 1Tim 1v15.

With God providing the ram for Abraham to offer as a burnt offering instead of Isaac, he called the name of that place, "Yahweh-yir'eh," which means not only "The Lord Who provides," but more fully, "The Lord Who see and provides," Gen 22v14 states:

"And Abraham called the name of that place Jehovah-jireh: as it is said to this day, In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen."

The wonderful members of the Trinity; our Heavenly Father, the Lord Jesus and the Holy Spirit have not only seen **ALL** of our needs from before the foundation of the world, **BUT** has also provided for each and every one of those needs from before Creation, absolutely nothing ever takes our wonderful God by surprise. Although Abraham knew the name "Yahweh," for he called the name of the place where God provided a sacrificial ram by the name "Yahweh Jireh," he could not invoke it on the basis of a covenant relationship, as Exodus 6v2-4 reveals:

"And God spake unto Moses, and said unto him, I am the Lord: And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty, but by my name JEHOVAH was I not known to them. And I have also established my covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their pilgrimage, wherein they were strangers."

"Known," in Hebrew is "yada" (OT:3045), which speaks of an experimental relationship, they did not have the right of covenant invocation of the Divine Name, until it was given to Moses under the covenant of the Law. God appeared unto Abraham (Isaac and Jacob) as "El Shaddai," i.e., "God Almighty," see Gen 17v1-27 (esp. v1).

In the second half of Gen 22v14, it reads:

"And Abraham called the name of that place Jehovah-jireh: **as it is said to this day, In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen.**"

There are different opinions as to what "In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen" means, however I think it would be best paraphrased as "**In the mount of Yahweh, He shall see and provide.**" "In the mount of Yahweh," is a reference to the Temple that would initially be built by Solomon on Mount Moriah with the Brazen Alter being placed on the spot where Abraham was prepared to slay Isaac and where the spiritual seed of Abraham would come to offer their sacrifices before the Lord in His Temple, with the full assurance that Yahweh Jireh would not only have seen **ALL** their needs from before creation, but would also have provided for each and every one of them. It also has a fulfilment that when the very One Who was speaking to him, two thousand years later, would empty Himself (of His Power, Glory and Divine perfections) and veil Himself in human flesh and walk on the very same ground where Abraham had been prepared to slay his dearly beloved son Isaac and offer him as a burnt offering unto the Lord. The True Lord Himself would suddenly come to His Temple and manifest the Glory of His Father, by doing mighty signs, wonders and miracles to meet the great needs of the lost House of Israel to whom He had been sent by His Father, fulfilling what the Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees had failed to do for centuries (to be channels for God's Love, Power and Presence to flow through so as to bring deliverance to the nation of Israel). Isaiah 35v5,6 (with matt 11v4-6), 40v3-5, 49v3, 58v6, 61v1,2 (with Luke 4v18,19), Mal 3v1-3, Matt 1v1, 15v24, 21v12-17, Phil 2v5-11, Heb 2v16.

This covenant name is also available to the Christian to invoke and call upon, indeed **ALL** the wonderful covenant names of Yahweh are there for each and every individual Christian to call upon and use. They are Names that bring God's Power, Presence and Love into **ANY** situation and need of each individual believer, indeed these wonderful names can also be called upon and invoked (by the believer) to bring blessing and deliverance upon the worldling and unbeliever as well. Under the Old Covenant it was through the shedding of the blood of the Passover lamb (which was a "type") that brought **ALL** of these covenant names to the Old Testament saint for them to use, however, the New Testament saint is under a far better covenant made through the shedding of the precious blood of the Dear Lord Jesus, Who is the True Lamb of God without spot or blemish, slain from before the foundation of the World. Rom 4v16, 2Cor 1v20, Gal 3v29, Heb 8v6, 9v10,18-28, 1Pet 1v19,20, Rev 13v8.

Even as God planned and provided for our salvation from before the foundation of the world, even writing in the Lamb's Book of Life before Creation (by His wonderful foreknowledge) the individual name of all those who would call upon The Name for salvation by accepting the mighty sacrifice that He made upon the Cross; even so has He also provided for **ALL** and **EVERY** need for every one of His dearly beloved children from before time began for all eternity. Rom 8v32, Eph 2v1-10, 3v9-11, Phil 4v19, 2Tim 1v9, Rev 13v8, 17v8, 20v4-22v21.

God's character and His covenant names are vitally linked and interconnected. Exodus 34v6,7 with 3v14,15.

Exodus 3v14,15 states:

"And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, The Lord God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial unto all generations."

Jesus revealed and used, all the covenant names of Yahweh during His earthly ministry. The divine name, the tetragrammaton, was God's covenant name with Israel, as set forth in the Old Testament. The sacred name of "Yahweh," or "Jehovah," depending on which form you prefer to use, comes from the Hebrew verb "to be," as Exodus 3v14,15, states. "I AM THAT I AM" is in Hebrew, "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH;" Hebrew scholars have stated that "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH" means, "I AM WHO I AM, AND WHAT I AM: AND I WILL BE, WHAT I WILL BE." The name "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH" and its context can mean, "I will be with you **ALL** the time, in **ALL** situations." However, it means more than that, rather, "I will be with you, at **ALL** times, and in **ALL** situations, to be what I AM to you." God comes to make **ALL** His abilities, love and power available to us when we call upon His covenant names. The name of "Jehovah" or "Yahweh," whichever way you prefer to pronounce it, encapsulates the meaning of the great name of God, "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH," "I AM THAT I AM," and manifests the eternal availability, of God's love and power. The name of Jesus has been given to us, it is covenanted to us by His own shed blood, and when we call on His name, He comes to give us what we need, His Name carries all the Divine love, power and presence of the covenant names of God. Exodus 34v6,7, Acts 20v28, 2Cor 1v20.

(Please see Appendix 4: "All The Covenant Names Of Yahweh Are Given To Us In The Name Of Jesus.")

After Abraham offered the ram as a burnt offering to the Lord (instead of Isaac), Yahweh Malak spoke to him a second time from heaven in the following manner (Gen 22v16-18):

"...By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice."

The phrase "in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed" is used by Paul in Heb 6v14, which he writes as, "Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee," which is stating that the Lord renews the promise made in Gen 12v1-3, but this time with an oath. The phrase "blessing I will bless," and "multiplying I will multiply" is a Hebrew mode of expression to denote emphasis or certainty indicated by the repetition of a word; compare Gen 14v23, Exodus 8v10, Joel 3v14, Judges 5v30, 15v16. Paul then goes on to give the reason why God confirmed his promise to Abraham with an oath (Heb 6v17-20):

"Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath: That by two immutable things (*God's Promise and God's Oath, both unchangeable*), in which it was impossible for God to lie, **we might have a strong consolation,** who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us: Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the veil; Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec."

We can see here that God wanted to leave no doubt in the mind of Abraham or his (spiritual) seed (the Old and New Testament saints) as to the sureness of His Promise (which is a heavenly inheritance and ruler ship in the eternal kingdom, Rom 4v13, Heb 11v40), Wuest makes the following comment on Heb 6v17:

"The word "wherein" refers to the entire previous clause. The idea is "in accordance with this universal custom." Since the oath has this convincing power among men, God disregards the insult implied in man's doubting His Word, and condescends to human infirmity, confirming His Word by an oath. The word "willing" is the translation of "boulomai" which speaks of a desire that is based upon the reasoning faculties as over against "thelo," a desire that arises from the emotions. God, facing human infirmities, was minded to do thus and so.

The word "immutability" is the translation of "ametatheton." The word is from "metatithemi." "Tithemi" means "to place," and "meta" prefixed refers to a change. Thus, the compound word means "to change place," thus "to transpose" two things, one of which is put in place of the other. The derived noun "metathemenos" means "a turncoat." The Greek letter Alpha prefixed to the word makes it mean the opposite to what it meant originally. That is, God will not change His position as to His promise. Having made the promise, He will stand by it. He is not a turncoat. He will not change His position as to His promise, because that promise rests upon His counsel, and that is "ametatheton" also, immutable. The word "counsel" is the translation of "boule," which word is allied to "boulomai" "to desire, which desire comes from one's reason." The Triune God in council convened brought forth this counsel to the effect that the soul might find a sure refuge in the Lord Jesus. This counsel is immutable.

The word "confirmed" is the translation of "mesiteuo" which means "to act as mediator between litigating or covenanting parties, to accomplish something by interposing between two parties." A "mesites" is a sponsor or surety, so "mesiteuo" comes to signify "to pledge one's self, to give surety." God placed Himself between Himself and the inheritors of the promise. Expositor's quotes Delitzsch as follows: "God descended, as it were, from His own absolute exaltation, in order, so to speak, to look up to Himself after the manner of men and take Himself to witness; and so by a gracious condescension confirm the promise for the sake of the inheritors"; and Davidson, "He mediated or came in between men and Himself, through the oath by Himself."

The word "promise" is preceded by the definite article in the Greek text, pointing to a definite, particular promise defined in the context. It is the promise to Abraham and his posterity found in verse 14."

Translation. *In (accordance with) which God more abundantly desirous of demonstrating to those who are inheritors of the promise, the immutability of His counsel, interposed with an oath.* (End of quote)

Our heavenly inheritance (which we receive at the Lord's Second Coming when we are judged by Him and our position in the Eternal Kingdom is fixed) is preceded by living in the heavenly places with the Lord Jesus (during our time upon earth), by having defeated the powers of darkness, expelling them from the heavenlies and then occupying them. Also being watchful that we do not become slothful and get expelled from the heavenly places, we should manifest God's Love and Power in the heavenlies through the gifts of the Holy Spirit by "making interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), 1Tim 2v1) to thus change circumstances and bring deliverance into the situation for which we are praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which has the same meaning as "entugchano" (NT:1793), "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances") for.

The promise of a heavenly inheritance and (possible) ruler ship in the eternal kingdom (if we "win" the right to rule with the

Lord Jesus, even as He had to "win" that right) and it being confirmed by God's oath, gives the believer an anchor of the soul which is "both sure and steadfast," which enters within the veil (i.e. into the Holy of Holies). So, the believer having been taken into the heavenly places by the Lord Jesus during their earthly lifetime, has a foretaste of what life will be like "within the veil" (after they enter into their heavenly inheritance having been judged by the Lord Jesus at The Second Coming) as they also stand before God's Throne in heaven (in spirit) having entered "behind the veil" (into the true Tabernacle not made with hands) through the shed blood of Christ. Matt 25v14-30, John 3v13, 17v24, Rom 8v17, 1Cor 3v11-15, Phil 2v5-11, Col 3v1-11, Heb 8v1,2, 10v19,20, 12v18-24 (esp. v22, "**But ye are come unto mount Sion** (what is referred to here is a **PRESENT** reality and **NOT** something future), and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem..."). The believer who obeys God's voice to enter into His rest is taken by the Lord Jesus into the Heavenly City, the New Jerusalem during their earthly lifetime as a result of believing the Truth, it is **NOT** something they have to wait until their death to experience, but is a present reality during their lifetime. It is God's great desire that **ALL** His beloved children obey His call to enter into His rest, so that He might take each and every one of them into the Heavenly City in spirit and then into Heaven proper at either their death or by being raptured at the Second Coming of Christ, however, because of laziness, unbelief, cowardice, slothfulness etc., very few of God's dear children are obedient to this call and so they, like the first generation of Israelites that came out of Egypt, either remain in a barren wilderness or return to Egypt (i.e. backslide and go into apostasy). Psalm 95 (all), Heb chapters 3 and 4 (all), 5v11-6v2.

The heavenly places in Yahweh is also what Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph and Sarah experienced during their lifetimes, they all accepted the call of their Lord to rise up with Him to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness in the heavenly places, thus entering their "Heavenly Canaan." Occupying the heavenly places (in their Lord), they manifested God's Love and Power in the heavenlies and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit by "making interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), 1Tim 2v1) to thus change the circumstances and bring deliverance into the situation for which they were praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which has the same meaning as "entugchano" (NT:1793), "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances") for. Not only did Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph and Sarah look for a Heavenly inheritance (i.e. not only being taken into the heavenly places during their lifetime by the Lord but also spending eternity in the Heavenly City, the Heavenly Jerusalem.), but all of the Old Testament saints referred to in Heb 11v1-40 also looked for a Heavenly inheritance and by obedience to the voice of their Lord, entered into His rest. Gen 12v10-20, 14v1-24, 20v1-18, Psalm 8v2 (with Matt 21v16), 95 (all), 105v1-15, Heb 4v3, 11v1-40, Rev chapters 21 & 22.

Gen 22v15-18 states: "And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying **I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies. And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed;** because thou hast obeyed my voice."

"I will multiply **thy seed** as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore."

"Thy seed" in this prophecy has a reference to the following: 1) Israel, as Abraham's descendants according to the flesh. Luke 3v8. 2) His spiritual seed: all those who would be justified by faith, both Old and New Testament saints, referred to under both Covenants as, "the (true) Israel of God." Hab 2v4, Rom 1v17, Gal 6v16.

"**Thy seed** shall possess the gate of his enemies."

"Thy seed" here refers: 1) To Israel as conquering (earthly) Canaan and inhabiting it. 2) Old and New Testament saints who rise up with their Lord to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness through their prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") so as to inhabit their Heavenly Canaan, thus entering into God's rest. Heb 4v3, 11v1-40. 3) But fully as the Lord Jesus, Who is the Lamb of God Who taketh away the sin of the world, the One Who conquered Death and Hades and so opened Heaven for His redeemed people to establish the eternal Kingdom and thus assuring the success of the Creation. Isaiah 53v10, Matt 16v13-18, John 1v29, Acts 2v23-33, Rom 10v7, 1Cor 15v50-56, Eph 4v8-10, 1Pet 3v18-20, 4v6, Rev 1v17,18, 13v8.

"In **thy seed** shall all the nations of the earth be blessed."

"Thy seed" in this instance refers to: 1) Israel according to the flesh. 2) Abraham's spiritual seed, both Old and New Testament saints; those who have followed the example of believing Abraham. Gal 3v7. 3) Again fully, speaking of the Lord Jesus, Who would justify both Jew and Gentile through faith. Gal 3v8,26-29.

Although The Age Of Promise continues right up until the making of The Old Covenant on Mount Sinai (Exodus chapter 19) in 1491 BC, the life of Moses will be looked at briefly in The Age of Law.

The Age Of Law.

The Age Of Law, in which God gives to a select nation such a perfect code of law as the world had never seen, with the intention that the heathen nations realising its superiority might desire to join themselves to Israel and enjoy its perfect happiness. Israel however, constantly rebelled and forsook God and broke the law, and thus flung its privileges and rights away (Rom 3v1,2, the Jews privileges) and preferred the cruelty and wilderness of heathendom to the Law and goodness of Moses. Scripture Period: Exodus 19v1,8 to Matt 27v51.

Moses.

Acts 17v17,20 states the following: **"But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt...In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three months."**

"In which time" is in Greek, "En hoó kairoó," "kairoó" is the singular dative of the Greek word "kairos" (NT:2540), which means, an occasion, i.e. set or proper time, opportunity, (convenient, due) season, (due, short, while) time, a while and hence "a season, a time, a period" possessed of certain characteristics, an epochal and strategic time; a critical niche in time. "Kairos" (NT:2540) is used to speak of such ordinary events as, "the time of the figs," in Mark 11v13, and of, "the time of harvest," in Mark 12v2, in our Lord's parable of the vineyard. **However, "kairos" (NT:2540) usually speaks of a divine epoch in time, a time of divine appointment and fulfilled prophecy; a time when God's will and purposes are fulfilled, and His mighty ways and acts are revealed.** The plural, "kairois" (NT:2540), speaks of epochal events in time; "chronos" (NT:5550), speaks of ordinary chronological time. **It was at such a divine epochal time that Moses was born.**

It is recorded three times in the Scriptures (Exodus 2v2, Acts 7v20, Heb 11v23) that both God and his parents thought that Moses was a beautiful baby; now, ALL babies are beautiful in the eyes of God and their parents, but the Holy Spirit specifically inspires Moses, Stephen (and hence Luke who wrote the Book of Acts) and Paul to specifically mention this important fact of Moses' beauty. The reverse is recorded in the Scriptures regarding the Lord Jesus, it states in Isaiah 53v2: "...he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him." The Lord Jesus did not seem to have anything particular about Him, He certainly was not handsome; nor had He any athletic prowess to mark Him out from His companions. It is also recorded (in Acts 7v22) of Moses that he "was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds."

Both Amram and Jochebed (Moses' father and mother) followed the example of the faith and life of their forefather Abraham (both being of the spiritual seed of Abraham), they both believed all the promises that had been given to Abraham. They looked for a Heavenly City and had been obedient to the Lord's call to rise up with Him into the heavenly places so as to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness and so inhabit their Heavenly Canaan and through "making interventions with power" ("intercessions," Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), 1Tim 2v1) to change the circumstances and bring deliverance into the situation for which they were praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which has the same meaning as "entugchano" (NT:1793), "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.") for and also manifesting God's power and love in the heavenly places and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Hab 2v4, Heb 11v6,16,23.

As the time of Israel's deliverance from bondage drew near, the vast number of Hebrews in Egypt were badly backslidden with a certain number having gone into apostasy and completely forsaken the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and so were in complete darkness and ignorance as to this promise (also confirmed by an oath, Gen 15v1-21, Acts 7v17) made by God to Abraham regarding their deliverance from this bondage imposed upon them by the Egyptians. However, both Amram and Jochebed realised that the time of Israel's bondage was almost complete and that God's promise of deliverance from Egypt would soon be at hand and so, like Daniel (Dan chapter 9 (all)), they prayed (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which means "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.") the prophecy and promise into being. They also knew that God would accomplish Israel's deliverance by the hand of a deliverer and so they were also expecting a deliverer to appear in the not too distant future. God wanted the very best parents for this deliverer (even as he chose Mary to be the mother of His Incarnate Son, Luke 1v42,43,46-55) and there were none like the godly persons of Amram and Jochebed amongst the Hebrews, persons filled with faith and Truth, who lived in constant communion with the Living God. When the time drew near, God revealed to them that they would be the parents of this very deliverer; in both cases (in regards to Moses and the Lord Jesus, who was also a prophet like unto Moses, Deut 18v1-22, Acts 3v22,23, 7v37), God chose the very best persons that was around at those respective times for these most important parenting tasks. Heb 11v23.

God's divine overshadowing and protective providence was around Moses (even as it was around Jeremiah and all of God's beloved ones, Jer 1v5) from before he was even born and can be seen from the fact that Pharaoh's (it was probably Ramesses Miamun, or his son Amenophis) daughter (whose name was Thermuthis according to Josephus) was childless and so when (by divine revelation) his parents Amram (which means "high people") and Jochebed (which has the meaning of "Jehovah-gloried" or better "Yahweh-gloried") put him into the basket made of bulrushes and set him upon the waters of the Nile, as soon as Pharaoh's daughter set her eyes upon him, upon seeing how beautiful he was absolutely swooned over

him and her heart was filled with compassion for him. And of course, God's providence continued with his sister Miriam on hand to suggest to Pharaoh's daughter that she should fetch one of the Hebrew woman (Jochebed, his mother) to look after him, as he was a Hebrew child. So God put the one who would be the future ruler and deliverer of Israel right into the very palace of Pharaoh, where he would not only be under his protection, but would also be taught in all the wisdom of the Egyptians (which was most necessary to know in later years when he would stand before Pharaoh and demand the release of Israel) and not only schooled in spiritual Truths by his mother, Jochebed, learning all the wonderful revelations that El Shaddai (the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, Exodus 6v3) had given by vision to their forefather Abraham, but also learnt from a very early age how to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which means "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.")). Moses followed the example of his mother's faith, who also imitated her forefather's Abraham life of faith, so that from an early age he walked with the Living God. Jochebed also taught him about the wonderful promise of a Heavenly City, that she and Amram were looking for and expecting and the prerequisite for that was that he should obey the call of the Lord and rise up with Him to conquer and subdue the powers of darkness in the heavenly places and thus inhabit his Heavenly Canaan and through praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which means "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.)) manifesting God's power and love not only in the heavenly places but also upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit and so entering into God's rest. Exodus 2v1-10, 6v20, Acts 7v20-22, Heb 4v3.

During the whole of the forty years that Moses lived with Pharaoh's daughter and was looked upon as her own son and also the future Pharaoh, ruler of Egypt, he was protected (by God's providence and the prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335), which means "to make interventions with power, so as to effect a change in circumstances" of Jochebed) from all the evil influences that was part and parcel of life in Egypt, especially from the passing pleasures of sin and all the occult practices that was practised as part of their idolatrous religions and the corrupting influence of great wealth. Behind every great prophet and prophetess, there has **ALWAYS** been someone behind the scenes who has earnestly sought the Lord and prayed (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) them into their ministry. Very often this is the result of the prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of a godly loving mother or aunt. Out of great suffering and adversity, because of being childless, Hannah changed the whole course of the history of Israel through her prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) with the birth of Samuel; she also prayed him into his prophetic office and continued to pray for him all the days of her life, so that Samuel is recognised as one of the greatest prophets that Israel ever had. Huldah, Jeremiah's aunt, was the person responsible for praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) Jeremiah into his prophetic ministry as a young man. We can gauge the depth of her spirituality and prophetic ministry from the incident when King Josiah asked Hilkiah, the High Priest, to inquire of the Lord as what should be done at that time, Hilkiah promptly went and sought out Huldah, and as soon as he had asked for the word of the Lord, Huldah was able to give it too him straight away. However, when the remnant of those left in the southern kingdom came and asked Jeremiah to seek the word of the Lord for them, it was ten days before the reply came from the Lord for them (which they didn't heed anyway); and so from this, we can see just how in touch with the Lord Huldah was and the depth of her prophetic ministry! In the New Testament we see both Lois and Eunice, the grandmother and mother of Timothy, who taught him Truth as a child from the Scriptures and prayed (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) him not only into his apostolic ministry but also for the character of Christ to be formed in him. Paul looked upon Timothy as his son in the faith and his co-worker in the work for the Lord Jesus, a person who cared for the converts as a mother looks after her children, Timothy was a most godly, caring and loving young man. (**NOTE:** Like their forefather Abraham, Amram, Jochebed and Moses were all inspired and instructed by the (spiritual) walk, life of faith and prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of godly Melchizedek, which they also imitated. The Lord Jesus was also greatly inspired and instructed by the life of godly Melchizedek, so that He Himself became our Great High Priest after the Order of Melchizedek, the One Whom we can and indeed should imitate fully, for He is the One Who is, not only the Inspirer, but also the Pioneer and Perfector of our faith. Gen 14v18-24, Psalm 110, 1Cor 11v1, Heb 11v1-12v2.) Exodus 7v22, 8v7, Samuel 1v1-2v11, 18-21 (esp. 1v10, 2v1, 18, 21), 2Kings 22v3-20 (esp. v14), Jer 1v1-19 (esp. v6), 32v7, Jer 42v1-22 (esp. v7), Acts 7v22, Acts 16v1, 2, 1Cor 4v17, 1Thess 2v7, 1Tim 1v2, 2Tim 1v2, 5, 3v15, Heb 11v25, 26.

As the last seven years of this Age (of Grace) rapidly approaches and especially the period of time known as the Great Tribulation (which is also called "Jacob's Trouble"), if we wish to see powerful apostolic and prophetic ministries set in the Church by the Lord Jesus, it is MOST important that Christians pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) NOW for these ministries to be set in the Church and ESPECIALLY that "last day Elijah ministries" should be set in the Body of Christ by God! Jer 30v7, Dan 7v25, 9v27, 11v32, 12v1, Zech 12v8, Mal 4v5, 6, Matt 9v37, 38, Rev 5v8, 7v14, 11v3-6.

By the age of forty, God had personally visited Moses and given him the divine revelation that he was to be His chosen ruler and deliverer of His people Israel. Moses had also been shown that the One (Yahweh Malak) Who had appeared to him was also the One (by emptying Himself of His power, glory and divine perfections and veiling Himself in human flesh, John 1v1-3, 14, Rom 1v3, 4, 8v3, Phil 2v5-11, Heb 2v10-18, 1John 4v1-6) Who was Abraham's Promised Seed (the One Who would bruise the serpent's head) in Whom all the nations would be blessed. During this divine visitation by the pre-incarnate Christ to Moses, he was shown the full Truth regarding the incarnation of the Christ: His birth, life, ministry, death upon the Cross (for his and the sin off the world), descent into the Abyss (which is the sinner's side of Hades, where the evil angels who had sinned in the days of Noah were imprisoned, along with the ignorant and wicked dead), where His soul would be made an offering for sin. Then after three days and nights having made atonement, he would be quickened in spirit (i.e. He would

be given back His spirit, which at His death had returned to God Who had given it, his body being put into the tomb), preach (like a herald) to the spirits in prison by declaring His victory over sin, death, Hades and the Devil (and offering them salvation, however because they were all irrevocably hardened in sin, none would accept it), then preaching the gospel the ignorant and wicked dead, crossing over the great gulf to the other side of Hades where all the Old Testament saints would go at death (except Enoch and Elijah, who because they wouldn't taste off death would go into Heaven) and also preached the gospel to them. He then would take all those who accepted the Truth into Heaven, when upon entering through the "everlasting doors" would receive a great rapturous and thunderous choral entrance into Heaven, where He would sit down at the right hand of His Father upon the Throne, where He will remain until His Second Coming, waiting for His enemies to be made His footstool and start His Great High Priestly ministry after the order of Melchizedek. Gen 3v15, 22v1-19, 2Kings 2v11, Psalm 24 (all), Eccl 12v7, Isaiah 53v10, Matt 12v40, 27v50, Acts 2v23-35, 3v20,21, Col 1v20, Heb 5v5,6, 10v12,13, 11v5,6,24-26, 1Pet 3v18-20, 4v6, 2Pet 2v4, Jude 14,15.

Moses had this divine visitation and Truth given to him before he refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, indeed, it was because of this personal visitation by God the Word to him that was the reason for his refusing to be recognised as Pharaoh's daughter and the giving up off **ALL** the privileges that went with it, as Heb 11v24 states, "**By faith** Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter." It was this divine Truth imparted to his spirit, mind and soul by the pre-incarnate Christ that gave Moses the "faith" to refuse to be called Pharaoh's daughter, God's plan for his life was that he would be ruler and deliverer of Israel, **NOT** ruler of Egypt. "Refused" in Greek is "eerneésato," the first aorist middle indicative of "arneomai" (NT:720), which means to contradict, i.e. disavow, reject, abnegate, refuse, disown, renounce a thing, forsake it. Moses, when he was of age, in the full light of Truth and not in ignorance, made a final and irrevocable decision turning his back upon Pharaoh's daughter, ruler ship of Egypt, great power and wealth and all that Egypt offered him to follow his Lord and God, the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob which would bring not only great suffering upon him, but like the Lord Jesus at His incarnation, would make him a penniless beggar. 2Cor 8v9 states, "For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, **yet for your sakes he became poor**, that ye through his poverty might be rich." "Poor" in Greek is "epitoócheusen," the aorist active indicative of "ptochuo" (NT:4433), which means to be a beggar, become poor, i.e. extreme poverty. **NOTE:** There is a false doctrine being taught today (generally by those who teach the "prosperity gospel") that states that the Lord Jesus was rich, however, the Scriptures state the complete opposite of this terrible lie and twisting of the Word of God, 2Cor 8v9 clearly states that the Lord Jesus, during His earthly life, was a penniless beggar and this is also confirmed by the fact that during His earthly ministry He and the apostolic band very often had to sleep outside in the open because they had no money to pay for overnight accommodation and on one occasion the Father even had to provide money by a miracle to pay the Temple tax (which was a (Jewish) half-shekel) through Peter catching a fish which had a coin in its mouth, which was the exact amount (Matt 8v20, 17v24-27). The Scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees were very covetous (which Paul says is idolatry, Col 3v5) and lovers of money and this was one of their great sins that led to their total corruption and apostasy and we see in Matt 23 1-36 and Luke 16v1-31 exactly what the Lord Jesus thought of them and this great sin. We can also see in the letters to the Seven Churches in the book of Revelation the great corrupting effect that money had upon the Laodicean Church for in all the six other Churches the Lord Jesus was able to say good things either about the whole Church or persons or groups of persons within a particular Church, however, there was not one person in the whole of the Laodicean Church that the Lord Jesus could say anything good about, indeed, He gives the following horrific description of **ALL** the Christians in that Church, in Rev 3v15-17 He states, "**I know thy works**, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not **that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.**" What a real shaker these words must have been to the Laodicean Christians! It is a real sad fact that today the vast majority of churches (certainly in the "prosperous" west) are like the Laodicean church, they think that the most important things for the spread of the Gospel is money, wealth, worldly position and power and not God's presence and power to fulfil His plans and purposes (that should be sought for and got by the earnest seeking of their Lord's face). It is a historical fact that the early Church has continuous revival for three hundred years without wealth, money, church buildings or worldly position and power! However this **ALL** changed when Constantine (who was the sixth head of the Beast, and directly under the control of the Devil) in 313 AD issued the Edict of Toleration (Milan) which heaped, wealth, riches, and worldly power onto the Church, which in effect stopped the Church seeking the Lord for His plans, purposes and power, because they then relied upon their new found wealth, and not God, Who gives His Presence and Power liberally to **ALL** that seek Him. Hence there is now a great necessity for a return to the informal fellowship (house) meetings that the early Church practised, which enabled it to have revival for 300 years, without any Church buildings or the practice of Tithing. Luke 22v44-53, Acts 1v12-2v4, Acts 2v46, Rom 16v-5, 1Cor 11-14, Hebrews 10v25, 11v6, Jude v12, Rev 13v1-11, 17v7-18.

It is a striking fact that Jesus was totally financially destitute, and came to preach His Gospel to the poor, and that the early Church consisted mainly of people of little political power, wealth and influence. 2Cor 8v9, Luke 4v18, 1Cor 1v26-31. Constantine used the Church as a means of exercising political power and control, and many others followed his example, until church organisations became an instrument of power and influence in the hands of the powerful and wealthy. Love of power has pervaded all denominations and has destroyed their spiritual vitality and effectiveness. It is a great tragedy that most denominations and churches, large and small, have become largely concerned with upholding their power structure, prestige and worldly influence. Some denominations have great worldly wealth and influence, but they are lacking

in spiritual power. The spiritual power a church possesses is nearly always inversely proportional to its worldly wealth, influence, and ecclesiastical complexity. **Men love to pass minutes, resolutions, and constitutions, and these man-made traditions, like the traditions of Judaism, often replace the Truth of the Holy Scriptures.** Matt 15v1-9, Mark 7v1-13. How easily the precepts of men can replace and frustrate the will and Word of God. Some conference resolutions and church minutes have made churches and denominations secure against revival. Every church minute that narrows the fellowship of the local church is not of God, and will have to be answered for at the judgement seat of Christ.

The complete removal of the Melchizedek Priesthood (along with its operation) from Christ's Church and the obliteration of the Truth pertaining to it, was inspired by the Devil and brought about by him through his willing servant Constantine, who (as already mentioned) was the 6th Head of the Seven Headed Beast, when he issued the "Edict Of Toleration" (also known as The Edict Of Milan) in 313 AD. Through this edict, when wealth, power and position was given to Church leaders, they became corrupted by it, and the purity of the Gospel was lost, and the Church became indistinguishable from the world. A terrible, Laodicean type spiritual state started to permeate much of the Church from 313 AD onwards. Rev 3v14-22, 13v1,2, 17v7-12.

The revelation of Truth that the pre-incarnate Christ, God the Word, gave to Moses at this divine visitation (before he refused to be called Pharaoh's daughter's son) was of immense value to him, so immense, that even in great suffering for His Lord, he still esteemed it greater riches than **ALL** the vast treasures of Egypt. Heb 11v26. Moses, instead of seeking his Lord and waiting for God to bring to fulfilment the prophecy regarding him being God's appointed ruler and deliverer of Israel, instead tried to fulfil it himself, so that he ended up killing an Egyptian and having to flee Egypt from the wrath of Pharaoh. (However, it is important to understand that from before the foundation of the earth God knew that Moses would try to fulfil these prophecies and promises by himself (and not wait for Him to fulfil it), ending up with him killing an Egyptian. So in His foreknowledge, God planned for this failure of Moses and turned it into something that could be used to Moses' benefit. It burned into the mind of Moses that God's work had to be done His way and with His Presence and Power and not the way Moses thought it should be done by relying upon the arm of the flesh. So, after he killed the Egyptian, God told him to get out of Egypt and flee to Midian, where He would then prepare him during the next forty years for the fulfilment of the promises and prophecies regarding him being God's appointed ruler and deliverer of Israel. The way He dealt with Moses in his failure was not just unique to him, but how He deals with great love and compassion in educating and disciplining all of His dearly beloved children. We again see this wonderful divine foreknowledge at work in regards to Peter's denial of His Lord after the Devil had got permission to sift the apostles (and especially Peter) as wheat in the Upper Room at the Last Supper: Luke 22v31-34, "And the Lord said, **Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.** And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. **And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.**" God the Father had shown the Lord Jesus some time beforehand with regards to the Devil seeking and getting permission to sift the apostles, which then caused the Lord Jesus to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) so that they would not loose their faith and that Peter, when having turned again, would strengthen his brethren and become a pillar in the Church at Jerusalem. God was also going to use this failure of the apostles, and especially Peter's failure to rid them of the chaff that was in them (pride and a desire for position and power amongst other things) and prepare them for the forty days of the post-resurrection ministry from their Risen Lord and for the Baptism of the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost. Peter's failure of His Lord produced a new and humble Peter, so that he was not only the leading apostle in the Church at Jerusalem, but also knew the greatest anointing of **ALL** the apostles. Exodus 33v11, Num 12v3-8, Job chapters 1 & 2, Matt 16v13-19, Luke 22v54-62, John 13v1-17, Acts 2v1-47, 5v12-16, 15v18, Rom 8v28,29, Gal 2v7,8, Col 3 (all), Heb 11v27, 12v5-11, 1Pet 1v3-9, Rev 12v10. As already stated, Moses, like so many of God's people, in this instance relied upon the arm of the flesh, instead of relying upon God and seeking His face, awaiting for His perfect timing for the fulfilment of prophecies and promises given to them (Psalm 24v1-6). Abraham and Sarah also did the same thing, when, instead of waiting for God to fulfil His promise to them for a son, went and took Hagar so that Abraham might sleep with her in order that she might bear them a son, whom they would take and call their own, hoping that God would accept him, however, this only made great problems, in that Hagar and Ishmael were both cast out from amongst them. The effects of this terrible lack of faith on the part of Abraham and Sarah is still felt very much today, in that Ishmael still hates Isaac. However, God strengthened their faith through divine visitations, so that fourteen years later after the birth of Ishmael, when Abraham was one hundred years old and Sarah was ninety years old, Sarah gave birth to Isaac.) Having fled to Midian, Moses spent the next forty years being prepared by God for the fulfilment of the prophecies and promises given to him that he would be God's appointed ruler and deliverer of Israel. The preparation of Moses that occurred during these forty years hidden away in Midian is the same as the thirty years that it took to turn the Babe of Bethlehem into the Christ of God at Nazareth, so that by the age of thirty His heart was filled with Grace and His mind with Truth. The written Word (of the Scriptures) had taken possession of His soul, mind and being, transforming the Babe of Bethlehem into the Christ of God, so that He could say to the Devil during His Temptation in the Wilderness that, "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God," (which Christ had done at Nazareth for 30 years, and would continue to do, right up until His Crucifixion and indeed afterwards: His descent into Hades, Resurrection and Ascension at which time He would sit down at the right hand of His Father on the Throne, where He would fulfil His Great High Priestly ministry after the order of Melchizedek during the whole of the Age of Grace, being subject to God the Father, at the end of which He would come in great power and glory to destroy the wicked, resurrect both Old and New Testament saints and bring both them and those

believers that are alive, home (to Heaven). John 17v18, 19v30, Acts 2v23-35, 3v20,21, Heb 2v16-18, 5v4,5,6, 7v25, 10v5-10, 12,13,). During the thirty years at Nazareth, the Lord Jesus, saw His past, present and future clearly laid out in the Scriptures, which He Himself had given to the Old Testament prophets. Like Joseph, it can be said of both Moses and the Lord Jesus (in Midian and Nazareth) as is written in Psalm 105v19, **"Until the time that his word came: the word of the Lord tried him."** Indeed, this Scripture holds true for every believer in relation to God's preparation off them for the specific ministry that He has for them. The Lord Jesus was always perfectly pure and sinless but it was through severe trial and temptation during the thirty hidden years at Nazareth that He was perfected so that He might be our compassionate, sympathetic and faithful Great High Priest after the order of Melchizedek. The Lord Jesus is more than able to keep His people from being tempted beyond what they can bear, even during the Great Tribulation (which will be worldwide) at the end of this Age (of Grace), when great pressures will come upon each member of the Body of Christ, from the World, the Flesh and the Devil. These exact same kind of pressures, are they that came upon the Lord Jesus, during His thirty hidden years at Nazareth (during which time His Father prepared Him for both His Earthly and Heavenly (High Priestly) Ministries), although, what He experienced and tasted during that time was greater than what any believer (or human being) will experience during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, or at any other time since Adam was created. The suffering and temptation that He experienced, was even greater than what the great Old Testament saint Job experienced. Gen 16v1-18v33, 21v1-7, Exodus 3v1-15, Deut 8v3, Job chapters 1 & 2, Isaiah 49v1-13, 50v3-8, Matt 4v4,15,16, John 1v14,46,47, 8v58, Acts 7v24-29, Rom 4v19-21, 1Cor 10v13, Gal 4v30, Heb 2v10, 4v15, 5v8,9, 11v26,27, 1Pet 1v3-9, 1John 2v14-17, Rev 7v9-17.

Deut 8v2,3 states: "And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live."

Both Moses (in Midian) and the Lord Jesus (at Nazareth) experienced what the second generation of Israel went through in the wilderness as recorded in Deut 8. By their "wilderness" experiences the Lord humbled them, proved them to know what was in their hearts, whether or not they would keep His commandments and that they might learn that "man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live." Both the Lord Jesus and Moses were prepared for not only their earthly ministries but also their heavenly ones as well through the ordinary affairs of life, the Lord Jesus as the carpenter (Greek, "tekton" (NT:5045), it comes from "tekein" (NT:5088), tiktoo, "to beget, to create," like "technee" (NT:5078), ("craft, art"), which means an artificer (as producer of fabrics), denotes any craftsman, but especially a worker in wood, a carpenter. It is a very old word from Homer's writings on down. It was originally applied to the worker in wood or builder with wood like our carpenter. Then it was used of any artisan or craftsman in metal, or in stone as well as in wood and even of sculpture. It is certain that Jesus worked with wood. Justin Martyr speaks of plows, yokes, etc., made by Jesus. He may also have worked in stone and may even have helped build some of the stone synagogues in Galilee like that in Capernaum.) of Nazareth (Mark 6v3) and Moses as a Shepherd in Midian and it is the same with every believer, it is in the ordinary affairs of life (secular work, family and home life, private (spiritual) devotions and church life) that the Lord will prepare them for not only their earthly ministry but also their heavenly as well. It is also important to note that secular work done as onto the Lord is as sacred as **ANY** ministry that is set in the Church by the Lord as Col 3v23,24 teaches, **"And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ."** Another point that needs to be made is that the greater the ministry that a person is seeking the Lord for, the greater the trials, temptations and provings that this person can and should expect to experience in the Lord's preparation of them or in other words, the trials, temptation and provings that a believer will experience are directly proportional to the power and authority of the ministry that is being sought for by that individual. A person who has little faith and is not seeking the Lord for a ministry will experience little, if any, trials, temptations and provings. Because of the great authority and power of Our Lord's earthly and heavenly ministries, during His earthly lifetime, He experienced greater temptations and provings than any other living person from the time of Adam right up until the His second coming (including the period known as the Great Tribulation) and yet in **ALL** these temptations and provings that took place in the moral and spiritual depravity of Nazareth, He lived a beautiful, loving, pure and holy life, which convicted all of those persons around Him of there sin, hence He experienced great persecutions and hash words spoken against Him, not only during the thirty hidden years at Nazareth, but also during His earthly ministry. Psalm 69v7-12,20,21, Matt 27v18, John 3v34, 5v16, 7v5, 8v59, 10v39, Heb 2v10,16-18, 4v15, 5v8,9, 7v26, 12v1-4.

The forty years of preparation at Midian produced a Christ like character in Moses, a person of great humility who was also the meekest man upon all the earth and who was also a prophet like unto the Lord Jesus, whom the Lord talked to face to face, as a man talks to his friend and not in dreams, visions, riddles or dark sayings. Although the feet of Moses stood upon the earth in Midian, in spirit he stood before the Throne of God. By sitting in the Lord's Presence as he sought Him in prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) during those forty hidden years in Midian, Moses imbibed the divine nature and was transformed from glory to glory, even as the New Testament believer can also be.

(In 2Cor 3v16-18 Paul states: "Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord (Yahweh), the veil shall be taken away. *(There is*

an allusion here to the removal of the veil from Moses' face whenever he returned to commune with God. Exodus 34v34). Now the Lord (Yahweh) is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord (Yahweh) is, there is liberty. But we all, **with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord (Yahweh)**, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord (Yahweh)."

Paul informs us that the New Testament believer can have the same experience as Moses had. As we seek His face in prayer, and sit in His Presence, our whole beings become impregnated with His spirit, so that our very souls are aware of the names of His beautiful character (which is His Glory)...**merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth**. We should also remember that when we are baptized in the Holy Spirit, He Who is with us, then enters into us, which brings to the believer an even greater sense of His Presence in their being and soul. Exodus 34v6,7, Psalm 24 (esp. v3-6), John 14v17, Acts 2 (esp. v4), 1Cor 3v16, 2Cor 6v16, Eph 1v13. If the believer is not willing to seek the Lord in prayer and sit in His Presence, there will be very little, if any, experience of His wonderful character and divine nature in their inner being, and so, very little change in them. However, if they were to seek Him and abide in His Presence, the believer will experience a beautiful change in their character, for Paul informs us in 2Cor 3v18, that it is as we behold the glory of the Lord (by abiding in His Presence), that we **"are changed into the same image** from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord (Yahweh)."

"Are changed," is in Greek, "metamorphoúmetha" the present passive of "metamorphoo" (NT:3339), derived from "meta" (NT:3226), denoting "change" or "transfer," and "morphe" (NT:3444), "form", and means to transform (literally or figuratively, "metamorphose"), change, transfigure, to change into another form, to change the inward reality to something else, the present tense denotes continuous action, so literally, "are being transformed" (into the same image), it is a work in progress. It is the word used for pagan mythological metamorphoses. "Morphe," "form," denotes the form regarded as the distinctive nature and character of the object, and is distinguished from "schema" (NT:4976), the changeable, outward "fashion:" in a man, for instance, his gestures, clothes, words, acts. The "morphe" partakes of the "essence" of a thing; the "schema" is an "accident" which may change, leaving it unaffected.

"Into the same image," is in Greek, "teén auteén eikóna," accusative retained with passive verb "metamorphoúmetha," into the likeness of God: "eikóna" is from "eikon" (NT:1504), a likeness, i.e., (literally) statue, profile, or (figuratively) representation, resemblance, image, a "derived likeness." The word involves the two ideas of representation and manifestation. "The idea of perfection does not lie in the word itself, but must be sought from the context." (Lightfoot). Thus the monarch's (Caesar's) head on the coin is "eikon," (Matt 22v20), or the statue in stone or other material is "eikon." (Rev 13v14). Thus by sitting in the Lord's Presence, the believer is "changed" into His "image."

The Greek word, "metamorphoo" (NT:3339) is also used in Rom 12v2; which states the following: "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And **be not conformed (suscheematízesthe) to this world: but be ye transformed (metamorphoústhe) by the renewing of your mind**, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."

"Conformed," is in Greek, "suscheematízesthe," the present passive imperative of "suschematizo" (NT:4964), with "mee", and means to stop being fashioned or do not have the habit of being fashioned.

"Transformed" in Greek is "metamorphoústhe," the present passive imperative of "metamorphoo" (NT:3339), be ye transformed in your inmost nature. Paul beseeches the believer not to be squeezed into the mould of the world, but by filling their minds with His Truth, and sitting in His Presence, they should be transformed into the image of Christ, their Saviour.

By contemplating our Lord's glory and wonderful character, by seeking His face and sitting in His Presence, and filling our minds with His Truth, we can put off the old man and put on the new man, and be progressively transfigured from glory to glory by the Spirit of God into our Lord's image; when this occurs the divine purpose to conform us to the image ("eikon") of Christ will be fulfilled. Rom 8v29, 12v1-2, 2Cor 3v16-18, Col 3v10, Heb 6v1,2 (also see Eph 3v14-21). In Rom 8v29, "conformed to the image," is "summorphous tes eikonos," the use of the adjective "summorphous," from "sun," which means "with," and "morphe," "form," shows that the conformity to the image is inward, deep and real. See Phil 2v6. We are not deified, that belongs to God alone, but Peter informs us that through the precious promises of God, we are made partakers of the divine nature. 2Pet 1v4.)

When Moses fled to Midian, he had no idea just how long it would be before the prophecies and promises concerning him being God's appointed ruler and deliverer of Israel would be fulfilled. As the time slipped by it would have been very easy for Moses to loose faith in their promised fulfilment and go into unbelief, however, he didn't: so the question must be asked, "why did he not go into unbelief," well the answer is that it was the personal divine visitation of God the Word, the Pre-Incarnate Christ, that he had had, before he refused to be called Pharaoh's son and the prophecies and promises given to him at that time, that gave him the light that shone in the darkness of Midian. Heb 11v27 states: "...For **he endured**, as seeing him who is invisible." "He endured" is in Greek, "ekartéresen," which is the aorist active indicative of "kartereo"

(NT:2594) and means to be strong, i.e., (figuratively) steadfast (patient), endure, staunch and steadfast. The aorist tense gathers the forty years in Midian into one exhibition of wonderful perseverance in faith, he stuck resolutely to the choice he had made because of the wonderful light he had received when he was given the most precious promises and prophecies from the mouth of the Pre-Incarnate Christ, the Living God, the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, Who would soon fulfil the promise that had been given to Abraham. Gen 15v1-21, Exodus 34v5-7, Num 12v1-16, Deut 18v15-22, Dan 7v28, 8v27, Acts 3v22,23, 7v37, 17v17, 2Cor 3v16-18, Heb 11v24-27, 1Pet 1v10-12, 2Pet 1v3,4,19.

Another **VERY** important point that must be made clear is that the humanity of the Lord Jesus was exactly the same as Moses' (in every way) and indeed **EVERY** other human being's, for if it hadn't, he could **NOT** have been "in all points tempted like as we are," (Heb 4v15) and neither could He have been a prophet like unto Moses. Deut 18v15-19 states: **"The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord said unto me, They have well spoken that which they have spoken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him."**

Any other teachings or doctrines (such as Augustine's doctrine of Original Sin or Born in Sin theories) that reject the **REAL** humanity of the dear Lord Jesus is simply the destructive heresy of Docetic Gnosticism and **MUST BE FULLY REJECTED!**

Paul tells us in Phil 2v7, that at the Incarnation, Jesus, "made Himself of no reputation." (NKJV)

Other translations are as follows: **Revised Standard Version:** "Emptied himself." **Amplified Bible:** "Stripped Himself." **The Living Bible:** "Laid aside His mighty power and glory." **TEV:** "He gave up all He had." **Lightfoot:** "He stripped Himself of the insignia of majesty,"

"Made Himself of no reputation" in the Greek is "heauton ekenosen", literally translated means, "emptied Himself" of His omnipotence, omniscience, omnipresence, transcendence and immutability, i.e. His Divine abilities, power, glory and perfections. But after the "emptying" He still continued to be God, as v6 states, "being in the form of God," "huparchon en morphe Theou," "being" is "huparchon", the present active participle of "huparcho," ("existing" is a better translation of the Greek) which denotes that what He was before the Incarnation (i.e. God) He continued to be after it, God, but God "emptied."

Because of this we see that it was impossible for the Lord Jesus to use His Divine abilities to do the miracles, because He "emptied Himself" of all His power and glory at the Incarnation (also see John 5v19-30 (esp. v19,30), 14v10). Paul then continues to tell us in Phil 2v7,8, that after Had "emptied" Himself, He then was: "taking the form of a bondservant, and coming in the likeness of men. And being found in appearance as a man." (NKJV)

A. T. Robinson gives the following helpful comments on Christ's emptying in Phil 2v7,8:

"The form of a servant", Greek, 'morphēn doulou', He took the characteristic attributes ('morphēn' as in v6) of a slave. His humanity was as real as His Deity." **End of quote.**

"In the likeness of men", Greek, "en homoiomati anthropon", It was a likeness, but a real likeness (Kennedy), no mere phantom humanity as the Docetic Gnostics held. Note the difference in tense between 'huparchon' (eternal existence in the 'morphē' of God) and 'genomenos' (second aorist middle participle of 'ginomai,' becoming, definite entrance in time upon his humanity)." **End of quote.**

"Being found in appearance as a man," Greek, "schemati heuretheis hos anthropos", "in appearance" is in Greek, "schemati", and refers to that which is purely outward and appeals to the senses, "the outward guise" as it appealed to the sense of mankind, His outward guise was altogether human.

In Phil 2v5-11, Paul refutes the Docetic Gnostic theory that Jesus had no human body and the Cerinthian Gnostic teaching that the aeon Christ came upon and used the man Jesus, and that they were two separate beings, departing from him just before he died upon the Cross. In 1John 4v1-6, John states that the denial of the humanity of Jesus by the Gnostics was the spirit of antichrist. Jesus had a real humanity as well as a true deity.

The Lord Jesus came into the world like any other child; He spent 40 weeks in the womb of Mary, and then was born in Bethlehem. The Lord Jesus having "emptied Himself" of His wisdom and knowledge at the time of the Incarnation, had to then learn it all again, and this He did as Luke tells us in Luke 2v40,52; "And the Child grew and became strong in spirit (Majority Text), filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon Him.... And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men." (NKJV)

Jesus had to learn, develop and become spiritually strong just like any other child. The phrase "became strong in spirit" is the exact phrase that is used of the spiritual development of John Baptist. Luke 1v80.

(For a full study on the terrible effects of the destructive heresy of Augustine's doctrine of Original Sin and Born in Sin theories, please see the study entitled, "The Disastrous Effects Of The Doctrine Of Original Sin" which can be found at www.truthforthelastdays.com)

(Please See Appendix 5: Reuel (Jethro), The Priest Of Midian.)

In Exodus 3v1-4v17 we read the following:

"Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and came to the mountain of God, even to Horeb. And the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed. And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt. And when the Lord saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I. And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground. Moreover he said, I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon God. And the Lord said, I have surely seen the affliction of my people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows; And I am come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land unto a good land and a large, unto a land flowing with milk and honey; unto the place of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites. Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel is come unto me: and I have also seen the oppression wherewith the Egyptians oppress them. Come now therefore, and I will send thee unto Pharaoh, that thou mayest bring forth my people the children of Israel out of Egypt. And Moses said unto God, Who am I, that I should go unto Pharaoh, and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt? And he said, Certainly I will be with thee; and this shall be a token unto thee, that I have sent thee: When thou hast brought forth the people out of Egypt, ye shall serve God upon this mountain. And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is his name? what shall I say unto them? And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, The Lord God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial unto all generations. Go, and gather the elders of Israel together, and say unto them, The Lord God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, appeared unto me, saying, I have surely visited you, and seen that which is done to you in Egypt: And I have said, I will bring you up out of the affliction of Egypt unto the land of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites, unto a land flowing with milk and honey. And they shall hearken to thy voice: and thou shalt come, thou and the elders of Israel, unto the king of Egypt, and ye shall say unto him, The Lord God of the Hebrews hath met with us: and now let us go, we beseech thee, three days' journey into the wilderness, that we may sacrifice to the Lord our God. And I am sure that the king of Egypt will not let you go, no, not by a mighty hand. And I will stretch out my hand, and smite Egypt with all my wonders which I will do in the midst thereof: and after that he will let you go. And I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians: and it shall come to pass, that, when ye go, ye shall not go empty: But every woman shall borrow of her neighbour, and of her that sojourneth in her house, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold, and raiment: and ye shall put them upon your sons, and upon your daughters; and ye shall spoil the Egyptians. And Moses answered and said, But, behold, they will not believe me, nor hearken unto my voice: for they will say, The Lord hath not appeared unto thee. And the Lord said unto him, What is that in thine hand? And he said, A rod. And he said, Cast it on the ground. And he cast it on the ground, and it became a serpent; and Moses fled from before it. And the Lord said unto Moses, Put forth thine hand, and take it by the tail. And he put forth his hand, and caught it, and it became a rod in his hand: That they may believe that the Lord God of their fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath appeared unto thee. And the Lord said furthermore unto him, Put now thine hand into thy bosom. And he put his hand into his bosom: and when he took it out, behold, his hand was leprous as snow. And he said, Put thine hand into thy bosom again. And he put his hand into his bosom again; and plucked it out of his bosom, and, behold, it was turned again as his other flesh. And it shall come to pass, if they will not believe thee, neither hearken to the voice of the first sign, that they will believe the voice of the latter sign. And it shall come to pass, if they will not believe also these two signs, neither hearken unto thy voice, that thou shalt take of the water of the river, and pour it upon the dry land: and the water which thou takest out of the river shall become blood upon the dry land. And Moses said unto the Lord, O my Lord, I am not eloquent, neither heretofore, nor since thou hast spoken unto thy servant: but I am slow of speech, and of a slow tongue. And the Lord said unto him, Who hath made man's mouth? or who maketh the dumb, or deaf, or the seeing, or the blind? have not I the Lord? Now therefore go, and I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what thou shalt say. And he said, O my Lord, send, I pray thee, by the hand of him whom thou wilt send. And the anger of the Lord was kindled against Moses, and he said, Is not Aaron the Levite thy brother? I know that he can speak well. And also, behold, he cometh forth to meet thee: and when he seeth thee, he will be glad in his heart. And thou shalt speak unto him, and put words in his mouth: and I will be with thy mouth, and with his mouth, and will teach

you what ye shall do. And he shall be thy spokesman unto the people: and he shall be, even he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of God. And thou shalt take this rod in thine hand, wherewith thou shalt do signs."

With Gen 15 (esp. v12-21) in mind, at the end of forty years, with the preparation of Moses (to fulfil the work as God's appointed ruler and deliverer of Israel) being completed, God the Word (the pre-incarnate Christ), The Angel of The Lord (which is in Hebrew, "Yahweh Mal'ak" i.e. "The Angel, The Lord" (two nouns in opposition), there is no "of" in the Hebrew, and better translated "Yahweh Messenger," Christ was not only "The Sent One" of the Father under the New Covenant, but He was also "The Sent One" of Yahweh (the Father) under the Old Covenant. John 6v57) appeared to him on Horeb (Ussher dates this event as 1491 BC), the mountain of God (Horeb is called the "Mount of God" by anticipation, with reference to the consecration which it subsequently received through the revelation of God upon its summit. Exodus 3v12, 19v3,20-31v18, 34v2-35.) God, Who had prepared Moses by the ordinary everyday events in his life, appeared to him as he was going about his daily work of being a shepherd. He "broke into" his daily routine (as He can also do into ours if necessary) by appearing to him in the fire of a burning bush which, although burning, was not consumed by fire. Exodus 3v2,4 states the following: **"And the angel of the Lord appeared unto him** in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush was not consumed. And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt. And when **the Lord** saw that he turned aside to see, **God** called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I." The Angel of the Lord Who appeared to Moses is called "Lord" and "God" (i.e. which translates the Hebrew words "Yahweh" and "Elohiym" respectively) in Exodus 3v4 and in Exodus 3v14 He calls Himself "I AM THAT I AM" and the shortened version "I AM." Exodus 3v1-4v17, John 1v1-3, 8v58, Col 3 (all).

Yahweh, the divine name, the tetragrammaton, was God's covenant name with Israel, as set forth in the Old Testament. The sacred name of "Yahweh," or "Jehovah," depending on which form you prefer to use, comes from the Hebrew verb "to be" (hayah (OT:1961); Exodus 3v14,15, states, "And God said to Moses, **I AM THAT I AM**, (Hebrew, EHYEH ASHER EHYEH) and He said, You shall say to the Israelites I AM (EHYEH) has sent me to you. This is my name for ever, and by this name I am to be remembered to all generations." (In Exodus 3v14, "I AM THAT I AM" "Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh," is translated into the Greek of the Septuagint as, "ego eimi ho ohn." In the second half of Exodus 3v14, "Ehyeh Asher Ehyeh" is shortened to "Ehyeh," that is, "I am," that the Septuagint translates as "oh ohn," i.e. "the one who is." However, in most other places in the Septuagint, "ego eimi" is used to translate the Hebrew "Ehyeh." e.g. Deut 32v39. And in John 8v58 it states, "Before Abraham was, 'genesthai,' I am," "ego ó eimí," i.e. timeless existence." Out dear Lord Jesus is none other than the Great "I AM" of the Old Testament. In the passage where Jesus walked on the water, He was not merely saying, "It is I," but rather, as "ego eimi" really means, "I Am." Matt 14v27, Mark 6v50, John 6v20, John 8v24,28, 13v19). Hebrew scholars have stated that "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH" means, "I AM WHO I AM, AND WHAT I AM: AND I WILL BE, WHAT I WILL BE." The name "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH" and its context can mean, "I will be with you ALL the time, in ALL situations." However, it means more than that, rather, **"I will be with you, at ALL times, and in ALL situations, to be what I am to you."** God comes to make **ALL** His abilities and love available to us at **ALL** times, in **ALL** situations and circumstances. The name of "Jehovah" or "Yahweh," whichever way you prefer to pronounce it, encapsulates the meaning of the great name of God, "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH," "I AM THAT I AM," and manifests the eternal availability of God's love and power. The name of Jesus has been given to us, it is covenanted to us by His own shed blood, and when we call on His name, He comes to give us what we need, His Name carries all the Divine love, power and presence of the covenant names of God. Exodus 34v6,7.

(Please see Appendix 4: "All The Covenant Names Of Yahweh Are Given To Us In The Name Of Jesus.")

An important fact that needs to be explained, is that in Exodus 6v3, it states the following: "I appeared to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob as God Almighty [El-Shaddai], **but by My name the Lord [Yahweh — the redemptive name of God] I did not make Myself known to them [in acts and great miracles].** [Gen 17:1.] I have also established My covenant with them to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their temporary residence in which they were strangers." (Amplified Bible)

Abraham certainly knew the name Yahweh, for it is recorded in Gen 22v14: "And Abraham called the name of that place '**Jehovah-Jireh**,' because it is said this day in the mount, '**Jehovah doth provide**.'" However, what Exodus 6v3 is stating, is that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob did **NOT** know God in Covenant relationship as "Yahweh" BUT as "**El-Shaddai**" (God Almighty).

Once God saw that Moses had turned aside to look, He said to him, "Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground." It was God's Presence and God's Presence alone that made the ground holy, it was not anything else. When God comes to dwell in our hearts, souls, beings and bodies it then makes them (and therefore us, the believers) "holy ground." As soon as Yahweh Mal'ak told him Whom He was, Moses immediately hid his face from God in case he would die (for no man can see God **in His fullness** and live), but it is obvious that this appearance of the pre-incarnate Christ to Moses was such that His full Power and Glory was heavily filtered, otherwise Moses certainly would have died, for flesh and blood (i.e. the human body) can simply not stand the full revelation of God's Power and Glory, hence, when Christ comes our earthly bodies are changed in the twinkling of an eye and we receive our

glorified Heavenly (spiritual) bodies (which will be like unto Jesus') by which we can enter into and experience His full Power and Glory in Heaven during the Millennium and the Ages and Ages. Exodus 33v20-23, John 17v23, 1Cor 6v19, 13v12, 15v50-54, 2Cor 6v16, 1Tim 6v16, Heb 6v5, 1John 3v1-3, Rev 7v9-17, 14v1-5, 20v4-6, 21v1-22v21.

Yahweh Mal'ak then tells Moses why He has appeared to him, His purpose being to fulfil the promise and prophecy given to Abraham in Gen 15v1-21 to deliver them from Egypt and to bring them into a land flowing with milk and honey. The Lord of Glory, the Great I Am, Who is not limited in time and space (for He lives in **ALL** time in **EVERY** age) at that very moment in time with Moses, also had presence and consciousness back in time four hundred and thirty years (1922 BC, Gal 3v17) to the time of His appearance to Abraham which is recorded in Gen 15v1-21 (with Ezek 8v1-18, Dan 8v1-27). He states in Exodus 3v7, "I have surely seen the affliction of my people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows." The Lord knew not only the great suffering of Israel and had heard their cry under their taskmasters, but He also, during the whole time of their enslavement by the Egyptians, felt in His very being the great inner pain, suffering and torment that every single Israelite suffered during their whole lifetime under this great bondage inflicted upon them by the Egyptians, as Isaiah 63v9 states, "**In all their affliction he was afflicted.**" And in Heb 4v15: "For we have not an high priest which cannot **be touched with the feeling of** our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin." "Be touched with the feeling of" is in Greek, "sumpatheésai," the first aorist passive infinitive of "sumpatheo" (NT:4834), and means, to suffer with another, to be affected with the same feelings as another, to be affected similarly, and so to feel and experience the same pain and suffering as another. The Lord Jesus (along with the other two members of the Trinity) bears, **ALL** the pain, of **ALL** the world, **ALL** the time! So now, the Lord of Glory, Himself, had come down to earth to deliver His people Israel out of the bondage of Egypt and bring them into a land flowing with "milk and honey" (i.e. a region of extraordinary productiveness, abounding in all things necessary for the support and comfort of life.) Rom 8v26,34, Heb 7v25.

In Exodus 3v11, we read, "And Moses said unto God, **Who am I**, that I should go unto Pharaoh, and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt?" "Who am I" is translated by the TEV (Today's English Version) as "**I am nobody**," which really shows forth the great humility of the mind and spirit of Moses that the forty years of preparation in Midian had produced; this great humility of mind and spirit was also one of the wonderful qualities of the dear Lord Jesus, for we read in Matt 11v28-30, "Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for **I am meek and lowly in heart**: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light." Anybody whom the Lord is going to give great power and authority to will **ALWAYS** be lowly in spirit and have great humility, for if this was not the case, having great power and authority would only puff them up and make them proud and arrogant and unusable by the Lord. Isaiah 66v2 states, "For all those things hath mine hand made, and those things have been, saith the Lord: **but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word.**" It is really only the "nobodies" of the world, whom the world despises and rejects and looks down upon that God uses, so Christian, if you are feeling like this, take heart, God will be able to use you in a mighty way! 1Cor 1v26-31. Like Moses, we really need to tremble at God's Word **AND** obey it, whether from the Scriptures or through the gifts of the Holy Spirit:

Some examples of those who heard God's Word and obeyed. Noah and Abraham Heb 11v7,17-19, Rehoboam 2Chron 11v4, Compare 12v14, Pekah 2Chron 28v9, Ahab 1Kings 21v27. Even Ahab gained a respite by trembling at God's Word. Amaziah 2Chron 25v7. What a good man Josiah was! 2Chron 34v18-33, Paul Acts 16v19.

Some examples of people who heard God's Word and rebelled. Noah's contemporaries 1Pet 3v20, 2Pet 3v5, Lot's sons in law Gen 19v1,12-15,24,28. The generation which had not seen the mighty acts of God's power in action in Canaan. Judges 2v1,2,10-19. This is a solemn warning to any movement that is brought into being by the power and grace of God, but which later loses that power. Balaam and Balak Numb 22v1-12, 24v1-9, 31v8-16, Rev 2v14. Saul 1Sam 18v12-29, 13v8-14, 15v3,9,15,26, 1Chron 10v13,14. What a warning! Asa, a godly man rebels at God's Word through a prophet. 2Chron 16v7-10, Jeroboam 1Kings 13v33, Israel 2Kings 17v13-18, Neh 9v26,27, Judah 2Chron 24v19-22, 36v15,16. The religious leaders of Israel in Christ's day. Matt 21v32, Luke 7v29,30, Matt 23v1-39. etc. God's people often rejected the Word of God, and the leaders that God appointed. Moses Acts 7v25,35-39, Samuel 1Sam 8v1-8, Jeremiah Jer 42v1-6, 43v1-4, Paul 2Cor 10v10, 11v4,12,13,20-22, Gal 1v6-9. People can tremble in fear at God's Word, they know it is true, but will not accept it, or obey it. Josh 2v9-11, 5v1, 9v9,24, 1Kings 22v14-35, Acts 24v24-27.

In reply to Moses' statement that "he was a nobody," in Exodus 3v12, God states, "Certainly I will be with thee." Moses certainly knew and realised that it was God's Presence and God's Presence alone that made **ALL** the difference and that it was the **ONLY** thing that made God's people different from **ALL** other peoples upon the face of the earth. Exodus 33v16. So often today, Christians, churches, denominations and ministries think that the most important things for the spread of the Gospel and doing God's work is money, wealth, worldly position and power, however, such things are an abomination in the eyes of the Lord. The norm today (and indeed for many centuries), has been, instead of a local Church seeking the face of the Lord Jesus (Who is the Head of the Body) for His plans and purposes, simply make their own and then ask God to bless them. Very rarely does the Lord Jesus get His plans and will carried out upon earth through the Body of Christ. In response to this terrible situation, the Lord Jesus, on one occasion, gave this prophecy to C L Parker for the Church: "**I do so much that I have no pleasure in!**" What a terrible thing it is when the Lord of Glory is shut firmly out of His Church (which He

purchased by the shedding of His own blood) and He is forced to knock at the door of believer's heart, so that they might let Him in so that He might sup with them and they with Him, however, so very often these urgent and persistent knocks are completely ignored by the believer. Jesus reproves and chastens those who He loves, if we will not listen to His wise counsel we must be taught to do so by a chastening that must of necessity be painful. Job 5v17, Prov 3v12, Luke 16v14,15, John 3v20,34, 5v19,20,30, 14v10, 16v18, Acts 1v14,2v42, 4v23-31, 5v12-16, 20v28, Heb 12v1-17, Rev 3v14-22.

The church at Laodicea had been tended by Epaphras, a most sacrificial and prayerful servant of God, but the cares of this life, and the deceitfulness of riches, and other worldly desires, had dominated their lives and choked the Word of God. Matt 13v22, Mark 4v19, Luke 8v11-15. Church History and the Laodiceans prove that nothing can corrupt a person's character and spiritual life as quickly as wealth and affluence. Mark 4v19. All the Laodiceans actually possessed was a blind self-conceit and complacency; the fire, enthusiasm and love that Christ expects were gone, they had got to the place where they thought that their godliness was proved by material gain. Notice how the Lord Jesus had good things to say about different churches, groups of believers or individuals in six of the seven churches that He addresses in Rev 2v1-3v22, however, in the church at Laodicea He had not one good thing to say about any one individual, indeed **EVERY** believer in this church He states was, "wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked!" There is **NO** such great corrupting influence upon believers as money and wealth, there are **VERY** few Christians that the Lord can trust with great wealth. The Lord Jesus promises to meet **ALL** of our needs, but He will **NOT** meet our greeds. There is a story about a certain Pastor, whom the Devil and the powers of darkness were trying to corrupt, they tried absolutely everything but could not corrupt him, until one demon said, "we have not yet tried giving him wealth and money," so he came into a lot of money and it was the great wealth and prosperity that was the cause of his downfall and corruption. Today in the church there is a teaching called the "prosperity gospel" which many Christians have embraced as being from God, however, this perversion and twisting of the Scriptures is none other than a "doctrine of demons." Believers, who, in these last evil days of this Age (of Grace), as the Great Tribulation rapidly approaches, who covet and seek after money and prosperity are ensuring their backsliding and eventual apostasy before the second coming of Christ so that (at His coming) they will be amongst the wicked who wail and gnash their teeth (in bitter anger and hatred) at the Lord because of "a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries." At the start of the Great Tribulation, if a believer's house is built on sand, it will collapse into a heap of rubble very quickly, so let us make sure that our "houses" have deep foundations and are built on rock, i.e. that our minds are filled with Truth (as revealed in the Scriptures, and **NOT** unscriptural man made traditions), and that we have a living faith and relationship with the Lord, that is fortified and energized by continuous communion with Him. Matt 7v24-27, 24v45-25v13, Luke 6v46-49, Rom 8v26,27, Eph 6v10-20, Phil 4v19, Col 1v7, 4v12, 1Thess 5v17, 1Tim 4v1-7, 1Tim 6v5,6, (compare Phil 1v21, 3v7, 2Cor 8v9), Heb 6v4-8, 10v26-31, 2Pet 2v1-3.

A Strong Word Of Warning Against Perverting The Prophecies In The Book Of Revelation!

We read the following in Rev 1v3, 22v18-20: "Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand....For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, **If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.** He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus."

The Book of Revelation is the only book in the Bible where it states that there is a blessing upon the readers of it who not only read the words thereof, but who also keep those things which are written therein. God also warns all who read this book to take it **VERY** seriously; those who trifle with its words will reap the most dreadful consequences. In Rev 22v18,19, our Lord gives a solemn warning against perverting the prophecies of Revelation. Jesus addresses this warning to the hearers of this book, and not just to copyists or expositors of the Revelation. Commentators who distort the prophecies of Revelation do not accept our Lord's warnings in these verses, and state that Jesus did not say these words. However, it is our Lord Himself who testifies and bears solemn witness to this book, and gives the strongest possible warning against perverting its truths and prophecies. Jesus is not referring to the New Testament, or to the Bible as a whole, though similar warnings are given elsewhere concerning rejection, corruption and perversion of the Scriptures. This warning has certainly been needed, and very often little heeded, if we are to judge from the many wilful perversions that Revelation has received at the hands of both copyists and expositors. Our Lord warns that plagues and the loss of the tree of life and our heavenly inheritance are possible through perversion of this book. **If a person adds a secret pre-tribulation advent and rapture to this book, WHICH IS NOT THERE, this person is running the risk of the plagues stated in this book to come upon them and loss of the tree of life and heavenly inheritance!**

God has already executed preachers for wrong doctrine on the Second Coming of Christ.

In 1Tim 1v19,2, we read that Paul delivered Hymenaeus and Alexander to Satan that they might learn not to blaspheme. We learn from 2Tim 2v16-18, that Paul did this because they had overthrown the faith of some Christians, by saying that the resurrection and the second coming of Christ had already taken place. Paul said their wrong doctrine ate like a canker and gangrene, and they died for their dangerous heresy, executed by the operation of God's judgement gifts through Paul; just as Peter had executed Ananias and Sapphira with those same gifts. Acts 5v1-11. **Not:** In Acts 5v11, how "great fear fell

upon all the Church, and upon as many as heard these things." **The deaths of Hymenaeus, Philetus, and Alexander, show how serious and dangerous it is to misinterpret prophecy.**

In Matt 24v48-51, Jesus warns us that if Christians believe that His second coming and the rapture take place before the Great Tribulation; then, when it does not happen, their faith will be overthrown, and they will say, "My Lord delays His coming;" and as a result go and live bad lives. Will the Lord Jesus feel any more tolerant of such faith destroying teachers and teaching, than He did of Hymenaeus and his false doctrine? Our Lord reveals the striking fact that these people will blame God for a delay, rather than examine and question their own doctrine. **Let us be very careful what we teach about our Lord's second coming.**

We really need to tremble at this Word of the Lord and indeed ALL His Word! Isaiah 66v2.

In Exodus 3v14,15 it states, "And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you. And God said moreover unto Moses, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, The Lord God of your fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, hath sent me unto you: **this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial unto all generations.**"

In these verses Yahweh clearly states and makes known His Name, and that He should be remembered and called upon by this name by **ALL** successive generations; however, it is a sad fact that by the time of our Lord's Incarnation, the religious leaders of His time, the Scribes, Pharisees and the Sadducees, although the name YHWH was still written in the Scriptures, would not pronounce The Name, but substituted it with "Adonay" (Lord), with the result that the correct pronunciation of The Name became almost completely lost. They refused to speak it (and knowledge of its pronunciation was reserved only for the religious leaders), and forbade the ordinary people also not to speak it (even if they happened to know it), in spite of Yahweh's injunction to Moses that, **"this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial unto all generations."** This terrible situation came about sometime between 400 BC (shortly after the writing of the last book of the Old Testament, Malachi) and 285 BC (when the Septuagint, the Greek version of the Old Testament was started). However, although the Scribes, Pharisees and the Sadducees hid it, our Lord manifested it during His hidden years at Nazareth and during His ministry by invoking **ALL** the covenant names of Yahweh. We read in Matthew 26v53: "Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than **twelve legions of angels?**"

The Lord Jesus was referring to the fact, that if He had invoked the covenant name of "YAHWEH TSABAOOTH" - "The Lord of Hosts," this would have resulted in the Father sending more than "twelve legions of angels," to deliver Him.

The early Church followed their Lord's example and continued to invoke the Covenant names of Yahweh on **ALL** occasions, in their lives, ministries, informal fellowship meetings etc. so that **ALL** their needs and requests were met. John 14v13,14, 15v7,16, 16v23,24,26, Acts 22v16, 2Cor 1v20, 2Tim 2v22.

James 5v4 also states the following: "Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries ("cries" is in Greek "boai" the nominative of "boe" (NT:995), to shout, cry or call for aid) of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the **Lord of sabaoth** (Greek, "Kuríou Sabaoóth", Hebrew "Yahweh ts'baa'owt." This Scripture and Romans 9v29, is a quotation from Isaiah 5v9).

James also remembers how his (half) brother, the Lord Jesus, called upon and invoked these Great (covenant) Names constantly, when they both were living at Nazareth, during the 30 years when Jesus was being prepared by His Father, for both His Earthly and Heavenly ministries. After Joseph died, Jesus (the carpenter) became the bread winner for the whole family, which consisted of four brothers, at least three sisters and Mary, Matt 13v55,56, Mark 6v3 (Note: in Matt 13v56, it states "all" **not** "both" which indicates that He had at least three (half) sisters), a total of at least nine persons He was working for, to feed, clothe and keep. It was through invoking the covenant names of Yahweh, which enabled Him to care for His family in such a complete way, even when His brothers and sisters despised and rejected Him because His beautiful unselfish loving life manifested the darkness and sin in theirs. Even with the terrible animosity that they manifested towards Him for most of His life at Nazareth, He still lovingly prayed them through, so that on the Day of Pentecost, Mary and His four brothers were in the Upper Room, awaiting for the coming of the promise of the Father, the Holy Spirit. Psalm 69v7-11, Matt 5v39,44, John 3v19,20, 7v5, Acts 1v4-8,14, 2v1-47.

From James 5v4, we also see that **ALL** the believers (even the poor despised labourers and workers) of the early Church, were taught to call upon and invoke the covenant names of Yahweh, even to the extent of when they had been defrauded, crying out to God to deal with their defrauders.

History has repeated itself again, because even though the Lord Jesus re-introduced the covenant names of Yahweh into the Church during His earthly ministry, and the early church followed His example by invoking them during the first three centuries (up until the time that Constantine (who was the 6th head of the Beast, Rev 17v10) issued the Edict of Milan (Toleration) in 313 AD, with him heaping money, wealth, worldly power and position upon the Church, which resulted in the Church loosing the Presence and Power of the Lord, because they relied upon their new found wealth and **NOT** upon their

Lord, Rev 3v14-22), the Devil then made sure that once again, with the introduction of the Edict of Milan, they became forgotten about (because he knew that invoking them by the believer (in both Old and New Testament times) ensured his defeat), so that today the vast majority of Christians do not even know what they are, never mind invoking them. Matt 13v33, 16v6.

As the end of this Age (of Grace) rapidly approaches (especially the last seven years, the last week of Daniel's seventy weeks prophecy, Dan 9v20-27), it is most important that the believer learns about these Great Names and invokes them constantly (for the covenant names of God manifest His **LOVE** and **POWER** for the people of God to use to defend themselves and for the provision of **ALL** things for them), for therein lies their victory over the world, the flesh and the Devil, especially for protection during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation (Rev 7v9-17). As Elijah (and the rest of the Old Testament prophets) of old used the Covenant Names of Yahweh most effectively, so the Two Witnesses (and other believers with the same kind of power and authority as Elijah had) will do so also, and bring devastating judgements upon the armies and followers of Antichrist who try to hurt or harm them. 1Kings 18v15, 2Kings 1v1-18, 2Kings 6v8-23, Daniel 11v32, Mal 4v5,6, James 5v1-4, Rev 11v1-6. The ordinary believer, during the last seven years of this Age, will also use the covenant names (1Cor 1v20), especially "Yahweh Tsabaoth" in crying out to God for Him to avenge them of their adversaries, which He promises to do so speedily, Luke 18v1-8, states the following:

"And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came (kept coming) unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary ("she weary" Greek, "hupoopiázee," present active subjunctive of "hupopiazō" (NT:5299), is literally "beat him under the eye, and thus blacken it") me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. **And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry** ("cry" is in Greek, "booónton" from "boao" (NT:994), the same Greek word ("boai" nominative case of "boe" (NT:995), which is derived from "boao" (NT:994) and used in James 5v4, of the labourers crying out to God for justice) **day and night unto him, though he bear long with them** (that is the wicked)? **I tell you that he will avenge them speedily.** Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?"

With God the Word, the pre-incarnate Christ, making known and giving the Name of "Yahweh" (which encapsulates the meaning of the great name of God, "EHYEH ASHER EHYEH," "I AM THAT I AM" and manifests the eternal availability of God's love, power, provision and protection.) to Moses, He gave to him ALL His wonderful covenant names to use so as to deliver the Israelites from bondage in Egypt and for the full provision of ALL future needs off every individual Israelite and Christian in ALL circumstances and at ALL times by invoking and calling upon THE NAME! Deut 2v7, 8v4, Neh 9v20,21, Psalm 105v40,41, 2Cor1v20, Phil 4v19.

The Lord again reminds Moses of the wonderful prophecy and promises that He had spoken to his father Abraham in Gen 15, that He was going to give land of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites to Israel and that they would plunder the Egyptians and go out of Egypt with great wealth. However, Moses still finds reasons why he cannot go to Egypt, suggesting that the Elders of Israel might not believe that Yahweh had appeared to him, so the Lord gives him three signs that he could perform to confirm his words that He had indeed appeared to Moses: his staff, when thrown down turning into a snake, when picked up, becoming a staff again and putting his hand into his robe and taking it out turns it Leprous and putting it back into his robe and taking it out again, it becomes normal again. The third and last sign that the Lord gave Moses, if the Israelites refuse to hear him after the first two, was by taking water from the Nile and pouring it onto the ground, it would become blood. However, Moses gives the Lord another "excuse" why he can't go, this being that he cannot speak well, however, it is recorded in Acts 7v22, that Moses was "mighty (powerful) in his speech" (Amplified Bible), at this point the Lord's patience with him is wearing thin, the Lord tells Moses that "I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what thou shalt say." Moses is quite determined that he is not going and says to the Lord, "No, Lord, please send someone else." (Today's English Version). At this point the Lord's patience is almost exhausted with Moses and Exodus 4v14 states, "Then the anger of the Lord blazed against Moses..." (Amplified Bible), 4v14-17 goes on to say, "Is not Aaron the Levite thy brother? I know that he can speak well. And also, behold, he cometh forth to meet thee: and when he seeth thee, he will be glad in his heart. **And thou shalt speak unto him, and put words in his mouth: and I will be with thy mouth, and with his mouth, and will teach you what ye shall do.** And he shall be thy spokesman unto the people: and he shall be, even he shall be to thee instead of a mouth, **and thou shalt be to him instead of God.** And thou shalt take this rod in thine hand, wherewith thou shalt do signs." Aaron would stand in the same relation to Moses, as a prophet to God: the prophet only spoke what God inspired him with, and Moses would be as God to him. From this statement in Exodus 4v16, "and Moses would be as God to him," we can really see the Christ like quality of his character and how the pre-incarnate Christ, God the Word trusted Moses to this great extent; the Lord, Who knew every thought and intent of Moses' heart, soul and mind from before the foundation of the earth, also states of Moses in Num 12v7, "in all My house he [is] stedfast." (Young's Literal Translation) This kind of sentiment is only written in one other place in the Scriptures and that is in Zech 12v8, where it states, "In that day shall the Lord defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; **and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the Lord before them.**" This Scripture is a reference to the powerful ministries like that of the Two Witnesses, who during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, call down fire from Heaven, turn the waters to

blood and strike the earth with every plague **as often as they desire** (this is certainly a reference to the "greater works" in John 14v12). Even Moses could only bring judgement upon the Egyptians when directed by God to do so, however, a new and much greater authority comes into the Church at the beginning of the Great Tribulation to deal with Antichrist, his followers and the False Prophet, who are linking up with the Devil and the powers of darkness and doing lying signs, wonders and miracles, even calling fire down from heaven, so as to deceive people into following them, which ultimately, if followed, leads to their apostasy, then being consumed by the breath of His mouth at His second coming and being put into the Lake of Fire. This great power and authority that will be given too the Two Witnesses and other like ministries will be most necessary, for during the Great Tribulation "wickedness is multiplied" because immediately before the Great Tribulation (which is due to the wrath of the Devil and **NOT** the wrath of God) starts, the Devil and the evil angels are cast out of the Heavenlies into the earth by Michael and his angels and God then removes His restraint from them, with the result that the mystery of iniquity (lawlessness) then works fully. With God's restraint being removed from the Devil and the powers of darkness at the beginning of the Great Tribulation, the responsibility for the restraint upon the wicked, wickedness, the Devil and the power of darkness in the world will then be the Church's, who will fulfil this role through implicative prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335), which means "to make interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances"). Dan 8v24, 11v32, Matt 24v12, John 14v12-14, 2Thess 1v6-9, 2v1-12, 2Tim 3v1-9, Rev 11v3-6, 12v12, Rev 13 (all).

So, with God making provision for Moses' "supposed" failings in speaking by making Aaron his spokesman, the conversation between God and Moses came to an end, with Moses resigned to fulfilling the commission and position given to him by God as Israel's ruler and deliverer. Acts 7v35.

Moses, during his hidden years at Midian, like the Lord Jesus at Nazareth, had exercised a prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) which means "to make interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.) ministry second to none, living in constant communion with the Lord and now as he sets off for Egypt to go in before Pharaoh to secure the release of Israel, the great anointing, power and authority that he had just received from the Lord (to fulfil the great commission given to him) when He appeared to him in the burning bush at Horeb would be maintained through constant prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335). Psalm 24v1-6, 69v7-12, Heb 11v6.

The words "intreat" in Exodus 8v8,9,28,29, 9v28, 10v17 and "intreated" in Exodus 8v30 10v18 are translated from the Hebrew word "athar" (OT:6279), which in the Septuagint is translated by the Greek words, "euchomai" (NT:2172) and "proseuchomai" (NT:4336). The Hebrew word "athar" in all of these Scriptures has the same meaning as the Greek word "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which means "to make interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances." Through the whole of the third period of forty years of Moses' life, from his encounter with the Lord of Glory, the pre-incarnate Christ, at the burning bush on Horeb (1491 BC) until his death, forty years later (which Ussher dates 1451 BC) in the land of Moab (Deut 34v1-7), Moses exercised a prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) ministry at the very highest level to maintain his great prophetic ministry (as he was a prophet like unto that of the Lord Jesus), even like that of our dear Lord Jesus during His earthly life, not only during His hidden years at Nazareth, but also during His earthly ministry. Deut 18v15-19, Psalm 69v7-12, Luke 5v16 ("constantly withdrew" Weymouth), 6v12, John 3v34, 5v19,30, 14v10.

Here are three examples of Moses' prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335), "enteuxis" (NT:1783) both of which have the meaning of, "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") ministry and it's results.

1) To defeat the Amalekites at Rephidim. Exodus 17v8-16 (with 1Tim 2v8).

We read in Exodus 17v8-16 the following: "Then came Amalek, and fought with Israel in Rephidim. And Moses said unto Joshua, Choose us out men, and go out, fight with Amalek: to morrow I will stand on the top of the hill with the rod of God in mine hand. So Joshua did as Moses had said to him, and fought with Amalek: and Moses, Aaron, and Hur went up to the top of the hill. And it came to pass, **when Moses held up his hand, that Israel prevailed: and when he let down his hand, Amalek prevailed.** But Moses' hands were heavy; and they took a stone, and put it under him, and he sat thereon; and **Aaron and Hur stayed up his hands, the one on the one side, and the other on the other side; and his hands were steady until the going down of the sun. And Joshua discomfited Amalek and his people with the edge of the sword.** And the LORD said unto Moses, Write this for a memorial in a book, and rehearse it in the ears of Joshua: for I will utterly put out the remembrance of Amalek from under heaven. And Moses built an altar, and called the name of it Jehovah-nissi: For he said, Because the LORD hath sworn that the LORD will have war with Amalek from generation to generation."

The only thing that gave Israel victory was the "interventions" (with power) of Moses (which included invoking the Covenant Names of God, especially Yahweh Tsabaoth, "The Lord of Hosts," and Yahweh Nissi, "The Lord our Banner and Conqueror"), combined with his hands being held up and supported until the sun went down. **NOTE:** it was the raised hands that made **ALL** the difference between victory and defeat.

Yahweh Nissi. The Lord our Banner and Conqueror. Exodus 17v15. The battle cry of Moses in 1491 BC. The uplifted hands

of Moses and the invoked Divine Covenant Names, defeated the Amalekites, Moses built an altar to commemorate this great victory.

The "interventions" (with power) of the believer become far more effective, when they also follow the example of Moses and lift up their hands as well (which has the effect of directing divine power against the powers of darkness in the heavenlies so as to shut them down and defeat them). This will be particularly important during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, when the Church will have the responsibility of restraining the powers of darkness, wicked people and wickedness in the world, as God's restraint will have been removed from them at the beginning of it, when Michael and his angels cast the Devil and the evil angels out of the heavenlies into the earth. The Devil, because he knows his time is short (before he is put into the Abyss for the duration of the Millennium) therefore comes down into the earth with great wrath and it is this which is the cause of the Great Tribulation and **NOT** God's wrath! Dan 11v32, Zech 12v8, Luke 18v1-8, 2Thess 2v1-12, 1Tim 2v1-8, Rev 11v3-6, 12v1-17, 20v1-3.

The subject of uplifted hands also occurs in the following places, Exodus 9v29,33, 1Kings 8v22, Ezra 9v5, Neh 8v6, Psalm 63v4, 88v9, 143v6, Lam 2v19, Isaiah 1v15.

2) In judgement against Korah when he led a rebellion against Moses and Aaron with two hundred and fifty leaders of the congregation. Numbers 16v1-40.

In this Scriptural passage we see Moses "making intervening with power" to bring judgement down on Korah and those with him who rebelled against the Lord, with the ground splitting apart under them and swallowing them and everything of theirs up.

We see a similar kind of occurrence in Rev 12v15,16. The wilderness referred to in Rev 12 could be a wilderness area in the region of Edom, Moab and Ammon (present day Jordan), which, according to Dan 11v41, never falls into the hands of Antichrist. When he sends an army to destroy the woman (which occurs not long after the Great Tribulation begins), God opens up the ground and swallows his army up, suffering the same fate as the sons of Korah. Rev 12v15,16, Numb 16v28-35. This judgement by God upon this army sent by Antichrist to kill the woman will be in response to the prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335), "enteuxis" (NT:1783) both of which have the meaning of, "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") of the saints; the "glorious woman" (which is a group of praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) people, with prepared hearts and special ministries for the last days, who will operate with awesome power as a prayer-warrior group behind the scenes), the Two Witnesses and last day Elijah ministries (persons having the same kind of power and authority as the Two Witnesses). Dan 11v32, Mal 4v5,6, Luke 18v1-8, Rev 11v3-6. Antichrist appears to send out another army, just before Christ returns, in an attempt to destroy the saints in Edom. We read in Isaiah 63v1-6 and 34v1-8, that Jesus personally destroys this army. Though Christians are persecuted and hated by all nations at this time, it is only when Antichrist puts his image in the Temple that life becomes impossible for them in Palestine. Christ's warning in Matt 24v9-21, for Christians to flee from Judea, had a partial fulfilment in 70 AD, when Jerusalem was destroyed by Titus. However, this warning is really directed at Christians in Judea during the last 3½ years of this age. The warning in Luke 21v20-24, for Christians to flee from Judea, when Jerusalem is surrounded by armies, had a definite fulfilment in 70 AD, for Luke 24v24 speaks of the dispersion of the Jews among the nations, and a long period of trampling under foot of Jerusalem by Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled. As the context of Luke 21v20-24, like many prophecies concerning Christ's second coming, the warning to flee from Judea, and not to enter into Judea, when armies surround Jerusalem, must have a dual fulfilment, and also apply to the events of the Great Tribulation. Since Rev 11v1,2 was written after Jerusalem and the Temple were destroyed by Titus, so another sanctuary has to be built and desecrated by Antichrist. We can only correctly interpret these prophecies when we accept that Christ's return will take place after the Great Tribulation. Matt 25v15-31.

3) In mercy, when Israel sinned and spoke against God and Moses and he made a bronze serpent to hold up, so that those who were bitten and looked upon it might be healed. Num 21v1-9.

"And when king Arad the Canaanite, which dwelt in the south, heard tell that Israel came by the way of the spies; then he fought against Israel, and took some of them prisoners. And Israel vowed a vow unto the Lord, and said, If thou wilt indeed deliver this people into my hand, then I will utterly destroy their cities. And the Lord hearkened to the voice of Israel, and delivered up the Canaanites; and they utterly destroyed them and their cities: and he called the name of the place Hormah. And they journeyed from mount Hor by the way of the Red sea, to compass the land of Edom: and the soul of the people was much discouraged because of the way. And the people spake against God, and against Moses, Wherefore have ye brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? for there is no bread, neither is there any water; and our soul loatheth this light bread. And the Lord sent fiery serpents among the people, and they bit the people; and much people of Israel died. Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the Lord, and against thee; **pray unto the Lord, that he take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people.** And the Lord said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live. And Moses made a serpent of brass, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived."

In Num 21v7, the Hebrew word "palal" (OT:6419) is used twice for the English word "pray(ed)," the Septuagint uses the Greek word "euchomai" (NT:2172) to translate the Hebrew word "palal" (OT:6419), so in this sentence, "euchomai" (NT:2172) has the same meaning as the Greek words "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793), which both mean "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances."

Through Moses' "interventions with power" the work of the fiery serpents was stopped and by looking upon the upheld bronze serpent that Moses had made, those of the Israelites who had been bitten, who were still alive were forgiven and healed.

The bronze serpent was a type of Christ's atonement, and the Israelites were healed through looking at it. Num 21v5-9, John 3v14-16. If forgiveness and healing came to all who looked at the brazen serpent, the type of Christ's atonement, then, surely, by looking to the fulfilment of that type, our dear Lord Jesus, we can expect greater blessings than the Israelites experienced through the type. John 3v14, 12v32. This proved true in the ministry of Jesus, He healed **ALL** that came to Him of every disease and sickness. Jesus is the Saviour who forgives **ALL** our iniquities and heals **ALL** our diseases. Psalm 103v3.

In Exodus 15v26, God promised to be "God the Healer," and though it is a conditional promise, like all the promises of God, it reveals God as the healer of His people. Also similar promise is in Exodus 23v25,26, where God promises His obedient children, "I will take sickness from the midst of thee and the number of thy days I will fulfil," and again Psalm 91v16, promises those who dwell in the secret place of the Most High long life. Psalm 90v10. These promises are conditional upon the keeping of the moral law, and law of health laid down in the law. Some would say that we cannot claim these Old Testament promises, however, Jesus showed by His ministry that these promises are to be extended even to the Gentiles in this new dispensation. Many such lovely promises as Deut 33v25,27, Joshua 1v5,9, Isaiah 40v31, Psalm 23 etc., given originally to Israel, comfort and encourage Christ's Church today; we find comfort and healing through such Old Testament promises as Exodus 15v26, 23v25, Psalm 103v3. These promises are "Yea and Amen" in Christ, when we fulfil the conditions that God laid down with them. 2Cor 1v17-20.

We read in the Gospels that Jesus healed all the sick in the multitudes that came to Him. Matt 4v23-25, 9v35-10v1, 12v15, 14v34-36, Luke 6v17-19. The inspired exposition of Isaiah 53v4 in Matt 8v16,17, informs us that Jesus healed all in the light of His atonement. Like the scapegoat, Christ has borne away the sins and sicknesses of all who trust in Him and His redeeming blood. Lev 16v22. It is foolish and unscriptural to say that healing is not in the atonement. Jesus died to deliver us from our sicknesses and pains as well as our sins and iniquities; He comes to give us peace of body as well as peace of soul.

The scholar Delitzsch, says of Isaiah 53v4, "Freely but faithfully does the Gospel of Matthew translate this text, 'Himself took our infirmities and carried our sicknesses.' The help, which Jesus rendered to people with all kinds of bodily sickness, is taken in Matthew to be the fulfilment of what in Isaiah is prophesied of the Servant of Jehovah. The Hebrew verbs of the text, when used of sin, signify to assume a heavy burden and bear away the guilt of sin, as one's own; that is, to bear sin mediatorially in order to atone for it. But here, where not our sins, but our sicknesses and pains are the object, the mediatorial sense remains the same. It is not meant that the Servant of Jehovah merely entered into the fellowship of our sufferings, but that He took upon Himself the sufferings that we had to bear, and deserved to bear; and, therefore, He not only bore them away, but also in His own person endured them in order to discharge us from them. Now when one takes sufferings upon himself which another had to bear, and does this, not merely in fellowship with him, but in his stead, we call it Substitution." End of quote.

The truth is indisputable; Christ's substitutionary death extends to healing of the body as well as the soul. Delitzsch, one of the greatest Hebrew scholars of all time, states there is a substitutionary and "mediatorial sense" in the words of Isaiah 53v4. In Isaiah 53v4, the same two verbs, "nasa," borne, and "sabal," carried, which are used to tell us that Jesus "bore our sicknesses and carried our pains," are the identical verbs that are used in Isaiah 53v11,12, to state that Jesus bore our sins and iniquities for us as our substitute. This proves that healing is one of the "all things" that are given to us through our Lord's atonement. Rom 8v32.

In Isaiah 53v4, "surely," is "aken," which means, surely, indeed, certainly, and truly. It is worthy of note that the only "surely" in the redemptive chapter of Isaiah 53, is before the promise of healing for the body, so we can "surely" expect healing for our bodies as well as for our souls. This "surely" is emphasised in Matt 8v17, when Matthew says that the prophecy of Isaiah 53v4 was "fulfilled," it means that it was "filled full," that is, the full extent of its promise was revealed. The full extent of the promise of Isaiah 53v4, is healing for **ALL** who come to God for healing. The Christ of the cross is the perfect remedy for all our needs, both spiritual and physical. Through the shedding of Christ's blood, all who believe are redeemed from the curse of the law. Gal 3v13. We can claim healing on the grounds of Christ's atonement, just as we can claim salvation from our sins, it is part of our salvation; it is a privilege for all who believe in Jesus. Jesus said that most people will not believe that God wants to heal them, so He did miracles to confirm that it is God's will to heal those who come to Him for healing. John 4v48 God uses the power and revelation gifts of the Holy Spirit to increase faith and remove

hindrances to healing. However, the following exceptions to healing must be noted. We will not be healed if our time has come to die; all the people Jesus healed are now dead, and Elisha died, even though his body was so full of God's power that his bones could raise the dead. 2Kings 13v14-21. Divine healing does not give us immortality. We must also remember that Paul tells us that there can be Divine sickness and death as well as Divine healing, through failure to examine our lives and put things right with God. 1Cor 11v28-30. If we neglect our bodies and health, we may also have to reap the consequences until we learn better. Phil 2v24-30, 4v18,19.

When the angels came to the shepherds, they brought the best tidings possible, "good tidings of great joy, which shall be to **ALL** people, for unto you is born this day in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord." Luke 2v10,11. The angelic choirs told of the intense desire of God to bring peace to mankind because of His goodwill and love. They proclaimed the greatest event of all history, God manifested in flesh to save mankind. When Jesus came to show His goodwill and to give His peace and salvation, what did He do? The gospels reveal that Jesus saved and healed all who came to Him in faith, confessing their need, He showed the wonderful goodwill of God, we never read of one needy person being refused, the only stipulation that Jesus made was that people came to Him in repentance and faith.

Just before the beginning of the last seven years of this age (Daniel's seventieth prophetic week, Dan 9v27) and continuing right up until Christ's Second Coming, there is going to be the greatest outpouring of the Holy Spirit and revival the world has ever experienced or known. The Church, which is the Body of Christ will be filled with great glory and power and through it will be done the most tremendous signs, wonder and miracles of healings, deliverances and raising of the dead for the purpose of compelling the worldling to believe in the risen Christ as their Lord and Saviour and to prepare God's people for the Second Coming of Christ. Dan 11v32, Mal 4v5,6, Mark 16v15-18, John 11v38-44, Acts 2v16-21 (with Joel 2v28-32), 3v19-21, John 14v12-14, Rom 15v18-21, Rev 12v1.

In the last chapter (the 34th) of Deuteronomy the following is written about Moses in vs. 7,10-12: "And Moses was an hundred and twenty years old when he died: his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated...**And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face**, In all the signs and the wonders, which the Lord sent him to do in the land of Egypt to Pharaoh, and to all his servants, and to all his land, And in all that mighty hand, and in all the great terror which Moses shewed in the sight of all Israel." How the Church of Christ needs such ministries like that of the great Old Testament prophet Moses, persons who stand in spirit before the Throne of God, exercising great power and authority and knowing a great anointing upon them. It is this type of ministry that the Lord Jesus exhorts believers in Matt 9v35-38 to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793)) for, so as to be set in the Body of Christ by Him. Eph 4v7-16. It is therefore most essential for Christians (especially those Christians in Israel) to act as priests of the Melchizedek priesthood (Heb 2v16-18, 4v3,15, 5v6, 11v6, 12v2) and to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) **NOW** for God to raise up the Two Witnesses, and other Christians whom He will set in the body of Christ with the same level of power and authority as the Two Witnesses. We **MUST** also pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) for God to give these "labourers" the same kind of power and authority that He gave unto the prophets Moses and Elijah (1Kings 17v1-21v29, 2Kings 1v1-2v11 Dan 11v32, 2Tim 3v1-9, Rev 11v3-6), and then to "send them forth into His harvest." It is also a necessity for us to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) for God to fulfil such prophecies and promises, as those stated in Rev 11v3-6 and Zech chapter 4, but especially the wonderful promise and prophecy that He spoke through His servant Malachi in Mal 4v5,6 (with Luke 1v17):

"Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to the fathers, the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord."

Christians **MUST** pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) **NOW** for "last day Elijah ministries" to be set in the Body of Christ by God! Rev 5v8.

The number of "last day Elijah ministries" that God will be able to set in the Church will be directly proportional to the amount of praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) performed by the Church for God to set such ministries in it; i.e., the more the Body of Christ prays (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) for God to set such ministries in the church, the **MORE** "last day Elijah ministries" will **actually be set in it by God!**

Moses, during the forty years from his call by the Lord upon Mount Horeb until his death in the land of Moab, exercised a Melchizedek type High Priestly ministry and through his wonderful continuous prayings (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793)), along with Aaron and Miriam, fed, kept, guarded and protected Israel during that whole time, he was the real defence of Israel, that is it's horsemen and chariots. It was also through his strong prayings (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793)) that the Lord prepared the 2nd generation of Israel in the wilderness during those forty so that they would be ready and able to enter the Promised Land when they did. Exodus 3v1, Deut 8v1-20, 18v15-19, 34v5,6, 2Kings 2v12, Hosea 12v13, Micah 6v4, Heb 5v6, 7v25.

What a wonderful, wise, godly and spiritual servant of the Lord he was!

Samuel and the prophets. Heb 11v32.

From Samuel onwards, right up to John the Baptist and the close of the Age of Law, there was a long line of prophets that God raised up in both Israel (the northern kingdom) and Judah (the southern kingdom) to speak His Word and Truth to His people, being confirmed by signs, wonders and miracles. **ALL** of these OT prophets looked for a Heavenly City and inheritance, having been obedient to the Lord's call to them to rise up with Him into the heavenly places to conquer and subdue the Devil and the powers of darkness, so as to occupy their Heavenly Canaan and to manifest His Power and Love, not only in the heavenly places but also upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit through their prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which both mean, "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.") ministries. Although their feet were upon the earth, their heads were in Heaven before the Throne of God. These OT prophets **ALL** fulfilled a ministry like that of Melchizedek and the Melchizedek priesthood. It was the prophet who was the real defence and protection of Israel, they were the real "chariots and horsemen" of Israel **NOT** the king and his armies. Even Joash, who was a very poor king indeed, in that he did that which was evil in the sight of the Lord, knew that it was Elisha who was the real defence of Israel and not he and his armies! Exodus 19v6, Num 11v29, 1Kings 17v1, 2Kings 2v12, 13v11,14, John 1v17, 1Cor 1v22, Heb 4v3, 11v6,16,33-40, Rev 11v4.

David, Melchizedek And The Melchizedek Priesthood.

We are told in a few places in Scripture that the Lord had chosen and put His name in the Temple at Jerusalem so as to abide there forever (if Israel kept their covenant with Him). Three reasons for His choice of Jerusalem was 1) because Jerusalem (Salem) had been the place where Melchizedek and the Melchizedek priesthood had lived and exercised their priestly prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean, "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances.") ministries unto the Lord and 2) it was the place where Abraham had offered up Isaac unto the Lord which 3) was like unto the offering of the Lord Jesus upon the Cross 2000 years later, also in the same locality. Gen 14v18-24, 22v1-19, Deut 12v11, 1Kings 9v3, 2Kings 21v7, 2Chron 6v2, 2Chron 7v16, 2Chron 33v4,7, Psalm 132v13,14, John 19v17-20, Heb 10v12, 13v12,13.

Psalm 110 (all) is a Messianic psalm, i.e., it was written by David with it being partially fulfilled by him but completely fulfilled by the Lord Jesus (who was both the Root and offspring of David; as God, Jesus was the source of David's family and the means of its sustenance, anchorage and strength; as a man He was the offspring of David. Isaiah 11v1,10, Rom 1v3,4, Rev 5v5, 22v16). So, it refers not only to the our Lord's Great Highly Priestly ministry after the order of Melchizedek, but also to the Melchizedek priestly ministry given to David and his seed, i.e., all of the kings of Israel who were off the seed of David **if** they kept His covenant with Him (and were obedient to the Lord's call to rise up with Him into the heavenlies to conquer and subdue the Devil and the powers of darkness through their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean, "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances."), so as to inhabit their Heavenly Canaan and manifest God's Love and Power, not only in the heavenlies but upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit.) would exercise not only kingly power but also a priestly ministry like that which Melchizedek exercised around 2000 BC; they would be not only kings but priests as well, as Psalm 110v4 states, "The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek."

The fact that the Lord gave David a Melchizedek priestly ministry to fulfil is also demonstrated by the fact that David wore a linen ephod and ministered before the Lord, thus fulfilling a priestly ministry. 1Sam 23v9, 1Sam 30v7, 2Sam 6v14, 1Chron 15v27. The white ephod was, strictly speaking, a priestly costume, although in the law it is not prescribed as the dress to be worn by them when performing their official duties, but rather as the dress which denoted the priestly character of the wearer (1 Sam 22v18); and for this reason it was worn by David in connection with these festivities in honour of the Lord, as the head of the priestly nation of Israel (1 Sam 2v18). David (like the Lord Jesus) was not a descendant of Aaron, and could not therefore ordinarily qualify to be a priest. He was, however, the anointed of the Lord, the founder of that Messianic line that would be fulfilled in the King who would also embrace the offices of priest and prophet (Deut 18v15-19, 1 Sam 2v35, 2Sam 7v12-16). Though he was not from the tribe of Levi, David was acting as both king and priest, a picture of Jesus, the Son of David, who holds both offices "after the order of Melchizedek" (Psalm 110v1, Zech 6v12,13, Heb 6v20-8v13). In the days of Abraham, Melchizedek was the king and priest of Salem (Gen 14v18-24), and now David was worshiping as king and priest of Jerusalem, Salem being on the exact same site that Jerusalem was built on (as already mentioned). When the Ark was safely installed in the Tabernacle, David blessed the people (another priestly act) and gave each person some bread and flesh (or wine) and a cake of raisins. Once again we're reminded of the priest-king Melchizedek, who came from Salem and gave Abraham bread and wine. Gen 14v18-19, 2Sam 6v1-23.

One of God's main plans and purposes for His Tabernacle at Jerusalem was that it would be "an house of prayer for all people," a place where **ALL** the nations of the earth could come up and worship Yahweh, The Living God and get **ALL** their needs met, be it spiritual, physical or material; His Tabernacle was to be a place where His Presence, Power and Love was manifested without limit. God's promise of a Heavenly inheritance (i.e. to enter His rest) had been in existence since the time of Abel and he was obedient to His Lord's calling to rise up with Him into the Heavenly places to conquer and subdue Satan and the powers of darkness so as to inhabit his Heavenly Canaan, so as to manifest God's power and love not only in the heavenly places but also upon the earth as well, through his prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis"

(NT:1783)), by the gifts of the Holy Spirit. This same promise was also given to not only the priests and levites (i.e., Aaron and his seed) but also to every individual Israelite and it was God's great desire that **ALL** Israel would be obedient to this Heavenly call and operate as priests of the Melchizedek priesthood. The Tabernacle in Jerusalem was a copy of the Heavenly, which God had intended to lift the souls, minds and spirits of the **ALL** Israel from the earthly Tabernacle to the Heavenly, so that they would indeed be obedient to His call to enter into His rest by rising up with their Lord into the Heavenly place to conquer and subdue Satan and the powers of darkness (through their prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) ministry) so that they would inhabit their Heavenly Canaan and manifest God's Power and Love not only in the heavenlies but also upon the earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit. The Tabernacle, which was to be "an house of prayer for all people," was to bring deliverance to **ALL** through the prayer (In Isaiah 56v7, "prayer" in Hebrew is "tephillah" (OT:8605), the Septuagint uses the Greek word "proseuche" (NT:4335), which means "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") of all those Israelites who had entered into God's rest and operated as priests of the Melchizedek priesthood. The continuous praise and worship unto the Lord that David instituted in the Tabernacle by the Levites also released tremendous power and authority far and wide, not only in the heavenlies but also upon the earth and shut down the operations of the Devil and the power of darkness completely (see Psalm 95v1-7, Psalm 8v2 with Matt 21v16). Gen 14v18-24, Exodus 19v5,6, Num 11v29, Psalm 24v1-6, 95v1-11, Isaiah 56v7, Matt 21v13, Mark 11v17, Luke 19v46, Heb 4v3, 8v5.

(Please see Appendix 6: Asaph, The Seer, The Levite, The Holy Ghost Singer, and Worship Leader)

John The Baptist.

The last prophet of the Age of Law was John the Baptist (John 1v17), being sent before the Beloved One, as a voice of one crying in the wilderness "Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: And the glory of the Lord shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it." Isaiah 40v3-5, Matt 3v3, Mark 1v3, Luke 3v4-6, John 1v23. He was the messenger off whom Malachi said, "Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts." Mal 3v1, Matt 11v10, Mark 1v2, Luke 1v76. He was also "Elijah the prophet" who would appear before not only the second coming of Christ but also His first coming, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children and the children to the fathers, to prepare a people for the Lord. Mal 4v5,6, Matt 11v14, 17v10-13, Luke 1v16,17.

The epochal time of John Baptist's birth. John was a child of divine purpose; Gabriel told Zachariah that the promise of a child, which Zachariah did not believe, would be fulfilled as God had promised, at the strategic divine time. Luke 1v19,20. In Luke 1v20, the word "season" is in Greek, "Kairos" (NT:2540) and means an epochal and strategic time; a critical niche in time. "Kairos" (NT:2540) is used to speak of such ordinary events as, "the time of the figs," in Mark 11v13, and of, "the time of harvest," in Mark 12v2, in our Lord's parable of the vineyard. However, "kairos" (NT:2540) usually speaks of a divine epoch in time, a time of divine appointment and fulfilled prophecy; a time when God's will and purposes are fulfilled, and His mighty ways and acts are revealed. The plural, "kairos" (NT:2540), speaks of epochal events in time; "chronos" (NT:5550), speaks of ordinary chronological time.

In Luke 11v1, a certain disciple asks the Lord Jesus the following: "...Lord, teach us to pray (Greek, "proseúchesthai," present middle infinitive of "proseuchomai" (NT4336)), as John also taught his disciples."

This Greek word, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which means "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances," is also used of the fervent prayer life of John the Baptist. The thirty years that he was in the wilderness preparing for his ministry, were spent praying, John's great ministry was birthed through those thirty years of prayer, so that when he was revealed by God to Israel, he went before the Lord Jesus "in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord." The start of John's ministry in the early part of 26 AD, heralded the beginning of a great revival, multitudes flocked out to the wilderness to hear him, even the Pharisees and Sadducees came out to hear him, and to question whom he was. It should also be stated that the reason generally why the Pharisees and Sadducees came out to him, was not because they wanted to repent of their sin (although some did do so), but simply because the religious leaders of Israel felt greatly threatened by him, because of the great multitudes that were going out to him in the wilderness. The Scribes and Pharisees challenged both John Baptist and Christ as to the source of their authority; they looked upon them as insubordinate rebels, and divisive troublemakers.

The Church of Jesus has always had the same problem; Christ's heaven-sent ministries have always been looked upon as "insubordinate" and "divisive," by people who are determined to preserve their religious power structure and position. The apostles were insubordinate to men, but obedient to God; the Scribes and Pharisees were obedient to men but insubordinate to God. Dissension always comes between those who seek influence from men, and those who seek authority from heaven. Authority from Heaven is not decided by human opinion; it is proved by Divine gifting and conformity to Biblical teaching and experience. The people who murdered Jesus claimed that they had been given authority from God to

kill Him; this false claim to Divine authority has been repeated again and again in Church history, by those who have murdered many dear children of God, who had received a definite authority from God. Indeed, it almost seems impossible not to be called a heretic by men, when you have God's authority, and we should certainly doubt if our calling and ministry is from God, when all men speak well of us. Mal 4v5,6, Matt 3v1-12, 5v10-12, 17v12, 23v19-39, Luke 1v17, 6v26, John 1v19-28.

John taught his disciples by example how to pray. (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)).

It is also worth noting that the great revival that started at the beginning of John the Baptist's ministry was not only the result of his praying, but was also the result of the great "interventions" (with power) of the One Whom he went before, the Lord Jesus. The Lord Jesus, during His hidden years at Nazareth, was not only being prepared for His own Earthly and Heavenly High Priestly ministries, but also prayed John the Baptist through into power and revelation. If Paul was able to watch the Christians at Colossi and Laodicea by revelation ministry in vision, "intervening" (with power) for them that Christ may be formed in them, then it is certain that the Lord Jesus (who was a Prophet like unto Moses), exercised the same kind of prophetic revelation ministry towards John the Baptist (and others, i.e. the apostles and seventy evangelists, Matt 10v1-8, Luke 10v1-9), to ensure that he (and they) was **FULLY** prepared and equipped for his great ministry to prepare the way before Him. Psalm 69v10, Isaiah 40v1-5, Luke 3v1-6, Acts 7v37, 1Cor 5v1-5, Col 2v1-5.

The great anointing that John the Baptist experienced, was the same level of anointing that Elijah had known, the words that he spoke to the people of Israel were filled with spirit, life and power. He preached a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins, which brought many people to repentance and to the Lord. Unfortunately however, very often the repentance among the people of Israel, was very shallow, so that they quickly fell away when temptation came (Luke 8v4-8,11-15). We read in Luke 3v7-9:

"Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, **O generation of vipers**, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? **Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance**, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire."

John the Baptist addressed the following phrase, "O generation of vipers" to **ALL** the multitude (not just the Pharisees and Sadducees) that came out to him, and although there was a very shallow degree of repentance among many in Israel at his preaching, a number of his disciples became the disciples and then Apostles of the Lord Jesus, Andrew, Simon Peter, James, John, Philip and Nathanael (and possibly one or two others) all had a deep spiritual experience under John the Baptist. John 1v36-51. It is interesting to note how many brothers were in the twelve, Simon Peter and his brother Andrew; James and his brother John; Philip seems to have been Bartholomew's brother, otherwise known as Nathanael, Luke 6v14 with John 1v43-51; James the son of Alphaeus could have been the brother of Matthew as well as the brother of Judas, not Iscariot. Tradition says that James the son of Alphaeus was brother to Matthew, Simon Zealotes, and Judas, not Iscariot. Luke 6v16. Families, who have learned to live together and love one another, can be really used by God; they are a strong unit for God, if they keep close to Him.

In answer to the request of the disciple in Luke 11v1, in Luke 11v2-4, the Lord Jesus then gives them a "pattern" of how to pray (i.e. this is the "pattern" He had used during the first thirty years of His life at Nazareth and in His Earthly ministry, except He had **NO** sin to confess in connection with the phrase "and forgive us our sins/debts, Matt 6v12, Luke 11v4). This "pattern" is commonly referred to as "The Lord's Prayer," however, it is not an actual prayer, but the "pattern" of how we should pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entugchano" (NT:1793), which mean "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances."), which is used in both Matt 6v9 and Luke 11v2). This is the 2nd place in the New Testament where this "pattern" has been recorded, the first being in Matt 6v5-15 (esp. v9-13).

Matt 6v9-13 states:

"After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen."

Luke 11v2-4 reads:

"And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil."

The Essential Attitudes Of Heart And Mind In Prayer.

Jesus tells us the attitudes of heart and mind that bring a knowledge of God, a fullness of the Spirit and answered prayer.

We must realise our position in Christ, we are sons of God.

"When you pray, say, Father." In Jesus we have a new and blessed relationship with the Father; we are brethren of Christ, joint heirs with Christ, and God's own beloved children. 1John 3v1, John 15v9, 17v23, Rom 8v17, Heb 2v10-20, 6v13-20. Hallelujah!

We must have a continual spirit of worship.

"Hallowed, revered, and honoured, be thy name." God is seeking worshippers, not empty flattery, which God deplores. True worship recognises with sincere gratitude and deep love that we owe everything we are, have and will have to our Creator and Redeemer. John 4v23,24, Matt 15v7-9, Mark 7v6-9, God is worthy of all our respect, adoration, love and esteem. Rev 5v11-14.

We must desire to see God's kingdom and will to be manifested on earth.

"Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven." There is not only desire and longing; there is positive action and costly sacrifice, under God's direction, to see His kingdom extended. This is a personal matter between ourselves and God, we must always be very careful to distinguish between people who put pressure upon us to build up their personal kingdoms, or other human pressure groups, and the will of God. John 21v19-22, Matt 10v37-42, Acts 15v25,26.

We must be free from anxiety over material needs.

"Give us this day our daily bread." We must believe, as it is absolutely true, that our heavenly Father loves us intensely and will meet all our needs. Phil 4v19, Matt 6v25-34. A spirit of materialism and worldly anxiety will effectively incapacitate us from useful service for the kingdom of God. 1John 2v15-17. This does not mean, of course, that we have to neglect our families, those who do this "have denied the faith," and are "worse than unbelieving heathen." 1Tim 5v8.

We must have a tender conscience and repentance from any known sin.

"Forgive us our sins." In Luke 11v4, Luke uses the word "hamartia," "sins;" whereas, Matt 6v12 uses "opheilemata;" a word that Paul uses in Rom 4v4 to speak of legal debts. Christ obviously used both; He taught that our sins are debts to God and others. Wilful sin closes our hearts to the blessing and love of God. Heb 10v19-39, 1John 1v5 to 2v6.

We must have a forgiving spirit towards those who have sinned against us.

We must beware of roots of bitterness and an unforgiving spirit, for Jesus warns us that we can only ask for forgiveness "in proportion as, or like as," "hos," we forgive others, a truly solemn warning, which is reiterated by Christ elsewhere. Matt 6v12,14,15, Mark 11v25,26. Jesus tells us to rebuke Christians who sin against us, and **IF** they repent, we **MUST** forgive them. Luke 17v3,4. Let us make every effort to achieve reconciliation and forgiveness with Christians, and make it easy for those who have offended us to repent, and exercise a forgiving spirit to them. However, Jesus said that repentance is necessary before fellowship can be restored, and failure to repent after the procedure laid down in Matt 18v15-17, means that a person loses their rights to be treated as a Christian. Let us remember that God's forgiveness is always conditional upon repentance. Matt 5v23,24, 18v20-35, Mark 11v22-26, Luke 6v37, 23v34, Eph 4v30-32, Gal 6v1-3, 1John 4v20,21.

Jesus certainly did not try to be reconciled with Israel's religious leaders; His attacks upon them were extremely contentious. Matt 23v13-39, Luke 11v39-54. Christ asked the Father to forgive the soldiers who were crucifying Him, they really did not know what they were doing; however, there was no such prayer for the religious leaders of Israel, who knew full well what they were doing, Jesus said they had seen God and hated Him. Luke 23v34, John 15v22-25. Stephen manifested a forgiving spirit to his implacable enemies, and asked God not to lay his murder to their charge; however, God could not forgive them, for He cannot forgive unrepentant sin, even though He may long to restore and pardon. Acts 7v59,60, Matt 23v37-39, Luke 19v41-44. Christians who hurt and offend others, and do not repent, face an inevitable discipline from their heavenly Father, and so do those who fail to forgive others, when those who offend them repent. We know that we have a genuine revival when Christians get right with each other and fervently love each other. Rom 12v14-21, 2Cor 13v1, Gal 6v1. Our enormous debt to God should keep us from fighting over our comparatively trifling debts to each other. Matt 18v21-35, Heb 12v14,15.

We must allow God to lead us from dangerous paths.

Christians should have a fear of sin, and a fear of getting out of the will of God. As someone has said, "lead us not into

temptation," is an Eastern way of saying, "Father, please keep us from going out of your will, into paths that lead to spiritual danger or sin." God can, by various means, stop us from going into spiritual danger, if we are prayerful and willing to be led by Him. Psalm 141v4, 1Cor 10v13, Acts 16v6-9. We should always be prepared for our heavenly Father's stops or diversions.

We must trust God to deliver us from evil, and the Evil One.

In the phrase, "lead us not into temptation," Jesus was speaking of dangers and temptations that can be avoided by prayerful living. See Luke 22v40. Here He speaks of conflicts with evil that we cannot avoid and must face. These conflicts demand a prayerful life and a real faith in God, for we cannot defeat Satan on our own, we must draw near to God before we can effectively resist the Devil. James 4v6-8. Persecution or opposition of some kind or other will always come against the consecrated child of God, and supernatural opposition from Satan is often channelled through his earthly friends. Matt 4v1-11, Acts 13v50-52, 2Cor 1v8-10, Eph 1v2, 6v10-20, 2Thes 3v1-3, 2Tim 2v12, 3v12. We must believe that God will deliver us, and will answer our prayers, as we follow and obey our Lord's pattern of prayer, and if our prayers accomplish anything, we must remember that His power has brought it to pass, and we must give Him all the glory.

The Lord Jesus says of John the Baptist in Matt 11v11, "Verily I say unto you, **Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist**: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he." We can understand from this statement just how high of an opinion that the Lord Jesus had of His forerunner, John Baptist; he held his spirituality, ministry, prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) life, holiness and life of faith in the highest regard! The phrase "(man) born of woman" in contrast to "the least in the kingdom of heaven" is that under the Old Covenant at the new (spiritual) birth they received the spirit of a servant, whereas, at the new (spiritual) birth of a Christian we receive the spirit of sonship for we are adopted into the family of God, crying Abba Father, with the Lord Jesus being not ashamed to call use brethren, the New Testament believer being looked upon as being of higher rank than an Old Testament saint. Jer 31v31-34, Ezek 18v1-32, 36v26,27, Rom 8v15-17, Gal 4v6,7, 1Thess 5v23, Heb 2v10-14, 8v7-13.

This completes the Age of Law.

The Age Of Grace.

Since Israel rejected the justice and Law of God; He is showing through His Church His sacrificial mercy and grace, exhibiting Himself as one who would suffer to the end for His creatures, hoping thus to win their love and confidence. Instead, of this the world has made use of grace to continue in sin without the fear of punishment. Jude v4. Scripture Period: Matt 27v51 to Rev 11v15. **(NB: It is most dangerous to make use of God's grace to continue in sin, God hates sin (because it destroys the sinner and creates such great suffering and misery). Rom 6v1-4, 8v6-13, Gal 5v19-21. If we live in sin the grace does not cover us, forgiveness is only for the repentant sinners, who forsake sin. Acts 2v38, 3v19.)**

The Lord Jesus was born six months (Luke 1v26) after John Baptist around the Feast of Tabernacles in 5 BC and died (on the Cross) on Thursday, 6th April 30 AD at the age of 33 years. This can be seen to be the case from Daniel's wonderful Seventy Weeks prophecy in Dan 9v20-27 in which we read that God's dealings with Jerusalem were to cover seventy times seven years, a period of 490 years. "Week," "shabuwa," literally means "seven," either days, or as here, years. These 490 years divide up in the following way.

a) 49 years from the commandment to rebuild Jerusalem, to Jerusalem being built.

The following decrees were given to restore either the Temple or Jerusalem.

1) By Cyrus. In 538 to 536 BC. 2Chron 36v22,23, Ezra 1v1-3, 5v13-17.

2) By Darius the 1st Hystapes. Ezra 6v3-8. The Temple was rebuilt from about 520 to 516 BC.

3) By Artaxerxes Longimanus. In his 7th year 467 BC. Ezra 7v7,11-26. (There are about fifty years between Ezra 6 and 7.) It appears from Ezra 9v9, that permission was given to Ezra to rebuild Jerusalem's wall and city.

4) By Artaxerxes Longimanus. In his 20th year 454 BC.

It was not until 13 years after Ezra set out for Jerusalem, that the actual rebuilding took place, when Artaxerxes Longimanus in his 20th year, 454 BC, commanded Nehemiah to rebuild Jerusalem and its walls. Neh 2v1-8. The wall itself was quickly rebuilt in 52 days, Neh 6v15, but it was doubtless made more secure over the years, for the prophecy of Dan 9v25, suggests that it took 49 years for all the rebuilding of the city and wall to be finished. Ussher, after 37 years of study, dates the accession of Artaxerxes as the year 474 BC, and the date of 454 BC (**NOT** as Bishop Lloyd states as being 446

BC), for the commandment to rebuild Jerusalem in Neh 2v1-8.

b) 434 years from the completion of the street and wall of Jerusalem to the death of Jesus. Dan 9v24-26.

Christ was "cut off, but not for Himself," His death was "to make reconciliation for iniquity," Christ was to die to bring in the New Covenant and make salvation available for all who would receive Him. Heb 7v22-28, 9v11-10v39, 1John 2v1,2, 5v9-13. God showed Daniel that the coming of the Messiah was over 500 years away. It was this prophecy of Daniel that made godly Simeon, praying Anna, and many others expect the coming of the Messiah in their day. Luke 2v25-38.

Some commentators would say the Lord Jesus was crucified in 29 AD, however, He was crucified in 30 AD and this can be shown by the fact that in 30 AD the first day of Passover Feast was on Thursday April 6th, Nisan 15th, and the last day of the Passover Feast was on Wednesday April 12th, Nisan 21. Whereas, according to the calendar of 29 AD the first day of the Passover Feast was on Saturday April 17th, Nisan 15th, and the last day of the Passover Feast was on Sunday April 23rd, Nisan 21st. So this shows that the crucifixion was without doubt in 30 AD on Thursday, April 6th, Nisan 15th, **not on Friday, for according to Matt 12v40, Jesus was raised from the dead "after three days and three nights."** See "the third day," "after three days," etc., in Matt 16v4,21, 17v23, 20v19, 27v40,63,64, Mark 8v31, 10v34, John 2v19, 19v42, 1Cor 15v4, Eph 4v9,10. Jesus was raised from the dead in the night of the third day. Christ's enemies, sadly, unlike Christ's disciples, remembered well that Jesus promised that He would be raised from the dead on the third day.

The ministry of the Lord Jesus spanned almost three and a half years and He was thirty years when He entered upon His ministry, which makes His age at death around thirty three and a half years, which takes us back to around the Feast of Tabernacles 5 BC. The Feast of Tabernacles is also the Feast that has its fulfilment in the Advent of the Christ, not only His Second Coming, but His First as well. Lev 23v33-36, Deut 16v13-15, Luke 3v23, John 1v14 (John 1v14 reads, "And the Word became flesh, **and did tabernacle among us...**" Young's Literal Translation).

It is of the utmost importance that the believer fully understands the vital Truth of the Lord Jesus' real humanity, for it is only by grasping this Truth and making it a part of our experience that we can go onto perfection and operate as priests of the Melchizedek priesthood. The Scriptures states the following regarding our Lord's humanity:

"And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, **and between thy seed and her seed**; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." Gen 3v15.

"**And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed...**Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, **And to thy seed, which is Christ**" Gen 22v18 with Gal 3v16.

"**I will set up thy seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels**, and I will establish his kingdom." 2Sam 7v12.

"**And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse**, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots...**And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse**, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious...**I am the root and the offspring of David**, and the bright and morning star." Isaiah 11v1,10 with Rev 22v16. See also Luke 3v23-38 for His lineage via Mary.

"**And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.**" Luke 1v31.

"**And the Word was made flesh**, and dwelt among us..." John 1v14.

"**But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.**" John 19v34.

"Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, **which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh.**" Rom 1v3

"God sending his own Son **in the likeness of sinful flesh**, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh." Rom 8v3.

"But when the fullness of the time was come, **God sent forth his Son, made of a woman**, made under the law." Gal 4v4.

"**But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man...**" Phil 2v7,8.

"For there is but one God and but one Mediator between God and men, **Christ Jesus, Himself man.**" 1Tim 2v5 (Weymouth).

"**For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one**: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren...**Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same...**For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; **but he took on him the seed of Abraham. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren...**" Heb 2v11,14,16.

"**Who in the days of his flesh...**" Heb 5v7.

"Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, **but a body hast thou prepared me.**" Heb 10v5.

"**By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.**" Heb 10v10.

"Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: **Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist**, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. Ye are of

God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error." 1John 4v1-6.

"For many deceivers are entered into the world, **who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.**" 2John v7.

The Lord Jesus at the Incarnation, emptied Himself of His **ALL** divine attributes: His omnipotence, omnipresence, omniscience, transcendence and immutability and forty weeks later woke up in the arms of Mary. He was just like an other baby with **ALL** the needs that they have, or put it another way, He certainly didn't say to Himself when He was lying in the manger something like, "well, I suppose I'd better cry now so that they think that I'm a real baby." This last statement may sound rather absurd to say, but if we state that the Lord Jesus did **NOT** have a real humanity, it being **EXACTLY** like every other human being, this is exactly the kind of false reasoning and thoughts that we are holding, so that we unknowingly hold and believe the destructive heresy of Docetic Gnosticism, which John say in 1John 4v3 "**is NOT of God and this is that spirit of antichrist!**" (The Docetic Gnostic heresy, which denied Christ's true humanity, is automatically generated in the minds of believers who accept and believe Augustine's doctrine of Original Sin, in the following way. Believers conclude that if we have been "born in sin," with sinful natures, which compel us to do evil; and since Jesus was without sin, He obviously did not possess this same sinful nature, so then He **MUST** have had a different kind of "humanity" to us. So the thought arises in the believer's mind, that the humanity of Jesus was different from theirs. Thus, in a very subtle and cunning disguise, the destructive heresy of Docetic Gnosticism has come into the Church, and has corrupted the theology about the real humanity of Jesus. Also see the study "The Disastrous Effects Of The Doctrine Of Original Sin" which can be found at www.truthforthelastdays.com) He had absolutely **NO** conscious memory of His life prior to His Incarnation, He had to learn again in broad outline all the wisdom and knowledge that He had known in Heaven in His fullness before the Incarnation and this He did so by feeding and meditating upon the Scriptures that He had previously sent down to the earth through the prophets of old. The written Word of God turned the Babe of Bethlehem into the Christ of God, so that at the age of thirty he was full of not only Grace **BUT** also Truth! As the child Jesus grew, he developed, physically, mentally, emotionally and spiritually just like any other child would, so that it is written in Luke 2v40,52, "**And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit (Majority Text), filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him...And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.**" The expression "waxed strong in spirit" is the same as that which is used of John the Baptist in Luke 1v80, another very clear indication that his development was just like **ANY** other human being. The Lord Jesus responded to the Grace of God upon His life, so that He grew spiritually strong; the spirit, which is the organ of communication with God developed great strength in the Lord Jesus, so like Paul, the Lord Jesus served God with His spirit by ministering God's Power and Love to the multitudes of needy people, through His prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") by the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Isaiah 35v5,6, 61v1,2, Matt 11v4,5, Luke 1v31-33,35, 2v7,11,12,16, 4v18,19, John 1v14, 3v34, Acts 10v38, Rom 1v9, Phil 2v5-11 (esp. v7, "But made Himself of no reputation" would be better translated as "But emptied Himself" RSV), 1Thess 5v23, 1Pet 1v10-12.

The Scriptures tell us that the Lord Jesus partook of human nature and laid Himself open to temptation so "that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. For in that He Himself hath suffered being tempted, He is able to succour them that are tempted." Heb 2v14-18. We know that our dear Lord Jesus appreciates our struggles and is touched with and sympathises with us in our feelings of infirmity and weakness, for He Himself has felt the trials and weakness of the flesh, being "tempted and tried in all points like we are, yet without sin." Heb 4v15. The only person who has the right to condemn us, is full of sympathy towards us and is praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which has the same meaning as "entugchano" (NT:1793), "the making of interventions with power, so as to affect a change in circumstances") for us. Rom 8v31-34. Every second of every day God's people are upheld by the sympathetic and loving ministry of our Great High Priest. Heb 7v25. The Lord does not use His unspotted purity and perfect holiness to condemn us, instead He justifies us by it, and assures us that nothing can separate us from His blessing, or the ministrations of His love. If we walk in the light nothing in this sinful world can separate us from His sympathy and love.

We can see from Heb 2v14-18, that the Father was not only preparing our Saviour for His earthly ministry through the various temptations that He faced, the Father was also preparing Christ for His Heavenly ministries as well. Our Father wants us to have an abundant entrance into that Heavenly kingdom, and if we defeat the evil powers that oppose us we shall be entrusted with the rule of that kingdom. It is as we win our victories for Christ here, that we shall receive our crowns there. Those that rule with Christ have not won that position by bloodless victories. Matt 20v20-28, NB v22. Those who desire to reign with Christ must also share His fiery baptism of suffering and opposition. Let us so live for our Lord Jesus that at His coming we shall be filled with joy and not with shame. Eph 1v9-12, 2Pet 1v2-11, 1John 2v28. We need to keep our eyes on the eternal riches of Christ and realise that He has called us to reign with Him in glory, and be joint heirs with Him of the riches of heaven. Let us not sell our Heavenly inheritance in exchange for the things of the earth, for victory over the world, flesh and Devil brings eternal blessedness. Rom 8v17, Heb 12v15-17.

There is no short cut to real spiritual power and great manifestations of spiritual gifts. To deliver the captives of Satan, we first have to have victory over him in our lives, we have to bind the strong man before we can spoil his goods.

We have to overcome Satan by answering every lying temptation with the Truth, we have to put on **ALL** the armour of God. Matt 12v18-30, Mark 3v22-30, Eph 6v10-20. We can only defeat Satan if we wear all our Christian armour. It is as follows:-

The belt of truth: A right knowledge of God's Word and Christian Doctrine.

The breastplate of righteousness: God's Word of Truth is applied to the life and it results in a practical holy life, the heart is kept pure, there is integrity of purpose, truthfulness, sincerity, genuine love and faithfulness.

The feet shod with the Gospel: An evangelistic fervour; a desire to extend God's kingdom and preach God's good news of forgiveness and peace.

The shield of faith: The 4 feet by 2 feet Roman type shield is spoken of here. A complete trust in God and His word at all times, can quench all Satan's flaming darts.

The helmet of salvation: A disciplined and pure thought-life. We think what God thinks, and weigh everything up in the light of God's Word and our salvation. False doctrines, impure thoughts, and worldliness are banished from the Christian mind. All is looked upon and judged in the light of an eternal future.

The sword of the Spirit: The ability to use God's Word against Satan and his children. This presupposes a knowledge of the Scriptures and essential Christian Truth.

Prayer: (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances"). The spear, or bow and arrow? A vigilant, intelligent and persevering prayer life, for all the saints and the ministries that God has set in the Church. Rom 12v6-8, 1Cor 12v28, Eph 4v8-11.

The life of Jesus had been so well pleasing to God that God could entrust Him with unlimited spiritual power, so God gave not the Spirit by measure unto Him. John 3v24. In the wilderness we see the Lord Jesus fighting to keep that power and blessing, and striving to keep from being side-tracked into paths that were not the will of God. We have similar temptations from the Devil, and to keep the power of God we have to refuse to listen to anything that Satan tries to tempt us with. Many Christians are blessed by God and receive a measure of power, but they fail in the hour of temptation and instead of coming out of their wilderness temptation full of the Holy Spirit, as Jesus did, they come out defeated and spiritually powerless. We can receive a Pentecostal experience and yet fail to be the blessing that God desires if we are living a defeated and powerless Christian life.

The Life of Jesus at Nazareth.

Nazareth was a place of no account in history, it is not mentioned in the Old Testament, or by the Talmud or Josephus. In the New Testament it is only spoken of in contempt, "Can there come any good thing out of Nazareth?" John 1v46. This was spoken by Nathanael, whose judgement was so pure and just, that he received what is probably the most remarkable commendation that Christ ever gave to anyone, "Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom there is no guile." John 1v47. Nazareth was part of Galilee and Galilee was called "Galilee of the Gentiles" because of its mixed population of Jewish and foreign nations. All of Galilee was looked down upon by the Jews of Judea, and there was certainly some reason for it, for the Scripture itself speaks of it as a place of gross spiritual darkness. Isaiah 9v1 with Matt 4v13-16. In this obscure and in many peoples eyes, contemptible place, Christ spent the vast majority of His life, and triumphed over the gross sin and great spiritual darkness, and lived a perfect sinless life. Or it could be said of Him that He lived in a coal cellar for thirty years and came out bright white!

Christ had the problem of managing the family business for several years at Nazareth, for it appears that Mary's husband, Joseph, had died and we can see that Christ was called the carpenter of the village. Matt 13v53-58, Mark 6v1-6. (The Greek word "tekton" was used of stone-masons and workers in metal as well as those who worked as carpenters.) The fact that Christ was the carpenter squashes the theory that Christ was the youngest son of Joseph, and the only son of Mary, and that all the other children of Joseph were born by a previous marriage. The oldest son, not the youngest, was the natural successor to his Father's title and trade. The fair and obvious interpretation of Matt 13v53-58 and Mark 6v1-6, is that the local people looked upon James, Joses, Simon and Jude, and at least three sisters, (notice "all" not "both"), as the sons and daughters of both Joseph and Mary. In spite of the demands placed upon Christ's time and energy by the family business, He prepared for the mission that His Father had sent Him to do, which in itself was a most tremendous feat and victory.

Christ also triumphed gloriously over the contemptuous familiarity and unbelief that His towns-folk and family felt over His mission. It is clearly shown in the Bible that after a few years of great expectation in the home of the Lord Jesus and among His relatives that He was the Messiah, there was a complete and dramatic slump in their faith. Many probably felt that Mary had made up a story to cover up her sin when things did not go as they expected. This was certainly the explanation of the people at Nazareth, an explanation which the Pharisees were glad to find and throw in the face of Christ, they said, "We are not born of fornication." John 8v41. The Lord Jesus had to live the whole of His life under this cloud. The only person to

keep a measure of faith in Christ was Mary, for she knew that Christ's birth was miraculous, the New Testament Scriptures show the unbelief of the rest of the family over the claims of Christ.

a) In Luke 2v43 we read that the Lord Jesus stopped behind in Jerusalem when His parents left (This Passover Feast which is referred to in Luke 2v41,42, would have occurred in 9 AD). The 12 year old Christ knew the anxiety and sorrow that this would cause, but He had to have some Scriptural answers to His problems from the theologians at the Temple, it was vitally important to His mission. At the age of twelve all Jewish males became a "a son of the law" and personally responsible for keeping the Law given by God to Moses on Mount Sinai, so He then had a legal right to question the doctors of theology at the "Bible School" at the Temple on matters of Truth and the Law. It is also feasible that he asked His parents for such a talk with the doctors of the law and they refused or His Heavenly Father told Him that the only thing that He could do was to take this desperate measure. The way that Christ had to act was certainly a desperate measure, it shows that His parents were totally out of touch with the mission of Christ and that their faith in the prophecies given to them had failed.

Their faith in Christ's mission and their appreciation of His ministry was so weak, or even non-existent, that when Christ spoke about His Father's business in Luke 2v49, the Scriptures state in Luke 2v50 that "they understood not the sayings which He spake unto them." One can feel the tremendous sense of frustration and heartbreak in the words of Christ, "How is it that ye sought me? did you not know that I must be about my Father's business?" After all that God had told them, their faith had failed. They would certainly have understood what the Lord Jesus meant if their faith in the mission of Christ had still been in existence. The Scripture says in Luke 2v51, to Mary's credit, that she "treasured all these things in her heart," however, this shows that the family were no longer talking about, or believing in, any of their former expectations of Christ Jesus.

b) In John 7v5 we read that "neither did His brethren believe in Him," and this is confirmed by Psalm 69v8,9,20,21, a Messianic psalm that tells us how the coming Christ was "a stranger unto my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's children. For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me." Verses 20 and 21 of the same Psalm show the anguish of heart that this loneliness of spirit and lack of comfort brought to Christ. Though these verses are connected with the cleaning of the Temple, John 2v20, and the crucifixion, John 19v28, they also show a deep unbelief in the family of Christ. Psalm 69v10-12.

c) Perhaps the most striking Scripture to show this blatant unbelief is in Mark 3v21-35, Christ's mother and brothers set out from home to seize Him and to take Him home saying that He was mad. It seems that this was the result of angering the Pharisees. Mark 3v6,22. The Lord tells them plainly that the thing that God required, is a determination to do the will of God. The Lord strongly implies that His family had not been doing the will of God, and that He had suffered for many years as a result of this and their unbelief.

d) The Bible tells us that the Lord Jesus went to Nazareth twice during His ministry, and on both occasions He was slighted, slandered, abused and rejected. On the first occasion they even tried to kill Him, and the second time they were offended and full of unbelief. Mark 6v1-6, NB v4, Luke 4v16-30. The Lord said a striking thing, "A prophet is not without honour, except in his own country and among his own relatives, and in his own home." Mark 6v4.

The reason for the failure of Mary and Joseph to understand Christ's mission.

The Lord Jesus was without doubt helped by the godly lives of Joseph and Mary, but they fell into rank unbelief over the mission of Christ, and the reasons for this seem to be as follows.

a) The time lapse from the prophecies they had received to their fulfilment. When the powerful spiritual anointing that comes with such revelations has gone, we have to continue to believe in what God has told us even in circumstances that seem to deny His Word. To believe that God had sent His Son to live in obscurity took some believing, and when the years went by and nothing seemed to happen, the promises that had been given to them looked like a tantalising but unreal mirage, and by the time the Lord was twelve they could not understand or believe in Christ's mission.

b) We are told in Isaiah 53v1, that the character and humiliation of Christ was going to stumble nearly everybody, and that He was going to be despised and rejected of men. Almost everybody had the wrong idea of the Christ; they expected a mighty warrior, a liberator from Rome's power, but they got a meek and lowly Jesus, they rightly expected "the Mighty God," but forgot that He was the Prince of Peace. Isaiah 9v6. They did not get a warrior or leader like Moses or David, and it caused their faith to fail. The character, ministry and humiliation of Christ, not only stumbled His family, it also stumbled John Baptist and his disciples, Christ's own disciples, and in fact nearly everybody. Simeon and Mary of Bethany were perhaps the only two who realised that the Lord Jesus had to die. Luke 2v28-34, John 12v2-8. Even after the resurrection Christ's disciples were expecting Him to take up arms against the Romans, so ingrained were their wrong expectations of the Christ. Acts 1v6,7.

c) Jesus was a holy man, not a soldier. He did not delight in the things that everybody else delighted in; war against the Romans, the pride of life, self-will, etc. Jesus did not revile when He was reviled, in fact He turned the other cheek, there

was none of the self-assertiveness of an Antichrist, and the people were looking for that kind of man. John 5v24,43. People today think that you are mad if you don't seek your own ends, and human nature has always been the same. Christ was completely unselfish, He had no sin and lived a perfect life, this beautiful life was a constant rebuke to the lives of those around Him, and brought either the displeasure and hatred of men, or their scorn. Psalm 69v10-12. Christ's character was the very opposite to what almost everybody expected of the Messiah. Gentleness, love and forgiveness were not the attributes most Israelites expected or desired in their Messiah, they wanted a victorious soldier not a holy man. The wonderful thing is that the Lord Jesus triumphed gloriously over the depressing spiritual standards of Nazareth, and the unbelief of His family and the rest of the Israelites, we can only say with heartfelt thanks and praise, "Hallelujah, what a Saviour."

Christ's Preparation and Training by His Father for His Mission.

Why did the Lord Jesus never sin? Why did He have such a wonderful ministry? If we say that it was because He was the Son of God and was incapable of failure, we rob Him of His real glory and make His trials and temptations a farce. The Scriptures clearly tell us that the Lord Jesus on many occasions found it very difficult to do the will of His Father. When the Lord Jesus "emptied Himself," Phil 2v7, Greek, "ekenosen," (which is from "kenoo" (NT:2758)) and became flesh, He laid Himself open to all the difficulties, trials and temptations that come to man. John 1v14, Heb 2v14,18, 4v15, Rom 1v3. The Lord Jesus was not bound to grow up pure and perfect, Christ could not be prayerless, or neglect the Scriptures, or live carelessly in any way and escape the consequences. He led a diligent, spiritual and careful life, He fulfilled the beatitudes at Nazareth before He preached them at the sermon on the mount. The Lord Jesus knew that to live right you had to feed on and live every word that proceeded out of the mouth of God the Father. The growth of Christ's character was not automatic, He responded to the grace of God. Luke 2v40,52. Christ's temptation in the wilderness and His agony in the garden of Gethsemane were no pretence or sham, Christ was not play-acting, He was having the most dreadful, agonising, greasy pole fights of faith. The Lord Jesus had the most awful conflicts with evil powers of darkness, and His glory is, that though He felt the limitations, trials and temptations of the flesh, He went through in victory for our sakes. The Lord Jesus spoke of Himself as the Son of man again and again, this was doubtless a hint to His hearers that He was the great personage of Dan 7v13,14, but it is also an indication of how our Lord felt the limitations of the flesh. Christ had to prepare for His ministry and the tremendous task of redemption, let us see how He did it.

a) The Lord Jesus prepared for His mission by meditation in the Scriptures.

To become flesh the Lord Jesus had to empty Himself of all His wisdom and knowledge, and so he had to learn again the Truth that He had known in heaven. Luke 2v40,52. The Lord Jesus would first learn about His mission from what His mother and relatives told Him. He would hear about the angels that visited Mary and Joseph, Zachariah, and the shepherds, and how Simeon and Anna recognised Him as the Messiah, and without a doubt Zachariah and Elizabeth were a tremendous help to the young Saviour. Luke 1 and 2.

There must also have come to the young Christ a similar revelation to the one that the young Samuel experienced long before. God the Father certainly revealed Himself to the Son in His younger years and told Him of His identity and His mission more explicitly, for one cannot believe that the child Samuel would have a greater spiritual experience as a child than the Lord Jesus. 1Sam 3v1-21. Christ's communion and fellowship with the Father was perfect, complete and unique, for there was no shadow of sin between them. John 10v14,15,37,38.

Though the Lord Jesus learned a great deal by supernatural revelation from His Father, He also learned a lot about His mission from the Scriptures. He said to His disciples, "O foolish ones, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken." Luke 24v25, and he said to His enemies, "Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God." Matt 22v29, Mark 12v24,27. The Lord Jesus loved the Scriptures and during the 30 years at Nazareth He was continually meditating on them, and planning His life around them. Our Lord was living a life that was devoted to the task that lay ahead of Him, and by prayer and meditation He prepared Himself for it. We are told in Isaiah 49v1-7, that the Father prepared His Son in secret for the task that lay ahead of Him. "He hath made my mouth like a sharp sword," speaks of wisdom, Christ was an able exponent of the Scriptures, He was able to discern between good and evil. Heb 4v12,13. "A polished shaft," speaks of obedience, the Lord Jesus went where His Father aimed Him, there was no flaw in His character, no spiritual weakness, no ignorance or lack of wisdom and knowledge that would cause any deviation from the target.

In Isaiah 50v3-5 we again see the Creator and Controller of the universe in the position of the pupil, being taught by the Father the things that he needed to know. In Luke 2v40,52 we read that the Lord Jesus "grew and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon Him," and "Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man." The Lord Jesus grew in spiritual strength and knowledge until at 30 He was "full of grace and truth," He had a beautiful and gracious disposition and a mind that was full of Truth," Psalm 45v2 with Luke 4v22, John 1v14.

b) The Lord Jesus prepared for His task by a victorious prayer life.

The disciples were impressed by Christ's prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the

making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") life and asked Him to teach them how to pray. Luke 11v1-13. They saw the blessed results of His intercessions, they saw the wondrous communion that Christ the only begotten Son had with His Father, and the disciples longed to have this same blessed experience and ministry. This mighty praying and blessed communion were the results of many years of spiritual discipline.

Christ's early morning prayer times and nights of prayer were means of grace that the Lord Jesus used at Nazareth, they were the habit of years of devoted praying. Have you thought how difficult it must have been for the Lord Jesus to have had a time of prayer and meditation? He would doubtless pray and meditate as He worked, but He would also need those times of private prayer and meditation which are essential for a close walk with God. To get these times of private prayer Christ would have to get up early or stay up late, for the family business would keep Him occupied during the day. Those who have tried late nights of prayer or whole nights of prayer, or even early morning prayer times, know what a strain this can be on one's health, and we must use our common sense and not do too much, or we can weaken our bodies and become ill, and this is not glorifying to God.

As He prayed (Greek, "entunchano" (NT:1793) and "proseuchomai" (NT4336), both of which mean "to make interventions with power so as affect a change in circumstances") the Lord Jesus thought of the task that lay ahead of Him, the cross was always in His mind (from even before the foundation of the world, the Cross was always in the mind of the Trinity and especially in the mind of the Lord Jesus, for He was the Lamb of God slain from before the foundation of the world. Rev 5v6, 13v8), and as He meditated and prayed He became increasingly aware of its implications. The one thought on His mind was "I must not fail, my Father is relying on me, for the sake of those who will be saved through me I must go through with the task of redemption." What a tremendous task lay before Him, but He was utterly devoted to our salvation and well-being, even at Nazareth Christ was feeling the burden of our sins and the enormous responsibility of our salvation.

Christ won through because He absolutely depended on His Father, there was no self-reliance. Prayer is really an expression for our helplessness and our need of the help of God. Christ said, "As the living Father has sent me, and as I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even shall he live by me." John 6v57. Christ said that He lived by faith in the Father and by the life of the Father, and He said that we are to depend on Him as He depended on the Father. Paul said, "I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me." Gal 2v20. The Lord Jesus won through because of His great humility, He realised the limitations of the flesh, and so entirely depended on and trusted in the grace of His Father. Very often, the trouble with ourselves is that we feel that we can manage with just a little of God's help, and then we lean on the arm of the flesh, however, the Lord Jesus relied on His Father all the time and not on Himself. John 5v30, 7v17, 12v49,50, 14v24.

Dependence on God is absolutely necessary or pride comes in, especially in relation to Pentecostal experience. If we try to do anything in our own strength, pride comes in and the result very often is a wretched and dry spiritual experience that is very humbling. It is easier for a nobody to depend on God alone than a very naturally talented person. A very able person finds it difficult not to rely on those abilities, and though these abilities may be greatly blessed of God when a person walks humbly with the Lord, when pride comes in and the blessing of the Lord is missing there inevitably is a barrenness. Natural talent or ability cannot make up for the blessing of God, and we are never in a more dangerous position than when we feel that we can make it on our own. 1Cor 1v26-31, 2v13-16, 2Cor 11v22-30, 12v6-12. The Lord Jesus never felt self-sufficient, He never went His own way, He always sought the guidance and blessing of His Father in prayer, and by the Word of God and supernatural revelation and visions His Father guided Him and informed Him of His desires. The Lord Jesus waited for the vision to be fulfilled and then did what His Father had shown Him in the vision. John 2v4, 4v3-5, 5v19-21,30, 7v8, 11v6, 13v1.

There is an inseparable link between a life of prayer and the will of God, it is only those who commune with God that can find and do His will. Christ prepared for His mission by doing the will of God at Nazareth. Christ did no public miracles at Nazareth, His first public miracle to reveal Him to Israel was the turning of water to wine at Cana. John 2v1-12. However, He did have words of wisdom and knowledge (and He got used to the operation of spiritual gifts of revelation at Nazareth.) and many private miracles of miraculous provision to meet the needs of His (earthly) family after Joseph had died, for Mary said in John 2v5, "Whatsoever He saith unto you, do it." Christ must have been a blessing to many at Nazareth even while working at the family business, and God can use us and prepare us for even greater things in God's will through our work life, home life and devotional life, as well as our church life. To prepare for his ministry John Baptist had many years of separation in the wilderness from life's pressures, but our dear Lord Jesus prepared for His mission and lived a perfect life in the pressures of business life (for He was the carpenter of Nazareth after Joseph died), home life and the low standards of Nazareth. Hallelujah, what a wonderful Saviour!

We see that the Lord Jesus was prepared for His task by His Father. The Lord Jesus filled His mind with the Scriptures, and the Holy Spirit made those Holy Scriptures live to the Saviour. Christ, God the Word, had received these Scriptures from the Father and given them to the prophets of old. Christ at Nazareth meditated in those Scriptures, like the Psalmist of old He could say of His Father's Word, "Oh how I love Thy Law, it is my meditation all the day," and again, "The Law of thy mouth is better unto me than thousands of gold or silver." Psalm 119v97,72. The Lord also learned to pray, and pray, and pray

(Greek, "entunchano" (NT:1793) and "proseuchomai" (NT4336), both of which mean "to make interventions with power so as affect a change in circumstances") and walk and live in communion with His Father. So real was His walk with His Father that He could say that His walk on earth was also a walk in heaven at the same time. John 3v13. Christ could say to His Father, "As the heart panteth after the water-brooks, so panteth my soul after thee." Psalm 42v1. The Lord knew the limitations of the flesh and the need to have implicit and unwavering trust in His Father's grace and goodness: He said from the true humility of His heart, I can of myself do nothing; as I hear I judge; and my judgement is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of Him that sent me." John 5v30. Christ had loved to do His Father's will for the whole of His 30 years at Nazareth, and He could truly say, "I delight to do Thy will O my God: yea, thy Law is within My heart." Psalm 40v7,8, Heb 10v5-9.

The importance of spiritual preparation in the work of God cannot be over-stressed, for spiritual preparation comes before any great power from God, and walking with God before any great work for God. The Church can never replace spiritual preparation, spiritual qualifications, and God's power, with human and intellectual qualifications and still remain a force for God. Social or political influence can never take the place of God's power. How often do we fail to put spiritual preparation, growth of character, and victory over temptation in their proper place in the work of God. However, again and again in His Word God shows us the necessity of all these things, and never more than in the case of His Son, Jesus Christ. We try so often to do great things for God without any spiritual preparation, and end up both defeated and powerless, and without accomplishing any real good in our Christian work. The complete dedication and spiritual preparation as illustrated by the life of Christ is the only way to the great victories that we see in the ministry of Christ and His early Church. **Luther said that it took three things to make a Christian minister, prayer, meditation and temptation, and our dear Lord Jesus experienced all three of these in great measure before He started on His mission.**

Temptation And Spiritual Conflict Are Inevitable After The Baptism In The Holy Spirit.

The temptation of Christ took place after His baptism in the Spirit at Jordan, and we can certainly expect a similar blast from the Wicked One after our baptism in the Spirit. Luke 3v21,22, 4v18,19, John 2v11. When the Lord Jesus received His baptism in the Spirit at Jordan, He was led by the Holy Spirit to taste six weeks of the most shattering, nerve-racking, soul-destroying temptation from the evil one. To be baptised in the Holy Spirit does not mean that life will be nothing but joy and gladness, in fact it almost always means that there will be new areas of conflict in the life. The baptism in the Spirit does bring joy and strength into the soul, but it also results in conflict with the powers of darkness. There will be an attack on our prayer life and our communion with God, and on occasions the conflict with Satan in prayer has to be experienced to be appreciated. The Lord Jesus spent the whole of these 40 days in prayer, yet they were a time of intense spiritual conflict, and sometimes when we set ourselves to pray and seek God we can experience a great battle with the powers of darkness, and we can have a real fight of faith and struggle to keep on believing and trusting God. Though we have these times of spiritual conflict, it does not mean that we lose God's Presence during these conflicts. It is our communion with God that will take us through these times of conflict.

We can be sure that the Lord Jesus was praying about all the things that His future ministry would entail. Where to start His ministry, who would help Him in His ministry and be His disciples. We can also be sure that during this time the Father gave the Lord Jesus supernatural revelation and vision to direct Him on His path, and show Him the next steps to take after the temptation, for Christ never went ahead without this guidance from His Father. John 5v19,20,30. Sometimes in situations like these, and in times of spiritual conflict we may find it necessary to fast, as well as pray, to get the victory. However, we should remember that the Scripture says, "fast and pray," not "fast and work," the modern pressures of life can be a real strain on one's health without undermining it further by fasting and working. For the same reason long fasts are not desirable, however, the semi-fast of Dan 1v7-18 and 10v1-7 can be a real blessing on occasions. We should remember that it is God's desire that we should look after our bodies and keep them strong and well so that we can serve Him efficiently. Many Christians have lost many months, and even years of useful service for God through neglecting their health and over-straining their bodies.

We shall find, as the Lord Jesus did, that when we receive great power and a ministry from God, burdens, responsibilities, and temptations will come upon us in a measure corresponding to the power we have received. God will not allow us to be tempted above what we are able, but we can expect some measure of Satanic opposition. 1Cor 10v12,13. God has always put His saints into the hands of the Devil, and they have always been sorely tried by the world, the flesh and the Devil, because spiritual conflict is very necessary for spiritual growth. Job 1 and 2, Luke 22v31,32. However, it is not enough for us to know that temptation and spiritual conflict is necessary, we should know why it is necessary, so let us see why it was necessary for the Lord Jesus to be tempted and we will see from some of the reasons why it is necessary for us to be tempted.

Christ's temptation proved that He was ready for His mission.

Temptation shows us whether we are ready for God's service, for temptation shows whether we can be trusted with spiritual power. Power has great perils and dangers, and until we have been in the school of temptation and come out with flying colours, God can hardly trust us with great spiritual power. The temptation was the final exam of the 30 years of

preparation that Christ had gone through. The Lord Jesus and Satan had many conflicts in the previous 30 years, but this was Satan's all-out attack on the Saviour. God was allowing the teaching, experiences, character and life of the Lord Jesus to be put in the fiery furnace of temptation. Any selfish motives, hidden pride, love of admiration, unwillingness to suffer for others, and lack of faith in God would have shown themselves in this furnace of temptation, but the Saviour's character was proved to be pure gold without any alloy. To use another metaphor, **Christ was put through Satan's sieve, but no chaff could be found.** Heb 7v26.

Woe betide us if when the day of temptation comes, we are not steeped in the Word of God and are without any spiritual preparation, and we have a powerful foe and we need a real and deep spiritual experience to defeat the wiles of the Devil. If in the pride of our hearts we think that we can attack the kingdom of Satan without any spiritual preparation, we shall be like the house that is built on the sand that had no foundation, and great will be our fall. Even the Lord Jesus did not face this Satanic attack without any preparation, He put on the whole armour of God, and we must do the same if we are to stand in the evil day and not be utterly defeated. Eph 6v10-20. The Lord Jesus warns us in the parable of the sower that the shallow hearted person will "fall away" in time of temptation, due to a lack of a deep work of grace in the heart. The heart has got to have preparation and cultivation if we are to be spiritually safe. Luke 8v6,13, Prov 4v20-23, Matt 13v6,21. By the grace of God we can overcome the wiles of the Devil. 1John 2v13,14, Rev 12v10,11, 21v7.

In the wilderness Christ had to face the temptations that He was going to face in His ministry. We have our times of greatest trial and temptation before we do something for God, and God allows this to happen in order to prepare us and strengthen us for the future. To fail in this hour of preparation and temptation means that we can miss God's perfect way and will for our lives. A wishy washy Christian life and spiritual experience will mean spiritual disaster and a great fall in the hour of temptation. God will allow us to be tempted, as He did in the case of Peter, in order to reveal the flaws in our character, so that by His grace these flaws can be removed. Satan's desire and aim in temptation is to turn us aside from being blessed and a blessing to others, and so He will give us the full blast of temptation at the start of a deliverance ministry, and at our baptism in the Holy Spirit. This spiritual conflict tries your heart, and you find your motives being examined and cleaned up. We find out what our heart is like, whether we are in God's work for personal prestige or profit, or pure devotion to God and mankind. Peter got an awful shock when Satan showed what he was really made of, and sometimes we can also weep bitter tears of repentance, shame and sorrow, when the true condition of our heart is revealed. Luke 5v4-11, 22v55-62. The Lord tries our hearts, and uses Satan and circumstances to show what is there. Rev 2v23. If we become spiritually arrogant we will find that we will fall, the humble receive God's grace. 1Cor 10v11-13, James 4v6, 1Pet 5v5.

It needs real effort, courage and determination to enter and stay in our spiritual Canaan of a Pentecostal fullness. A Christian can experience great conflict and great temptation, for the Evil One will try to turn us aside from what God has for us. Satan will try to turn us aside by throwing scorn on God's love, care, provision and will, and by offering us worldly and religious prestige in exchange for the honour and blessing which God alone can give. We have to resist these lies and seductions of Satan if we are to have a ministry that is anointed by the Holy Spirit. Our spiritual exam times will surely come to us, so let us be spiritually prepared for them. Number 13v30, 14v6-9, Matt 4v1-11, Luke 4v1-13, Eph 6v10-20, Heb 4v3.

Temptation is ESSENTIAL for spiritual growth and sympathetic Christian service.

Paul tells us in Rom 5v3-5, that "tribulation worketh patience; and patience experience; and experience hope: and hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us." Temptation and trial improve our character and Christian work if we approach them with the right attitude. Very often we need trial and temptation to be a help to some people, 2Cor 1v3-7, they are a sure way to strength of soul and sympathy. Temptation is a sure and essential way to spiritual growth, the tempted soul becomes strong by resisting evil. James 1v12, 1Pet 1v6,7. Through conflict with evil we realise the horror of sin and really learn to hate it; **it is necessary for us not only to love that which is good, but also to hate that which is evil**, and temptation is the only thing which can bring this about in us. The result of overcoming great trials and temptations through God's Grace is that we bind the strongman and receive great power and an anointing from God. The greater the trials and temptations that we overcome (through God's Grace) the greater the power and anointing that we shall receive from the Lord. The One Who received the Spirit without measure knew and experienced greater trials and temptations than any other person who has ever lived! Job 1 & 2, Psalm 45v7 with Heb 1v9, Matt 4v1-11, 12v22-30, Mark 3v20-27, Luke 4v1-13, John 3v34, Heb 4v15, 1John 2v14-17.

Even the Lord Jesus had to grow in wisdom, knowledge, and strength of soul and spirit, He "waxed strong in spirit." Luke 2v40,52. The Scriptures tell us that the Lord Jesus partook of human nature and laid Himself open to temptation so "that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. For in that He Himself hath suffered being tempted, He is able to succour them that are tempted." Heb 2v14-18. We know that our dear Lord Jesus appreciates our struggles and is touched with and sympathises with us in our feelings of infirmity and weakness, for He Himself has felt the trials and weakness of the flesh, being "tempted and tried in all points like we are, yet without sin." Heb 4v15. The only person who has the right to condemn us, is full of sympathy towards us and is praying (Greek, "entunchano" (NT:1793) and "proseuchomai" (NT4336), both of which mean "to make interventions with power so

as affect a change in circumstances") for us. Rom 8v31-34, Heb 7v25. Every second of every day God's people are upheld by the sympathetic and loving ministry of our Great High Priest. The Lord does not use His unspotted purity and perfect holiness to condemn us, instead He justifies us by it, and assures us that nothing can separate us from His blessing, or the ministrations of His love. If we walk in the light nothing in this sinful world can separate us from His sympathy and love.

It is not a sin to be tempted.

Temptation is inevitable to a free will creature, Satan was tempted in Heaven with no evil being there to tempt him. Temptation cannot be avoided by a free will creature, the choice is always there between the path of love or the path of selfishness, i.e. between good and evil. The time finally comes when temptation causes a fixation of purpose either in good or evil. To the righteous, temptation is a blessing, for resisting temptation makes them love righteousness and hate evil; the temptation may cause much anguish, pain and sorrow and suffering, but the end is blessedness. Rom 8v14-18,28-39, James 1v2-4, 1Pet 1v3-9. To the wicked, temptation is a curse for it causes them to hate righteousness and love evil; even if they have everything that the heart could desire, they are to be pitied, for their end is Hades and Gehenna. Rev 20v11-15. The selfish soul by continually resisting the Gospel and giving way to temptation, finally reaches a fixation of purpose in evil, and so solitary confinement in Hell is the only possible end of such souls. They have to be confined in the Lake of Fire to preserve the peace and happiness of God's kingdom (NB: Please see the study entitled, "The Issues Of Death And Eternal Judgement" at www.truthforthelastdays.com); the loving soul by embracing the Gospel and resisting temptation, finally reaches a fixation of purpose in righteousness and because of this God can and will safely trust them with His eternal riches and mighty powers in the ages to come, knowing they will only use them to be a blessing to others. Matt 24v45-25v13,31-46. It is Love and God, Father, Son, and Spirit, that will make Heaven, Heaven. 1Cor 1v18, Rev 22v11.

Our dear Lord Jesus was "holy, harmless, and undefiled," and yet He suffered more vicious temptation than anyone has suffered. He was attacked with bitter hatred and malice by Satan for 40 days in the wilderness and on many other occasions too. So we can see that it does not mean that we are evil if we are tempted, the soul of Christ was tempted even though He was perfectly pure. We cannot avoid being tempted, though we can be led away from paths that lead to temptation and sin by living a prayerful life. By living close to God we can avoid many spiritual dangers, that come to those who live carelessly. It is certainly wrong for us to invite temptation, and if it is at all possible we should avoid circumstances that lead to temptation. However, sometimes God does lead us into black looking circumstances and conflicts with evil, as He did with the Lord Jesus. The wilderness temptation of the Lord Jesus was the will of God the Father, and if God leads us into circumstances that are very difficult, we can trust Him to take care of us and lead us out of them, if we are faithful, and continue to trust our Heavenly Father. Mark 1v12, Luke 4v1, Rom 5v20, 1Cor 10v13, 2Cor 12v9, Heb 7v26, 12v3.

(Please see Appendix 7: God Made Jesus The Perfect Saviour And High Priest Through Suffering.)

As the end of this age (The Age of Grace) rapidly approaches it is vital that every Christian gets ready for the terrible dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, for it is **MOST** certain that the Church is upon earth during those awful wicked and difficult dark days! Rev 7v9,13,14 states:

"After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands...And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they? And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, **These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."**

NOTE: In Rev 7v14 the Greek preposition before "teés thlípseos teés megáleeis" (which literally means, "the Tribulation, the Great one") is "ek" (NT:1537) which means "out of" i.e. if a circle is drawn on a sheet of paper, the starting point of this action would be from inside the circle, it is **NOT** the preposition "apo" (NT:575), which means "away from" that is used here; the starting point of this action would be from outside the circle (and moving away from it) and so at no point in time would it have been inside the circle. However, as already stated, "ek" starts from within the circle, which definitely shows that the said item was "in" the circle before it came out of it! So, in the above Scripture, when it states that the Christians come "out of" the Great Tribulation, they first had to be in it to then to be able to come out of it! These victorious Christians who come out of the Great Tribulation, do so by either being Raptured at Christ's Second Coming after the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, or by dying during it, i.e. martyred for their faith. Matt 24v29-31, Rev 6v9-11, 14v13.

It is the great and **URGENT** desire of each member of the Godhead that each and every Christian should be obedient to the call for them to rise up with their Lord into the heavenly places to conquer and subdue the Devil and the powers of darkness so as to inhabit their Heavenly Canaan (even as the early church did by imitating the Lord Jesus, 1Cor 11v1) so that they manifest God's power and love not only in the heavenly places but also upon earth through their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") by the gifts of the Holy Spirit and so operate as a priest of the Melchizedek priesthood. However, before the Christian can go on to maturity and perfection (i.e. entering into God's rest and operating as a priest of the Melchizedek priesthood, Heb 4v3), they must first study and fully understand "the elementary principles of Christ," (i.e. The

Foundation Truths) as is listed in Heb 5v12-6v2. (It would be most beneficial for any Christian who has not yet studied and fully understood these Foundation Truths, to go along to www.truthforthelastdays.com and study the work entitled "Foundation Truths" by C L Parker.)

Having fully studied and understood these "Foundation Truths" the Christian can then go onto perfection and this we do by not only looking at Jesus but "into" Him, i.e. we must look away into ("eis") all that Jesus was and is, His majestic life, character and sacrificial love. Heb 12v2.

(Please see Appendix 8: Looking Away Unto Jesus The Author And Perfecter Of Our Faith. Heb 12v2.)

As the last seven years of this age (the Age of Grace) rapidly approaches (Daniel's 70th prophetic week (Dan 9v27) of the Seventy Weeks prophecy, Dan 9v24-27), which will be immediately preceded by the Lord Jesus taking the Book out of His Father's right hand and opening the first seal thereof (with the other six seals following thereafter), it is vital that Christians understand that what they do **NOW** has a direct bearing upon when God stands aside and lets these last seven years begin to come to pass which ends with the Second Coming of our dear Lord Jesus in great power and glory when every eye will see Him. Isaiah 25v6-8, Zech 12v10, Matt 24v29-31, 1Cor 15v50-57, 1Thess 4v13-18, 5v2-4, 2Thess 2v1-12, 2Pet 3v10, Rev 1v7, Rev 4-6v17, 7v14, 8v1.

(So please see Appendix 9: Looking For And Hastening The Coming Of The Day Of God.)

The Great Tribulation.

The great worldwide outpouring of the Holy Spirit (which will commence a great revival) just before the last seven years of this age will be the greatest that the world has ever seen or experienced. One of the main purposes of this great revival will be to get Christians ready for the Great Tribulation that will begin when Michael and his angels casts the Devil and the evil angels out of the heavenly places into the earth with God also removing His restraint upon them. The Devil, knowing that he only has a short time (three and a half years) to put his evil plan into operation, comes down to the earth with great wrath. It is therefore important to understand that the Great Tribulation is caused by the wrath of the Devil and **NOT** by the wrath of God. It is also at this time (just before the Great Tribulation begins) that Antichrist is killed and the Devil is given permission by God to raise him out from amongst the dead from the Abyss (i.e. he will copy the Resurrection of the Lord Jesus, so that "all the world (will) wonder(ed) after the beast," Rev 13v3). Antichrist then breaks the treaty with Israel and sets up his image in the Temple in Jerusalem claiming that he is God. With the Devil and the powers of darkness being cast down into the earth and God's restraint being removed from them and the Devil allowed to put his plan of evil into action. Overnight, the whole atmosphere around the world, in every country, city, town, village and indeed everywhere will go from that of being barely tolerable, during the first three and a half years of Daniel's Seventieth prophetic week, to one off suffocating malignant evil manifesting itself in an immediate great increase of terrible wickedness throughout the world. So, because of evil being multiplied in the world with the start of the Great Tribulation, there is another great (worldwide) outpouring of the Holy Spirit just before the start of the Great Tribulation, when the Two Witnesses will start their ministry in Jerusalem and other last day Elijah ministries will also be appear and be manifested around the world. The Two Witness and these other last day Elijah ministries will exercise great power and authority, indeed so great, that they will be able to call fire down from heaven upon those who try to hurt or kill them, "they also have power to shut heaven, so that no rain falls in the days of their prophecy; and they have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to strike the earth with all plagues, **as often as they desire.**" **NO** other person or ministry has ever or will ever exercise such great power and authority upon the earth as the Two Witnesses and these other last day Elijah ministries! Even the great prophet Moses, who was a prophet like unto the Lord Jesus could only bring down judgement upon the wicked at the express direction of the Lord and although Elijah did call fire down from Heaven on two occasions and the heavens remained shut so that there would be no rain or dew except at his word, the extent of the power and authority of the Two Witnesses and the other last day Elijah ministries will be considerably greater than that of Elijah, for they will operate these judgement gifts day in day out as often as they desire for three and a half years, during the whole of the Great Tribulation. The great wickedness and evil that will be in the world during the Great Tribulation will require the Church to have great power and authority from the Lord so as to be able to act as a restraint upon the powers of darkness, the wicked and wickedness in the world; for if that was not the case, Antichrist (who will be personally possessed by the Devil) would have the world destroyed well before the end of the three and a half year period. It is also at the beginning of the Great Tribulation that the Glorious Woman of Rev 12 is revealed. **It is a group of praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) which means "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") people, with prepared hearts and special ministries for the last days, who will operate with awesome power as a prayer-warrior group behind the scenes.** God gives a definite promise that He will protect, provide and empower the seeking hearts in His Church in a new and special way in the last days, and will **NOT** leave His Church defenceless in the Great Tribulation. This glorious woman reveals that part of the Church will be clothed with the fullness of God's power, and will be transported, protected and fed by God. This group is a major part of God's answer to the "mystery of iniquity," and it is one of many such groups, who operate in Israel and other parts of the world. The effect of their "interventions" with Divine power, will be felt and seen around the whole world, and not just locally in the Middle East, even as the "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) of the Lord Jesus, during His earthly life, were seen and felt around the whole world and not just around the rim of the Mediterranean sea.

Their "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) will not only bring judgment upon the wicked, but also through vision ministry, they will protect other groups of Christians and form the character of Christ in these same believers, even as Paul made "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) for the believers at Colossae and Laodicea. The Christians who have escaped to "the wilderness", are said to be fed by God (the "they" of v6, are most probably Angels); they will have miraculous provision of food stuffs through their "interventions," (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) and will be cared for in the same manner as Yahweh cared and fed the Israelites in the Wilderness for forty years. Their provision will also be similar to that of the feeding of the four and five thousand during the earthly ministry of the Lord Jesus, which were the result of His great "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) beforehand, for having seen in vision what the Father was going to do, He then prayed it into reality. Num 16v28, Deut 18v15-19, 1Kings 17v1, 2Kings 1v1-18, Neh 9v15, Dan 9v27, 11v32, Joel 2v28-32, Zech 12v8, Mal 4v5,6, Matt 14v13-21, 15v32-39, 24v12,15,21,22, Luke 18v1-8, John 5v19-20,30, 14v12-14, Acts 2v16-21, 3v22,23, 7v37, Col 2v1-5, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 11v3-7, 12v1-17, 13v1-18.

As already has been mentioned previously in the section of this study on the Pre-Adamic ages, with God's restraint being removed from the Devil and the powers of darkness and their being cast out of the heavenlies into the earth (by Michael and his angels), the Devil then proceeds to implement fully the "mystery of iniquity" (i.e. "the plan of evil"), which will not only fill the whole earth with great wickedness and evil, like the world has ever seen since its creation (including the Pre-Adamic ages), but the Devil and the evil angels will once again create giant human-like beings that will be inhabited by other evil angels, just like they did in the Pre-Adamic ages and in the days of Noah before and after the flood. However, this will only be the beginning off the Devil's evil creative works, he will then proceed to create all types of dinosaurs, hominids and many other types of fierce creatures, birds and insects, even as he also did during the Pre-Adamic ages. Matt 24v12 could be paraphrased as, "And because lawlessness and wickedness on the earth continuously increases (so that it is greatly multiplied), the (Greek, "agape" (NT:26) love of the majority (or the most Christians) will wax cold." (Also see Rev 6v7,8, **"behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill...with the beasts of the earth."** "The beasts" is in Greek, "toón theeríoon" which is from "therion" (NT:2342) and which means "(venomous, wild) beast, a wild animal, it is the same Greek word that is used of Antichrist. Rev 11v7. The "wild beasts" that are referred to here are the dinosaurs, hominids and other fierce creatures that the Devil and the evil angels will make during the Great Tribulation. **Please see Appendix 10: And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill...with the beasts of the earth.**) The result of this great inrush of evil into the world will be that **most** Christians will be completely overwhelmed by it and loose their spiritual glow (simply because they didn't prepare for it!), with the result that if they don't very quickly get to grips with it and really seek the face of the Lord, will backslide and go into apostasy. Matt 25v1-12 clearly shows that half of the Christians upon earth will simply be completely overwhelmed by the great wickedness in society and will backslide and go into apostasy. The main reason for their not preparing for the Great Tribulation is because they were taught by their (so called) pastors and teachers that they would not be upon earth for it, but would be raptured before it started. **NOTE** the words in Matt 24v48, "My lord delayeth his coming," the question arises why does the believer say "delayeth?" Well simply because the Great Tribulation will start and there will have been no secret advent and rapture, with the result that the believer (who holds and believe the secret pre-tribulation advent and rapture) is completely baffled why the Great Tribulation has started and they are still upon earth, so they say to themselves, "My lord delayeth his coming." Also observe that the believer makes no attempt at all to seek out the Truth as to why this has happened to them or to remedy their situation, they simply backslide and go into apostasy! (Matt 24v45-25v12, 2Thess 2v3). Another reason for their backsliding and going into apostasy will be because of believing Augustine's doctrine of "Original Sin" and his "born in sin" theories. By holding this destructive heresy they believe the lie that they were born in sin and so they think that because the Lord Jesus didn't sin but manifested perfect love to all He must therefore have had a different kind of humanity to them. However, this is the destructive heresy of Docetic Gnosticism, which John states is **NOT** of God and is of the spirit of Antichrist in 1John 4v1-6. So, because these believers hold and believe this evil doctrine (when the Scriptures state that the Lord's humanity was exactly like any other human's, Rom 8v3, Heb 2v10-18, 4v15, 10v5), light cannot come into their mind on this most important Truth and so their minds become filled with darkness and reprobate on this matter. (Rom 1v28) In this condition these believers cannot understand the vital Truth in the epistles of Romans and Hebrews; for **ALL** the Truth in these books stand upon the foundation that God was manifested in the flesh, that is He came into the world with a humanity just like **ANY** other human being (Phil 2v5-11). And so, the important Truth regarding the Lord Jesus as our Great High Priest after the order of Melchizedek and the Melchizedek priesthood is completely closed to them. (Isaiah 25v7) These Christians, because they have not dug deep and built upon a foundation of rock (i.e. filled their hearts and minds with the Truth on vital issues (and not only being a hearer of the word but a doer also) and had a heart relationship with the Lord Jesus by communion and fellowship with Him, Luke 6v46-49), will also suffer from unbelief, in that they will not believe that the Lord Jesus can look after them during the evil days of the Great Tribulation. With the removal of God's restraint upon the Devil, evil angels, wicked people and wickedness in the world, the responsibility for restraint upon all of these falls to the Church, which will be achieved through Christian's prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which both mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") by the gifts of the Holy Spirit, both by angelic ministration or directly through powerful prophetic last day Elijah ministries, like the Two Witnesses. God will respond to the great deluge of evil that comes into the world at the beginning of the Great Tribulation, with the greatest outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon the Church (i.e. those Christians who are believing for and expecting it) that has ever occurred in all the history of the world, just before the Great Tribulation begins. The great evil and wickedness that comes

into the world (at the beginning of the Great Tribulation) will be met with an infinitely greater outpouring of the Holy Spirit into the world by the Living God just before its beginning. **God will be with His people in a way like has never before been experienced by any of God's people at any time since the creation of the world and this fact cannot be over-emphasized!** The lie that a secret pre-tribulation advent and rapture is going to occur, so that Christians will miss the Great Tribulation, is having a devastating effect upon the Church, in that God's people will not be ready for these terrible dark evil days, with the result that with the great inrush of evil into the world, Christians will be completely and utterly overwhelmed by it, so that they will backslide and go into apostasy. The (so-called) preachers and teachers who teach this terrible destructive heresy and lie, Christ says are amongst the false prophets and teachers of the last days! The Lord Jesus states very clearly that His second coming will be with great power and glory, with the sound of a trumpet, a great shout, the voice of an archangel, the heavens passing away with a great noise, the elements melting with fervent heat with every eye seeing Him **IMMEDIATELY AFTER** (Matt 24v29) the Great Tribulation. **NOW is the time for EVERY Christian upon the earth to get ready for these terrible dark and wicked day, the like of which has NEVER been experienced before.** The Christian has the wonderful promise of Rom 5v20, "But where sin increased and abounded, grace (God's unmerited favor) has surpassed it and increased the more and superabounded." (Amplified Bible) Gen 6v1-12, Isaiah 26v14, Dan 2v43, 11v32, Joel 2v28-32, Zech 12v8, Matt 24v21,23-27,29-31, Mark 13v19, Luke 18v1-8, Rom 13v11-14, 1Cor 10v13, 2Cor 12v1Thess 4v13-17, 2Thess 2v1-12, 2Pet 3v10, Rev 1v7, 11v3-6, 12v7-9,12.

One of the ways a Christian can prepare themselves for the dark, evil days of the Great Tribulation, apart from seeking the face of the Lord Jesus for His plans and purposes and His Presence and Power to fulfil them, is that by praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793) which both mean "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") against groups of evil persons within the society they live in (i.e. the different terrorist groups that are found in countries around the world, the Islamic fundamentalist terrorists: Al-Qaeda, Taliban, Hezbollah, Hamas, also ETA (Euskadi Ta Askatasuna), Dissident Irish Republican (groups), FARC (Colombia), also the large narcotic cartels of South America and any criminal gangs and groups of gangsters found in any society), they can get practice so as to enable them to deal with the wicked (and **ALL** the evil giants and fierce creatures made by the Devil and the evil angels during the Great Tribulation, for this new authority (to bring judgement upon the wicked) is given by God to believers for this **VERY** purpose just before the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation begins, for the emphasis then will be upon judgement gifts and not so much mercy gifts, so that there is an active restraint upon the wicked. Dan 2v43, 11v32, Zech 12v8, Luke 18v1-8, Rev 11v3-6) during the Great Tribulation. They should call and invoke the covenant names of Yahweh, i.e. Yahweh Tsabaoth (The Lord of Hosts. 1Sam 1v3. This battle cry of the saints occurs 281 times in the Old Testament. Psalm 46v7,11. Our Lord said He could **CALL** for "twelve legions of angels" in Matt 26v53, it was part of His normal practice in His ministry to the multitudes. It seems Elisha also invoked the name of Yahweh for angelic help; "They that be with us are more than they that be with them." 2Kings 6v15-18. David beat Goliath by calling on the name of Yahweh. 1Sam 17v45.) against them in judgement and seek for God to remove them from society (if they are not willing to desist immediately from their evil works) and put them into the Abyss into chains of everlasting darkness to await the judgement of the great day, so that they can't carry out their evil deeds any more. 2Pet 2v4, Jude 6. **(Please see Appendix 4 for a brief study on the covenant names of Yahweh.)** By praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793) which both mean "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") this way, Christians will be fulfilling a Melchizedek priestly ministry. These Christians will have previously been obedient to their Lord's call to rise up with Him into the heavenlies and through their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") will have defeated and subdued the Devil and the powers of darkness and hence by inhabiting their Heavenly Canaan they can then manifest God's Power and Love in the heavenlies and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit and so enter into God's rest. These Christians will also need to be watchful in their Heavenly Canaan so that they do not become slothful and disobedient and so become defeated by the Devil and the powers of darkness and hence get expelled from their Heavenly Canaan, just like that which happened to the Israelites of old who got expelled from Israel. 2Kings 36v15-21, Acts 12v5,20-24, 1Tim 2v1-8, Heb 3v7-11, 4v3, 5v10-14.

Believers can also deal with the "spirit of lawlessness" ("iniquity") in the heavenlies over their individual countries; these particular evil angels are they which (amongst other things) energise the different terrorist groups (Islamic Fundamentalist Terror groups, Dissident Irish Republican groups), regimes (N Korea) and world leaders (Kim Jong-il), which, when Antichrist is revealed, will be his radical supporters and followers. Christians, by invoking and using the covenant names of Yahweh against these evil angels can remove them from the heavenly places and put them into the Abyss into chains of everlasting darkness to await the judgement of the great day, so that they can no longer energise the sons of disobedience. Eph 2v1-10, (esp. v2, "worketh" could be better translated "energises"), Eph 6v10-20, 2Thess 2v1-12.

Christians can also hasten the coming of the day of God through their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances"). **(Please see Appendix 8.)**

The Age of Grace comes to an end with Antichrist, who is personally possessed by the Devil, having brought the world to the brink of destruction, is destroyed by being consumed by the breath from the mouth of the Lord Jesus at His Second coming (Who shortens those days for the sake of the elect, otherwise no flesh would be saved); Antichrist, his followers and

the rest of the wicked upon earth are destroyed and put into the Lake of Fire, along with the evil angels, the Devil being put into chains and thrown into the Abyss for the duration of the Millennium. The First Resurrection occurs, at which both the Old and New Testament saints and resurrected, the Christians who are still alive are raptured and along with the resurrected Old and New Testaments saints are judged according to their works, each person receiving what they merit and given their position in the Eternal Kingdom. Zech 14v12, Matt 24v22, 1Cor 3v11-17, 15v50-55, 1Thess 4v13-18, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 1v7, 11v15-19, 14v9-11, 19v1-20v3,6.

The Age Of Stern Divine Government.

There is coming a time when God will rule men with a rod of iron and outward righteousness will be compulsory, yet man who has tasted the blessing of perfect government and ideal conditions, will take advantage of the first opportunity to re-introduce crime and violence. This age will end with the passing of the present Heaven and earth. Ezek 38v10-16, esp. v10,11. Scripture Period: Rev 11v15, 20v1-10.

The Ages Of Ages.

The Bible again reveals to us, stretching forward into a vast eternity, The Ages Of Ages; during which the redeemed will taste with exquisite joy, the infinite variety of God's love and wisdom and power. This begins with the judgement of the great White Throne. Through its portals the vast myriads of creation pass either to unending life and peace or an existence of never dying misery and darkness. Scripture: Dan 7v9,10, Rev 14v9-11, 20v7-22v6.

NB Better names might be found for the ages, but the main thought is that in each age God has tried a new plan with man, and man has defeated it by deliberate wickedness and proved that however God deals with him, he is in rebellion against even the best of government. The happiness of eternity will depend on the Truth that we know God has done all He could and has been even willing for the cross in an effort to save man. John 3v16, 1John 4v8,19.

Conclusion.

It was deceit, lust for power and the love of evil, that had turned Lucifer the "Light-Bringer" into the Devil, the "Prince of Darkness," the lying slanderer, in the very Presence of God in heaven. (In Isaiah 14v12, the Hebrew, "heylel" (OT:1966), or Greek, "phosphoros," (NT:5459), which is derived from "phos," light, and "phero," to bring, i.e. "Light-Bringer;" is translated in the KJV by the Latin "Lucifer.") We are not told just how long it was before the desire to depart from God's way, the way of Love, to that of his own way, the way of ambition without love, sin and evil, entered into Lucifer's mind, but entered in it did! (Isaiah 14v12-21, Ezek 28v12-19) It is also most important to note that Lucifer was created perfect and lived in perfect surroundings, the same kind of beginnings that Adam and Eve had enjoyed, yet the desire to sin still entered into his mind, even as it did into Adam and Eve's. So, perfection of creation and surroundings is no guarantee against the entrance of sin. The temptation to sin will always arise in the mind of a freewill being, be they either angelic or human. The Mystery of Iniquity (or better, "lawlessness") was conceived and planned and put into full operation by Lucifer quite a long time before his fall that is recorded in Isaiah 14v12-15. So, with the entrance of sin into the creation, all of its free will creatures, both angelic and human were faced with a stark choice, either the way of lawlessness (i.e. living without law), which was the Devil's way of sin, selfishness and evil, or the way of Love (i.e. to love God and one's neighbour), which was God's way and all of God's efforts in every age (since the entrance of sin into the creation) has been directed to persuading his creatures to go His way of Love, for God has no pleasure in the death of the wicked but deeply desires that all should come to a knowledge of the Truth and be saved. God has had to prove that His way, that the way of Love was the only way that the inhabitants of his creation could enjoy real happiness and joy and that peace and happiness was absolutely impossible in a society that was filled with lawlessness. God is determined that the inhabitants of the eternal Kingdom will indeed enjoy His wonderful, peace, safety, happiness and joy for eternity and this will be brought about by taking away the bodies of those (both angels and humans) who have clearly demonstrated to **ALL** that their free will's are eternally set in the way of evil and that repentance is impossible for them, being irrevocably hardened in sin, by confining them eternally in the Lake of Fire, for eternal sin demands eternal confinement in Hell. Isaiah 32v17, 1Tim 2v4,6, 2Pet 3v9, Rev 14v9-11, 21v8,27. The Devil, who is the father of lies, as part of his plan of evil (the mystery of iniquity) conceived the two great lies that now darken the minds of both the saved and unsaved: 1) the lie that he has energised into the minds of Christians that the creation is only 6000 years old, even though creation shows forth the great age of both the earth and universe and 2) the lie of the theory of evolution (that there is no God and that the Universe and life just happened by chance) that he brought into full being through his dupe Charles Darwin. Gen 1v3-3v24, Job 38v4-30, Isaiah 14v12-21, 25v7, Ezek 28v12-19, John 8v44, Rom 1v20, Eph 2v2 ("worketh in" would be better translated as "energises.") It is generally one of these two great lies (of the Devil) that fill the minds of both the saved and unsaved in the world today and having brought such great darkness into their thinking, so that light cannot come into their minds on these two great Truths, it is only by these individuals seeing and experiencing mighty signs, wonders and miracles that it may be possible for light to penetrate this great darkness. A mighty outpouring of the Holy Spirit with times of refreshing from His Presence is what the world and church needs to deal with this great darkness that dominates their minds, so as to get the church ready for the last seven years of this age and in particular for the terrible dark evil days of the Great Tribulation. Dan 9v27, Joel 2v28-32, Acts 2v16-21, 3v19-21, Rom 15v18,19, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 7v14.

From the fall of Adam right up until the second coming of the Lord Jesus, God, in each successive age, has called each individual believer to rise up with Him into the heavenlies, so that they might conquer and subdue the Devil and the powers of darkness, so that they might inhabit their heavenly inheritance, so that they can minister God's Power and Love, not only in the heavenly places but also upon the earth, through their prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") by the gifts of the Holy Spirit, so as to operate in the full power of Melchizedek priests. At the beginning of the Age of Grace a most gracious and extraordinary event occurred when the Lord of Glory, God the Word, emptied Himself of His divine glory, power, and perfections and veiled Himself in (real) human flesh. During the thirty hidden years at Nazareth, His Heavenly Father prepared Him for both His earthly and Heavenly ministries through the things which He suffered, having been tempted in **ALL** points like as we are, yet without sin, which enabled Him to be not only the Lamb of God (slain from before the foundation of the earth), Who taketh away the sin off the world, but also that He might be our compassionate and faithful Great High Priest after the Order of Melchizedek. Having made atonement by being crucified upon the Cross and His soul being made an offering for sin by descending into Tartarus in the deepest part of the Abyss in Hades; He was quickened in spirit and went and preached to the spirits in prison (by declaring His great victory over the Devil, the powers of darkness, sin and death and offering them redemption through His wonderful sacrifice, which none accepted), then to the ignorant and wicked dead in the Abyss, then He crossed over the great divide in Hades to preached the Gospel to **ALL** the Old Testament saints, who **ALL** received it and then He lead **ALL** of those who had received the Truth out of Hades. Once out of Hades, He left this great procession for a time, received His earthly body back again by being raised from the dead, comforted the grief stricken Mary and the other women, filling them with great joy and gave them a message (that He was indeed risen from the dead) for His Apostles, which, when they told it too them promptly rejected it, He then returned to this great triumphal procession and lead this great multitude into Heaven to be greeted by a thunderous triumphal chorus from **ALL** the inhabitants of Heaven, for having made "reconciliation for iniquity" he made certain that the creation would not end in death and failure but in success, eternal life and the eternal kingdom and thus opened Heaven by abolishing death and bringing Life and Immortality to light. He then sat down upon the Throne at the right hand of His Father, waiting until all His enemies would be made His footstool and immediately started His Great High Priestly ministry after the Order of Melchizedek by interceding (praying) (Greek, "entugchano" (NT:1793), which means to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances." Vincent writes the following on "entugchano" (NT:1793) in Heb 7v25, "The idea is not "intercession," but "intervention.") of every second of every day for every one of His dearly beloved people, Whom He is not ashamed to call brothers and sisters, who should also become (by obedience to the call from their Lord) Melchizedek priests and operate as such not only now, but especially during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, so as to act as restraints upon the Devil, the powers of darkness, wicked and wickedness in the world. Gen 14v18-24, Psalm 24 (all), 110 (all), Isaiah 53v10,12, Dan 9v24, 11v32, Zech 12v8, Matt 24v21, 28v1-10, Mark 16v1-11, Luke 16v19-31, 18v1-8, John 1v1-3,14,29, 20v1-18, Acts 2v23-33, Rom 8v27,34-39, 10v7, 15v18-21, Eph 4v7-10, Phil 2v5-11, Col 1v20, 2v15, 2Thess 2v1-12, Titus 1v10, Heb 1v1-3,13, 2v1-4,10-18, 4v3,15, 5v5,6,10-6v2,19,20, 7v25,26, 11v1-40, 1Pet 2v1-10, 3v18-20, 4v6, 2Pet 2v4, Rev 7v14, 11v3-6, 12v1-17, 13v8, 21v1-22v5.

I pray that this study will reveal to the reader the beautiful character of our wonderful God of Love, Father, Son and Holy Spirit and the vast enormity of His future planes and purposes for His most precious redeemed people in the eternal ages of ages, when we will go from one level of amazement to another as His wonderful treasures and riches are revealed to us at the beginning of each new age. The One to whom we can surely look too, Who will surely bring our faith to perfection (for He has not only redeemed men unto God by His blood, but has also made them Kings and Priests unto God through His wonderful interventions with power, so that they might reign on the earth), so that we receive an abundant entrance into the Kingdom of God; is The One Who was tempted in all points like as we are, yet without sin, Who is also praying (Greek, "entugchano" (NT:1793), which means, "making interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") every second of every day for us, our dear Lord Jesus (our Great High Priest after the Order of Melchizedek), Himself man, Whom we can have full trust and confidence in and imitate fully. 1Cor 2v6-12, 11v1, Rom 8v26-34, Eph 2v1-10, Heb 2v10-18, 4v15, 5v5,6, 12v1,2, 2Pet 1v11, John 4v8,16, Rev 5v9,10 (RSV), 21v1-22v5.

Yahweh Shalom

Alister Hamilton, 22nd, April 2011.

Appendices.

Appendix 1: Demons.

Demons, when created and before their fall, were numbered among the lesser angelic powers; all the angels, the greater and lesser angelic powers were created at the same time, just after God created the (spiritual) Heavens. In the following Scriptures, Gen 6v1-8, 1Kings 22v1-40, 2Chron 18v1-34, Job chapters 1 and 2, there is no differentiation between "all the host of heaven" of 2Chron 18v18 and the "sons of God" of Job 1v6 and 2v1, they are all looked upon as angelic beings. In 2Chron 18v20 it states, "Then there came out a spirit" (which is referring to an evil angelic being, because he says in 2Chron 18v21, "I will go out, and be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets," and God would not use a holy angel for

this purpose), "spirit" in Hebrew is "haaruwach" which is from "ruwach" (OT:7307), which means wind, breath, then a spirit, the Septuagint uses the Greek word "pneuma" (NT:4151) to translate the Hebrew word "ruwach" (OT:7307), which means a current of air, breath or a breeze, then a spirit. This Greek word "pneuma," preceded by either "unclean" (Greek, "akathartos" (NT:169)) or "evil" (Greek, "poneros" (NT:4190)) is used on quite a number of occasions to refer to demons in the New Testament, in that a demon can also be referred to as either an "unclean spirit" or "evil spirit." Matt 10v1, 12v43, Mark 1v23,26,27, 3v11,30, 5v2,8,13, 6v7, 7v25, 9v25, Luke 4v33,36, 6v18, 8v29, 9v42, 11v24, Acts 5v16, 8v7, Rev 16v13, 18v2, Luke 7v21, 8v2, Acts 19v12,13,15,16. See also Luke 11v26 with Matt 12v45.

In the Gospels demons (as already stated) are also called evil spirits. Mark 5v12,15, 3v22,30, Luke 4v33. They are full of sadistic evil, and gain their pleasure from tempting mankind into sin, and by causing suffering, sickness, pain and death. Matt 12v45, Mark 5v2ff, 7v25, Luke 13v11,16. Evil spirits try, by their lies, to seduce and deceive people from the Truth, and are responsible for the "doctrines of demons" that Paul warned us of in 1Tim 4v1. Like their master, Satan, demons seek worship, often through idols. 1Cor 10v20, Rev 9v20, 13v4, Luke 4v6-8. Though demons fear God, they do not worship or obey Him. James 2v19. The New Testament has not one case of a Christian being possessed by demons, or being exorcised of demons, as can be seen from the following Scriptures which give all the New Testament references to demons.

Demons

There is some difference of opinion as to the root from which the Greek word for demon is derived. Some say that it comes from a root "daemi," "to know," and so makes the word "demons" mean "knowing ones." Others say that "daimon" is derived from "daiomai," which means "to divide or apportion," and speaks of the supernatural power of demons, and their counterfeit evil miraculous powers, by which they try to deceive mankind into believing their false claims to deity. The Scriptures inform us that the worship of idols is really the worship of demons, and that they are the power behind idols and idolatry, the idol itself being "nothing." 1Cor 10v19-21, 1Tim 4v1-3, Rev 9v20 etc.. Satan is the prince of demons, and dominates the powers of darkness. Matt 10v25, 12v24-26, Mark 3v22,23, Luke 11v15-19, Eph 2v1-3. Another name for Satan is "Beelzebub" or "Baal-Zebub," "the lord of flies; which links him with "Baal" worship.

The heathen falsely ascribed deity to demons; Homer used "daimon" to express deity, and as equivalent to "theos" and "thea." Idolatry is the worship of demons. Rev 9v20, 1Cor 10v20,21, 1Tim 4v1. Demons try to dominate, distress and cause fear in mankind. Matt 12v45, Mark 5v2, 7v25, Luke 13v11,16. In Acts 25v19, Festus speaks of "fear of demons," "deisidaimonia," it is from "deido," "to be afraid," and "daimon." In Acts 17v22 Paul uses "deisidaimon," for the Athenian's reverence of demons and their superstitious fears about their influence. The English, "devil," or "devils," are mistranslations of the Greek words for demon. Let us now consider the Greek words for demon.

Daimon

"Daimon," occurs 5 times in the A.V. text; in Matt 8v31, Mark 5v12, Luke 8v29, Rev 16v14, 18v2; but only once in the Critical Texts, in Matt 8v31, which reads, "hoi daimones," "demons," as does the A.V. and Majority Text. In Mark 5v12, the Majority Text reads, "all the demons;" whereas the Critical Texts omit any word for demons. None of these Scriptures speak of a Christian being possessed by demons.

1) In the story of the Gadarine demoniac, the Majority Text and the A.V. Text read, in Matt 8v31, "hoi de daimones," "and the demons." Luke tells us, in Luke 8v29, that these demons, "daimonos," had driven the man into the desert. In Mark 5v12, we read that "all the demons," "pantes hoi daimones," asked Christ to send them into the pigs.

2) In Rev 18v2, Babylon, (Jerusalem under Antichrist, Rev 11v8, 14v8,20, 18v24) "has become a dwelling place of demons," "daimonon."

3) In Rev 16v14, the "spirits of demons doing signs," assemble Antichrist's followers to the war of the great day of God Almighty. Scrivener and the A.V. read, "daimonon;" whereas Hodges and Farstad think "daimonion" has slightly more weight than "daimonon."

Daimonion

Of believers, only John Baptist and Jesus are said to have demons, and this is a false accusation by their enemies. A.T. Robertson says "daimonion" is a diminutive of "daimon." W. E. Vine says it is not a diminutive of "daimon," but the neuter of the adjective "daimonios," "pertaining to a demon." Others say it is the adjective of "daimon," used as a noun. The plural, "ta daimonia," is the usual word for demons in the New Testament. In the Majority Text and A.V., "daimonion," or "daimonia," occur in Matt 7v22, 9v33,34, 10v8, 11v18, 12v24,27,28, 17v18, Mark 1v34,39, 3v15,22, 6v13, 7v26,29,30, 9v38, 16v9,17, Luke 4v33,35,41, 7v33, 8v2,27,30,33,35,38, 9v1,42,49, 10v17, 11v14,15,18,19,20, 13v32, John 7v20, 8v48,49,52, 10v20,21, Acts 17v18, 1Cor 10v20,21, 1Tim 4v1, James 2v19, Rev 9v20.

Let us now consider these Scriptures.

- 1) In Matt 7v22, Jesus warns that on judgement day, some who claim to have cast out demons, "daimonia," in His name; will be told to depart, because of their continual evil lives. Jesus says, "I never knew you," "knew," is "egnon," the aorist of "ginosko," "to know," which shows that these false miracle workers had never experienced any personal saving relationship with Jesus.
- 2) In Matt 9v33,34, Jesus casts out the demon, "tou daimoniou," that makes a man dumb.
- 3) In Matt 10v8, Jesus gives His apostles authority to cast out demons, "daimonia." The parallel passages in Mark 3v15 and Luke 9v1 state the apostles' authority against demons; and Mark 6v13 says they exercised this authority and cast out demons.
- 4) In Matt 11v18, Luke 7v33, Jesus refutes the accusation that John Baptist had a demon, "daimonion echei," because he did not eat well or drink wine.
- 5) In Matt 12v24,27,28 and the parallel passages in Mark 3v22 and Luke 11v14,15,18,19,20, the Pharisees accuse Jesus of casting out demons by Beelzebub, Jesus warns them that this accusation is a great sin, and that He casts out demons with the finger of God.
- 6) In Matt 17v18, Jesus casts a demon, "daimonion," out of a boy; which the apostles could not cast out, because of their lack of prayer and fasting; Luke 9v42 calls it both a demon and an unclean spirit; and Mark 9v25 calls it an "unclean spirit," and Jesus calls it a "dumb and deaf spirit."
- 7) In Mark 1v34,39 and Luke 4v41, after the Sabbath sunset Jesus healed all the sick and cast out many demons at Peter's home. Matt 8v14-17.
- 8) In Mark 1v39, Jesus preaches and casts out demons in the synagogues of Galilee.
- 9) In Mark 7v26,29,30, Jesus casts out the demon from the Syrophenician's daughter.
- 10) In Mark 9v38 and Luke 9v49, the apostles forbid a person who was casting out demons from doing it, because he was not following them. Our Lord rebukes this bigoted sectarian spirit, and tells them not to stop the man casting out demons.
- 11) In Mark 16v9 and Luke 8v2, we read that Jesus cast out 7 demons from Mary Magdalene.
- 12) In Mark 16v17, our Lord states that those who believe in Him shall cast out demons.
- 13) In Luke 4v33,35, our Lord meets a man in the synagogue, "having a spirit of an unclean demon," "echon pneuma daimoniou akathartou," and casts it out. Mark calls this "an unclean spirit" in Mark 1v,23,26.
- 14) In Luke 8v27,30,33,35,38, Jesus casts out demons from the Gadarine demoniac; Matt 8v28,33 uses "daimonizomai," and Matt 8v31 "daimones;" in Mark 5v2,8,13, the man was "IN an unclean spirit," and v12 tells us the man had demons, "daimones."
- 15) In Luke 10v17, the 70 return with joy, rejoicing that demons are subject to them.
- 16) In Luke 13v32, Jesus tells the Pharisees to tell that fox Herod, that He will cast out devils and do cures, and the third day be perfected.
- 17) In John 7v20, the Jews said that Jesus had a demon, "daimonion echeis;" when He told them of their desire to kill Him.
- 18) In John 8v48,49,52, when Jesus told the Jews that they did not listen to Him because they were not of God; they told Jesus He was a Samaritan and had a demon. When Jesus said He did not have a demon, "ego daimonion ouk echo," and said that those who kept His sayings would never see death; the Jews said, "Now we know that thou hast a demon," "daimonion echeis." They committed the ultimate unforgivable sin, when they said Jesus was possessed, and His divine Truth was demonic lies.
- 19) In John 10v20,21, when Jesus told the Jews that He had authority to lay down His life and authority to take it again, many Jews said that He had a demon and was mad, "daimonion echei kai mainetai." Others said demon possessed people did not speak like this. It is a striking fact that all references to demon possession in John's Gospel, refer to the Jews false and wicked accusation that Jesus was possessed.
- 20) In Acts 17v18, Epicurean and Stoic philosophers call Paul a babblers, and say he proclaims foreign demons, "daimonion."

21) In 1Cor 10v20,21, we see that offerings to idols are offerings to demons, and warns against being partakers with demons.

22) In 1Tim 4v1, Paul warns that in the epochal last days some will apostatise from the faith, and give heed to seducing spirits, "pneumasin planois," and doctrines of demons, "didaskaliais daimonion; and follow false teachers, whose consciences are "seared with a red hot iron;" who forbid marriage, and command abstinence from foods, which God created to be received with thanksgiving. "Kekausteriasmenon," is the perfect passive participle of "kausteriazō," to sear with a red-hot iron; the "perfect" shows a completed and continuing state of mind.

23) In James 2v19, we read that demons believe in God and tremble and shudder.

24) In Rev 9v20, the last day judgements fail to stop people from worshipping demons.

Possessed With Demons: **Note Well!** None of these Scriptures refer to a Christian being possessed.

"Daimonizomai," "to be demonised, to be possessed with demons, to be under the control of a demon," occurs in Matt 4v24, 8v16,28,33, 9v32, 12v22, 15v22, Mark 1v32, 5v15,16,18, Luke 8v36 and John 10v21. Let us now consider these Scriptures.

1) In Matt 4v23,24, Jesus healed all who came to Him, in v23, "healing" is "therapeuon," the present active participle of "therapeuo," which means primarily, "to serve, minister to, and render service as a 'therapon,' a servant or attendant; then to care for and heal the sick." "Healed" in v24 is "etherapeusen," the third person singular aorist active indicative of "therapeuo." The use of "therapeuo," shows our Lord's lovely humble and gentle spirit of service, and the singular present, shows Christ's continuous personal attention to each of their needs, in the casting out of demons, as well as healing. The parallel passage in Mark 1v35-39, says our Lord "cast out" demons."

2) In Matt 8v16, Jesus "casts out" evil spirits out of many that were possessed. This is a parallel passage to Mark 1v32-34.

3) In Matt 8v28-34, two demonised men at Gadara are exorcised by Jesus; whereas, Mark 5v1-21 and Luke 8v26-40 tell us of the exorcism of the most well known demoniac. There are two very important lessons in this incident.

a) Demons are terrified of being sent into the Abyss, God's prison. Matt 8v29, Mark 5v7, Luke 8v28,31. They are afraid of Christians who know their authority in Christ. James tells us that Satan runs away in fear from Christians who humble themselves under God and arm themselves with His power. James 4v5-7.

b) Demons should always be sent into the Abyss and we should never agree to their requests, the demons frustrated our Lord's ministry by killing the pigs. Jesus undoubtedly knew that this would happen, and this was almost certainly allowed for our instruction, to warn us to confine exorcised evil spirits to the Abyss, and not to allow them liberty, or freedom of choice.

4) In Matt 9v32-34, our Lord "cast out" a demon from a dumb demoniac and the dumb man spoke; the multitudes marvelled; but the Pharisees resisted God, and said that the demon was cast out through "the prince of the demons."

5) In Matt 12v22-37, a blind and dumb demoniac is delivered and healed, the Pharisees again charge Jesus with casting out demons by Beelzebub. In a parallel passage with Mark 3v22-30, Jesus again gives the most solemn warnings about blasphemy against the Holy Spirit; which is rejection of Christ in the light of outstanding miracles; and saying that the miracles of God are the acts of an unclean spirit.

6) In Matt 15v22, Jesus casts out a demon from the Syrophenician's daughter. v21-28.

7) In John 10v20,21, Christ's enemies accused Him of being possessed, others objected saying that demoniacs do not heal blind people, or preach the wonderful Truths that Jesus did. Derangement and distress always accompany demon possession.

These Scriptures prove "daimonizomai" does not speak of external oppression, as demons are "cast out" of the possessed.

"Daimoniodes," "Devilish, demoniacal." James 3v14-16. James says that we can be filled with bitter envy and strife and have an attitude that is devilish without being possessed by demons. Only Satan is called "the Devil," "Ho Diabolos," "the Slanderer, the Accuser." See Matt 4v1,5,8,11, 13v39, 25v41, Luke 4v2,3,5,6,13, 8v12, John 8v44, 13v2, Acts 10v38, 13v10, Eph 4v27, 6v11, 1Tim 3v6,7, 2Tim 2v26, Heb 2v14, James 4v7, 1Pet 5v8, 1John 3v8,10, Jude v9, Rev 2v10, 12v9,12, 20v2,10. Jesus calls Judas a "diabolos," a slanderer, in John 6v70. Paul warns Christian women not to be slanderers, "diabolous," in 1Tim 3v11 and Titus 2v3 and that slander will abound in the last days. 2Tim 3v3.

Unclean Spirits

John's Gospel never describes demons as "unclean spirits," but the synoptic Gospels often describe them in this way. The adjective, "akathartos" (NT:169), meaning, "unclean," or "impure," is derived from the negative "a," and "kathairo," "to cleanse, to purify." In the Authorised Version, "akathartos," is used in relation to demons in Matt 10v1, 12v43, Mark 1v23,26,27, 3v11,30, 5v2,8,13, 6v7, 7v25, 9v25, Luke 4v33,36, 6v18, 8v29, 9v42, 11v24, Acts 5v16, 8v7, Rev 16v13 and 18v2. None of these Scriptures speak of a Christian having an unclean spirit.

- 1) In Matt 10v1, Jesus gives the apostles authority, "exousia," over unclean spirits.
- 2) Matt 12v43, The Jews rejection of Christ, meant possession by seven worse demons and national calamity. Luke 11v24-26.
- 3) In Mark 1v23,26,27, Jesus muzzles and casts an unclean spirit out of a man in the synagogue at Capernaum. "Be muzzled, is "phimotheti," as in 1Cor 9v9, 1Tim 5v18. The astonished people said Jesus made the demons line up in ranks and obey Him. Luke 4v33,36 calls it an unclean spirit.
- 4) In Mark 3v11, demons recognised Jesus, He rebuked them and commanded them not to make Him known.
- 5) In Mark 3v30, Jesus warns those who said His miracles were done by demons, that they were in danger of eternal damnation.
- 6) Mark 5v2,8,13 (with Luke 8v29) say the Gadarene was possessed by unclean spirits; in Luke 8v27-38 they are called demons.
- 7) In Mark 6v7, Jesus gives the twelve authority over unclean spirits.
- 8) In Mark 7v25, Jesus casts out an unclean spirit from the Syrophenician's daughter.
- 9) In Mark 9v25, the demon in the boy is called an unclean spirit, Jesus casts it out, when the apostles failed to do so. Luke calls the demon an unclean spirit in Luke 9v42. Matthew calls this unclean spirit a "demon," in Matt 17v18.
- 10) In Luke 6v18, the Lord Jesus heals those "vexed with unclean spirits."
- 11) In Acts 5v16, the apostles heal all the people who were sick and possessed with unclean spirits.
- 12) In Acts 8v7, Philip casts out unclean spirits at Samaria.
- 13) In Rev 16v13, Antichrist's gathers armies by demonic miracles; they are gathered to destruction at Armageddon.
- 14) In Rev 18v2, Babylon becomes a prison of every unclean spirit.

Evil Spirits

The word for "evil" in "evil spirits," is "poneros" (NT:4190), it occurs in reference to demons in Luke 7v21, 8v2, Acts 19v12,13,15,16. See also Luke 11v26 with Matt 12v45. "Poneros" is worse than "kakos," intrinsic evil; which describes a person who is evil and who may cause real trouble through it, but they do not actively corrupt others. "Poneros" speaks of an active evil, which is not content until it corrupts others to the same level of evil. Some manuscripts of Luke 11v4, call Satan, "Ho Poneros," the Evil One who actively corrupts everyone and everything he can.

Principalities And Powers

Principalities, "archos" (NT:746).

These are the "world rulers of this darkness," not the politicians, they are the hidden cause of the huge number of appalling atrocities that have occurred in Church and secular history. In Eph 6v12, Paul calls them, "spiritual wickedness in heavenly places." "Wickedness," is "poneria;" (NT:4189) they aim to injure mankind and corrupt them to evil. We need all God's armour to defeat the evil principalities that rule over countries, which are the most powerful of the evil angels. Eph 6v10-20. Christ defeated them all through His death on the cross. Eph 1v21, Col 2v10-15. The evil angelic prince over Persia hindered the angel Gabriel from bringing an answer to Daniel's prayers, for 3 weeks, until Michael, Israel's angel, helped

Gabriel to defeat him. Dan 10v1-21. NB v2,3. Satan and his evil principalities do manipulate and possess world leaders and other people on occasions; Satan himself possessed Judas, to fulfil his major evil purpose, to hurt and kill his Creator. Luke 22v3, John 8v44, 13v27.

Powers, "exousias" (NT:1849).

These evil angels are given authority and power by the principalities to reign over towns and cities; and again these seldom take part in demon possession. Like the principalities they are too busy dominating and corrupting mankind to take part in the kind of possession we see in the Gospels. It is the more insignificant demonic powers that take part in demon possession. Sometimes, however, a more powerful evil angel aids lesser demons to resist the ministries of the Church, as it seems took place in the case of the demon possessed boy in Matt 17v14-21; these powerful evil spirits can only be cast out by a prayerful person who is living a disciplined life. NB v21 is included in the vast Majority of Texts.

NB World leaders are dominated by Satan and the evil principalities and powers.

The domination of world leaders, who are the "vessels of wrath" that Satan uses as his instruments in the rule of the world, is quite different from the possession of the people that Jesus exorcised. The heads of the beast, and the other instruments of Satan, have the cunning and ruthlessness of the serpent. Their plans are made with the aid of Satan's evil intelligence, and like Herod and Judas; they, without cause, murder the holy and the innocent. Matt 2v16, John 15v20-25. Satan-inspired leaders like Pharaoh, Herod, Hitler, Stalin and Antichrist, build their plans on the dead bodies of millions. Antichrist will care nothing for the death of billions of people to obtain worldwide power and position. These ruthless, brutal and merciless leaders, show the ultimate in derangement, they kill the people of God, and fight the Living God to His face. This kind of domination and control is totally different from the possession seen in the Gospels, for it is to fulfil Satan's desire for world dominion and worship. These evil leaders carry on the normal affairs of life, but they plan with evil intelligence, and have the irrationality of the evil mind, and are void of true wisdom and love. These leaders are dominated by lies and deceit; and when they co-operate with Satan in their evil plans and acts, they manifest the derangement, and share the judgement, of the Satan-dominated life and mind.

The attack by powerful evil angelic principalities and powers.

The powers of darkness try to hinder the good angelic ministry that God sends to aid us. Sometimes we need to have direct revelations from God about these activities, and to persevere in prayer until God's answer comes, just as Daniel did in Dan 10v1-21. If we lack the gifts of the Holy Spirit, we can often fail to distinguish the real problems. A genuine manifestation of His gifts will save us from blaming peoples problems on demon possession.

The failure to tell Christians how to put on their armour against Satan.

We need the full Christian armour to defeat the evil principalities and powers in heavenly places. In Eph 6v12, the word for "wrestling" is "pale," from "pallo," "to throw, to swing," which speaks of a contest between two, until one throws the other down and holds him to the ground. The word "pros" is used five times in the sense of "against," it speaks of a face to face conflict and fight to the finish. Jesus said that Satan is a fully armed strong man, and must be bound before his goods can be spoiled. Matt 12v28,29, Luke 11v20,21. This shows the need for patience as well as faith, if we are to inherit the promises. Heb 6v12. The Holy Spirit's gifts are an absolutely essential part of the Christian armour; it is only as we are strong in the Lord and the fullness of His might that we can defeat Satan. To win the battles in the heavenly places, the Word of God must be energised by the power and revelation gifts of the Spirit.

An intercessory prayer ministry always involves conflict with the powers of darkness in the heavenly places. A ministry of intercession is not just the saying of a prayer, it involves the operation of the power of God. It is, therefore absolutely essential to have correct teaching on spiritual gifts if we are to win the battle in the heavenly places. There is, sadly, still a great deal of ignorance and false teaching about the use of the gifts of the Holy Spirit in prayer and spiritual warfare; this hinders our Lord Jesus from operating in His Church as He intended, and hinders the spiritual growth of Christians. 1Cor 12v1, Heb 5v10-14.

Those who say that demons can possess Christians, make a confession that denies the Word of God, and aid Satan's attack upon Christians. When Christians are taught such lies about spiritual warfare, they cannot fight a successful battle against the powers of darkness. The doctrine of Christian possession denies the Truth that our bodies are the temple of God, the "naos," the inner sanctuary of God, the holiest of all; God will not share His holy temple with a demon, He destroys those who defile that temple. 1Cor 3v16,17, 6v19. The Truth is that God's Presence in us, and the mighty spiritual weapons He has given us, fill demons with fear and dread, they are terrified of coming face to face with God in us. James 4v6,7.

Do Not Confuse The Works Of The Flesh With Possession.

Some books on demon possession name the evil spirits that possess a person as spirits of envy, of lust, of anger, of pride, etc., and in some books dozens of such names are given. There is no basis in Scripture for this. These preachers have confused the works of the flesh with demon possession, for what they call demon possession, Paul clearly calls works of the flesh in Gal 5v19-25. The Bible clearly distinguishes between the world, flesh and the Devil, and so should we. 1John 2v15-17, 1Pet 5v6-9. Let us now consider these works of the flesh.

Sexual Sins**Adultery. "Moicheia" (NT:3430).**

"Moicheia," occurs in Matt 15v19, Mark 7v21, John 8v3 (and Gal 5v19 in the Majority Text); and "moichos," which occurs in Luke 18v11, 1Cor 6v9, Heb 13v4 (and James 4v4 in the Majority Text); speaks of someone who has sexual intercourse with the husband or wife of another person. "Moichalis," an adulteress, occurs in Matt 12v39, 16v4, Mark 8v38, Rom 7v3, James 4v4 and 2Pet 2v14. Jesus showed wonderful mercy and grace to the woman of Samaria, John 4v1-29; and the woman taken in adultery, John 8v1-11; Christ came to save not to condemn. John 3v16,17.

Sexual Immorality. "Porneia" (NT:4202).

"Porneia" is used as a general word for all kinds of unlawful sexual uncleanness, and includes homosexuality as well as fornication and harlotry. A "porne" is a prostitute and "porneia" is a selfish gratification of lust. In sharp contrast to this is true Biblical love and marriage, where each partner manifests constant genuine practical care and tenderness towards the other partner. Relationships in Christian marriage should be like that between Christ and His Church. Eph 5v24-29, Col 3v18,19. Lust defiles the personality, but true love, and the correct use of sexual powers, produces an enlargement of the soul and spirit and true worship of God.

Paul's missionary tours brought him into contact with the total moral and spiritual corruption in the Greek and Roman world. Purity was the expected norm in the early days of Rome, but when Rome conquered Greece, the debased Greek moral standards corrupted Roman life, and immorality became the established custom and practice. In Greece, there was no shame over sexual immorality either before or after marriage. The Greek practice of husbands having cultured and sophisticated mistresses, and wives having extra marital male lovers, became the norm in Rome. All kinds of sexual depravity corrupted all of society from high to low. The wife of Emperor Claudius, the Empress Messalina, was notorious for her immorality; she frequently stole out of the royal palace at night to serve in a public brothel; no prostitute could match her capacity or endurance, she was always the last to leave.

In Rome sexual depravity manifested itself in the most appalling numbers of divorces and remarriages, and in men's treatment and attitude towards women. In Rome, women had no legal rights, a man could tell his wife to go and divorce her, just when he felt like it. Juvenal records that one woman had eight husbands in five years. Jerome tells of a woman who was the twenty first wife of her husband, and he was her twenty third husband. Plato said, "A bad man's fate would be reincarnation as a woman." God's Law did not allow this evil and contemptuous attitude to women, or the easy multiple divorce that was practised by the heathen, women had definite rights under the Law; and even the right of divorce for ill-treatment and partiality in a polygamous marriage. Exodus 21v10,11. See Deut 24v1-4. God is very angry with men who divorce their wives when they lose their beauty as they get older, and warns that He will not accept the offering of those who deal treacherously with "the wife of their youth" in this way. Mal 2v14-17. Peter emphasises the same point in 1Pet 3v7.

Dreadful unnatural vice in the form of incest and homosexuality was rampant in both Greek and Roman society. Caligula committed habitual incest with his sister Drusilla, and Nero even violated his own mother, Agrippina. It was common talk that Socrates and Plato were "content with the love of boys," and Plato's work on homosexual love, his "Symposium" 178 D, confirms this. The whole of Greek society was riddled and corrupted by homosexuality, and Rome became corrupted by this "national disease of Greece." Gibbon tells us that Claudius was the only one among the first fifteen Emperors, "whose taste in love was entirely correct." Nero went through a marriage service, and had a marriage procession in Rome, with a castrated youth named Sporus. Emperor Hadrian had his homosexual partner Antonius deified, after his death through drowning. The depravity in society was so appalling, that even pagan writers and historians were disgusted by it. When Satan offered Jesus the kingdoms of the world and the glory of them, there was only filth on offer under the tinsel and show. In Greece and Rome it was normal for prostitution to be connected with religion. In Corinth, a thousand so called "sacred prostitutes," came down each night from the Temple of Aphrodite (which was located on the steep rock of Acrocorinth, which rises to a height of eighteen hundred feet and oversees Corinth), to practice their seductions; and immorality with them was looked upon as a sacred duty. It is a remarkable fact that Paul had a mighty revival in this evil and corrupt city; our Lord told Paul in a vision, "I have many people in this city." Acts 18v8-11. The Greek city of Corinth was probably the most corrupt city in the world; but the preaching of the Gospel brought deliverance to those held captive with sexual and moral problems. Paul's cure for the Corinthians was not exorcism, but the preaching of Christ crucified, confirmed by mighty signs and wonders. 1Cor 2v1-4, 2Cor 12v12. It is essential to note that God's restraining hand on evil spirits, has meant that only a small minority of the Heathen have been demon possessed, even though they have been so

utterly depraved in their living.

Paul warned the Corinthians, that many of them had been sick, and others had even died through divine discipline because of their unclean living. 1Cor 11v29-32. Paul did not practice or suggest exorcism for moral problems, for either unbelievers or Christians. The man who committed incest with his father's wife, was disciplined by handing him over to Satan for the destruction of his body; however, a real repentance caused mercy to be shown and judgement to be withdrawn, and the man was welcomed back into Church fellowship. The cure was not exorcism, but discipline by exclusion from the Church fellowship, and possible judgement and execution by God, if there was no repentance. 1Cor 5v1-5, 2Cor 2v4-11. God loves and cares for His Church, and His chastenings are intended to spiritually benefit those who are under discipline, and purify and protect His Church from evil. 1Cor 11v32, 1Cor 5v5. Paul besought the Corinthians to flee from sexual impurity, because those who did such things would not inherit the kingdom of God. 1Cor 6v9-20, 2Cor 12v20,21. Paul told the Greek Thessalonians that they must totally abstain from sexual impurity, 1Thess 5v3-5; and the Colossians to mortify the sins of the flesh, and to put on the new man. Col 3v5-14. These were totally new ideas to the nations that Paul went to preach to, for pandering to the evil desires of the flesh was the norm. Paul's message to these people was not exorcism, but salvation in Jesus. The cleansing blood, and risen life of Christ, gave them the power to live in purity, and victory over the flesh. Rom 8v1-4.

Uncleanness. "Akatharsia" (NT:167).

"Akatharsia," speaks of moral impurity. It is used in the papyri to describe the dirt in a filthy house, and pus from an infected wound. In the Septuagint it is used of an unclean immoral woman in Hos 2v10; the ceremonial and moral uncleanness that stops a person approaching God in Lev 18v19, 22v3; and the moral uncleanness that destroys a person or nation in Micah 2v10 and Prov 6v16. The word speaks of a corrupt person whose whole personality is defiled by filthiness in word thought and deed, and who glories in that corruption and filthiness.

Shameless Abandoned Sensuality. "Aselgeia" (NT:766).

"Aselgeia," speaks of shameless wantonness and lasciviousness. It describes someone who is audacious, insolent and violent, totally undisciplined and debased, and completely controlled by sensual desire. They have a total absence of sympathy, and are completely indifferent to the feelings and opinions of others. They have no desire to repent of their sin, or hide sin; and they openly applaud immorality. This is the shameless total abandonment to evil seen in Rom 1v32.

NB1 There is a progression and climax of evil in these words. "Moicheia," is infidelity in marriage. "Porneia," includes all sexual uncleanness, and unnatural sexual perversion. "Akatharsia" shows the spreading defilement and deterioration of the whole personality. "Aselgeia" speaks of shameless total abandonment to evil. These words describe the worst of sexual immorality, and the total depravity of personality; however, Paul does not say that these people were possessed, he says that this was a result of allowing the flesh to dominate the life. We know that Satan can use and incite the desires of the flesh; however, in Gal 5v19-21, Paul does not give the slightest hint of demonic incitement to evil, he states that this total depravity of soul is the result of people's desire to indulge in the sins of the flesh. Some people don't need much help from the Wicked One to be really evil, they just wallow in the sins of the flesh. The sexual sins that we have considered dominated the cities of Tyre, Sidon and Sodom; our Lord said the cure for this evil was mighty signs and wonders that would convict and compel them to repentance and faith. Matt 11v20-24, Luke 10v13, Rom 15v18-21.

NB2 It a very serious heresy to teach Christians that their moral problems are the result of demon possession. Paul exhorts Christians to "mortify" the flesh life, and "put off the old man and his evil deeds and put on the new man and agape love," and even "to put on the Lord Jesus Christ." Eph 4v22-25, Col 3v5-17, Rom 13v14. The putting off of the old life is an act of repentance. Paul never said that the Corinthians needed to be exorcised, but he did say that they needed to repent; and he commended them for their repentance and godly sorrow, which brought deliverance from the evil in their lives. 2Cor 7v1,8-11. Paul achieved victory over the flesh and Devil by exercising self-discipline, and through a transfigured and renewed mind; 1Cor 9v24-27, Rom 12v2; and victory over the Devil by putting on God's armour. Rom 13v12, Eph 6v11. Through the "law of the Spirit and life in Christ," we can be set free from "the law of sin and death," and the "righteousness of the Law can be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit." Rom 8v1-4.

NB3 Some preachers major on exorcising various kinds of evil spirits from almost everybody they pray for. These evil spirits are given such names as spirits of anger, of lust, of homosexuality, etc. This cannot be correct, for we fail to find any evil spirit being named in this way in the New Testament; and we never find anyone being exorcised of moral problems. It is impossible to cast out the flesh, it has to be conquered through repentance, walking in the Spirit and self discipline. Gal 5v16,24. "A spirit of divination," can be exorcised, but you cannot exorcise sins of the flesh, like adultery, fornication and homosexuality. Acts 16v16. Paul ascribes these moral problems to "the works of the flesh," and "an evil heart of unbelief." Heb 3v12. People **corrupt themselves** and wilfully go under the dominion of the flesh, and into the corruptions of the world, the flesh, and the Devil. Exodus 32v6,7,25, Deut 9v12, Rom 1v18-32, 3v11-23, Eph 2v1-3.

Some people ascribe most physical sickness to demons; but only a very small amount of sickness is due to demon possession. Jesus did cast out a spirit that made a person dumb in Matt 9v32,33, Mark 9v17-25, Luke 11v14, and healed a person blind and dumb by casting out an evil spirit. Matt 12v22. The woman in Luke 13v11, with "a spirit of infirmity," was

not exorcised by Jesus, He laid His hands on her and healed her. Satan had bound her with sickness for eighteen years by attacking her body with evil spiritual power; she was not possessed by a demon, no more than Job was when he was attacked by Satan in his body. In Matt 4v23,24 we see that epilepsy, lunacy, and physical sickness usually arise from natural causes; and divine healing is almost always quite distinct and separate from demon possession and exorcism.

Sins Of False Religion.

Idolatry. "Eidolatreia" (NT:1495).

Idolatry is the worship of images and things before God. Paul deliberately placed idolatry immediately after sexual perversion, because it was the desire for immoral living that produced idolatry, people want gods that condone immorality. The idols of the heathen were often horrendously ugly, Diana (Artemis) of the Ephesians was an hideous black squat idol covered with many breasts. Israel made a golden calf so that they could run riot in the sins of the flesh. Paul tells us that sexual powers wrongly used end up in idolatry, and idolatry of sex, and the worship of the creature instead of the Creator. Rom 1v16-22. Paul states that demons are behind idolatry. 1Cor 10v20. Where idols, demons, and Satan are worshipped there is, as would be expected, more demon possession than where they are not worshipped; however, the amount is surprisingly small, considering the commitment to evil, and the seriousness of the sin. False religion in the form of idolatry and occultism, were among the major opponents of the early Church. Many Christians were executed by the Roman state, because they would not worship the Emperor as God. The world today has its idols, it worships its film stars and pop idols, sex and material things. Jesus told us not to be anxious, for life's material necessities will be added to us if we seek first the kingdom of Heaven. Matt 6v25-34, Luke 12v22-34.

Sorcery And Witchcraft. "Pharmakeia" (NT:5331)

"Pharmakon," was a drug and, "pharmakeia," the use of drugs. Plato uses "pharmakeia" in a good sense to speak of medical treatment, but states that drugs should only be used on serious diseases, or they could complicate matters. It was also used for the misuse of drugs in murder by poisoning. The noun "pharmakeia" only occurs in Gal 5v20, Rev 9v21 and 18v23. "Sorcerer," "pharmakus," occurs in Rev 21v8; and "pharmakos," in Rev 22v15. "Mageia," "sorceries," in Acts 8v11 and "mageuo," "sorcery," in Act 8v9. "Magos," is translated as "sorcerer" in Acts 13v6,8; and the plural "magi," as "wise men" in Matt 2v1,7,16.

The practice of sorcery and witchcraft in Paul's time were very similar to their modern equivalents; images of people were made and destroyed, and curses were put upon people by invoking the powers of darkness. In Paul's time, magic, divination, astrology and the use of the occult powers mentioned in Deut 18v10-22, were commonly practised. People were full of fear, and used amulets and charms in an effort to protect themselves from witchcraft, sorcery, magical spells and the evil eye. The value of the books on magic burned in the revival at Ephesus was about £50,000, which shows how rife magical practices were in Paul's time. Acts 19v19. The Egyptian sorcerers Jannes and Jambres, who opposed Moses, had great evil power, and turned sticks into snakes by Satan's power. Exodus 7v11,12, 8v18, 2Tim 3v8. These evil occult practices were one of the main obstacles to the spread of the Gospel in the early Church, and this is why miracles were so essential, they were needed to confirm the Truth of the Gospel. Philip and Paul compelled the Gentiles to believe in Jesus, by doing greater miracles than the servants of Satan. Acts 8v4-13, 13v6-12, 18v11-20, Rom 15v18-21.

NB1 Paul tells us that people go into idolatry, witchcraft and sorcery, because they want a belief that will allow them to indulge in the sins of the flesh, and that if people reject God and righteousness, God gives them up to a reprobate mind and the lusts that they desire. Rom 1v18-32, NB v24,26,28. However, God's amazing love and protecting mercy is still around His creation, and His mighty hand restrains the powers of darkness to a great extent. 2Thess 2v7. This is why only a small fraction of worldly people have been possessed by evil spirits, even when they have worshipped idols, and been addicted to occultism.

NB2 God's children are protected from curses put upon them by occultists, for God's guiding eye and power protects Christians and their homes from Satan's malice. When Balaam tried to curse Israel by sorcery, God would not allow it, and made Balaam pronounce blessing on Israel. Num 22v5,6, 23v8,23. Balaam was greedy for Balak's promise of wealth, he knew that God's anger would come against Israel if they went into evil; so Balaam told Balak to send in many of the beautiful women of Moab to corrupt Israel by immorality and idolatry. Rev 2v14, Numb 31v15,16. Satan still uses the same ploy today to break up people's marriages. Balaam's plan was successful, but it did not profit him, he died under divine judgement, fighting the people of God. Jude v11, Joshua 13v22, Rev 2v14. The Egyptian sorcerers, Jannes and Jambres, even turned sticks into snakes by the power of Satan. However, they found themselves out-miracled by Moses and on the receiving end of divine judgement, when they tried to resist and oppose God. 2Tim 3v8, Exodus 7v11,12,22, 8v7,18,19, 9v11. Witchcraft and sorcery are repeatedly condemned and forbidden in the Scriptures; God warns that eternal punishment awaits all occultists who do not repent of their evil practices. Exodus 22v18, Deut, 18v10-22, Isaiah 2v6, 47v9,12, 57v3, Jer 27v9, Dan.2v2,27, Mic 5v12, Mal 3v5, Rev.9v21, 21v8, 22v15.

Sins Related To Personal, Social And Church Life.

Enmities. "Echthrai" (NT:2189).

"Echthros," is an enemy, "echthrai," is enmity, personal animosities and quarrels. It only occurs three times in the New Testament, all of them in Paul's writings. Paul writes in Gal 2v20, that it is one of the works of the flesh. In Rom 8v7 he states, "The mind which is only interested in carnal things is hostile to God." Finally Paul tells us in Eph 2v14-16, that the Law of God was the reason for the enmity between Jew and Gentile, and the cross of Jesus the means by which God has reconciled Jew and Gentile, and put to death the enmity between them. Enmity is the driving force behind class and racial prejudice, and the Jews were badly polluted by it, they said that the Gentiles were on a level with the forbidden unclean animals, and were fuel for the flames of Hell, and hated by the Almighty. Peter, like all Jews, was poisoned by these evil ideas, and would not even eat with a Gentile. God taught him differently through a remarkable vision, in which He commanded Peter not to call God-fearing Gentiles unclean, because they were acceptable to Him. The lesson was completed by meeting the remarkable godly Gentile Cornelius, and the outpouring of the Holy Spirit upon him and his godly praying friends. Acts 10v1-48, 11v1-7.

Variance, Fightings, Strife. "Ereis" (NT:2054), plural, in the Majority Text.

"Eris," speaks of contention, variance, strife, and dissension. Enmity, "echthrai," is a state of mind; whereas, strife, "eris," is the product and manifestation of that hostile mind. "Eris," occurs in Rom 1v29, 13v13, 1Cor 1v11, 3v3, 2Cor 12v20, Gal 5v20, Phil 1v15, 1Tim 6v4, Titus 3v9. It is one of the evils of the heathen world, which should not be seen among Christians. Rom 1v29, 13v13. Paul uses "eris" three times when he laments the real and deep hatred and quarrellings between the sects and parties in the Church at Corinth. 1Cor 1v11, 3v3, 2Cor 12v20. In Phil 1v15, Paul warns us that enmity can even be the motivation for preaching the Gospel. What was true then, is true today, there can be bitter rivalry and strife between denominations. Christ is often preached and uplifted in evangelism to increase a denominations membership, rather than to meet people's needs and glorify God. The same message can be preached, but the motivation can be entirely different; we can use our organisations with the pure motive to serve and uplift Christ, or we can uplift Christ with the impure motive of increasing our denominational or personal kingdoms. The parable of the workers in the vineyard shows us that our motives for serving God will be "tried by fire" at the judgement seat of Christ. 1Cor 3v10-14, Matt 19v23 to 20v16. Jesus warns us that a hireling spirit, and wrong motives in serving God, will result in those who are first in the Church on earth, being last in God's kingdom. Matt 19v30, 20v16.

Rivalry, "eris," manifests itself in party spirit and doctrinal bigotry, and when denominations become more important than God and people. Rivalry is the enemy of true Christian love and unity, for it divides up the body of Christ. The cure is not denominational organic unity, but a true unity of the Spirit and love between all Christians. The powers of darkness are much more concerned with fostering party spirit in the Church than with demon possession, for they know that this will effectively destroy the power of the Church. The impending terrible end time trials will compel many Christians to forget their bigotry and party spirit, and make them fellowship in love and unity together.

Jealousies. "Zeloi" (NT:2205).

It is used in a good sense.

In the Septuagint in a good sense of God's zeal; "The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this;" Isaiah 9v7; and the jealous dedicated love of God. Ezek 16v37,38, 23v25. It describes Christ's passionate zeal for God and righteousness. Psalm 69v9, John 2v17. Paul uses it to describe the zeal of the Corinthians for him in 2Cor 7v7; and his godly jealousy for them, 2Cor 11v2; and the zeal in their repentance, 2Cor 7v11; and their zeal for the poor at Jerusalem. 2Cor 9v2. The verb "zeloo" is used for zeal for spiritual gifts in 1Cor 12v31 and 14v39.

It is used in a bad sense.

Paul uses "zelos" of his own and the Jews misguided "zeal for God," and the Law. Rom10v2, Phil 3v6. In Rom 13v12,13, Paul warned the Corinthians that jealousy is an evil work of the flesh; and a proof of the domination of the old nature, and told them that he feared that it could return. 1Cor 3v3, 2Cor 12v20. Jealousy cannot stand the light and glory of Christ's holy presence.

Passionate Explosions Of Anger. "Thumoi" (NT:2372).

"Thumos," occurs in Luke 4v28, Acts 19v28, Rom 2v8, 2Cor 12v20, Gal 5v20, Eph 4v31, Col 3v8, Heb 11v27, Rev 12v12, 14v8,10,19, 15v1,7, 16v1,19, 18v3, 19v15. It speaks of "stirring emotions," then, "a flair up of temper," or "passionate explosive outbursts of anger. "Thumos" anger is "great but transient anger," and is "like fire in straw;" which distinguishes it from "orge" (NT:3709) anger; which is a long-lasting anger and cherished in the memory. "Orge" is used to speak of God's weighed judicial verdict; His anger of justice. Rom 1v18, Eph,5v6, Col 3v6, Rev 6v16,17, 11v18. etc.

"Thumos, can be used of anger in a good sense, of righteous indignation.

"Thumos" is used to speak of God's explosive righteous anger in His judgmental acts in the Great Tribulation, and on the great day of His wrath at Christ's coming. However, Paul states that anger ("orge"), and wrath ("thumos"), are now resting upon all those who are contentious, and do not obey the Truth, but obey unrighteousness. Rom 2v8. Our Lord's anger in Matt 23 shows that it is very necessary to be angry at injustice and evil; anger can be an instrument of God's purposes; indeed, it is a sin not to be angry at times. God's "thumos" anger springs from His love; and gives us a revelation of His heart and mind, and His great concern and care for His creation.

"Thumos," can speak of outbursts of uncontrolled harmful rage.

"Thumos" anger, and "orge" anger, and bitterness, clamour, evil speaking and malice, are to be put away from us; and are to be replaced by tender-hearted forgiving love. Eph 4v31,32. The "thumos," explosive temper; and the "orge," brooding anger; are to be "put off," with the other evil works of the flesh. Col 3v8. In Matt 5v22, Jesus said that those who are angry with their brother without cause, are liable to judgement. "Without cause," is in the Majority Text. We can be angry, and yet not sin. Eph 4v26. In 2Cor 12v20, Paul states his fear that he would find outbursts of anger in the church at Corinth, along with other works of the flesh. Paul warns them that violent outbursts of "thumos" anger and bitter smouldering "orge" anger, injure the weak and innocent, and destroy homes and churches.

Strife, Selfish Ambition. "Eritheia" (NT:2052).

"Eritheia," means literally, "working for hire," and is from "erithos," "one who works for hire;" it speaks of one who can be bought, or bribed. Some say it speaks of a self-seeking person, and selfishness. Others think it speaks of intrigue, factions, and party rivalry, a person whose allegiance can be bought for advantage. "Eritheia" occurs in Rom 2v8, 1Cor 12v20, Gal 5v20, Phil 1v16, 2v3, James 3v14,16. Bible translators translate "eritheia," in many different ways, they translate it as strife, contention, selfish ambition, personal rivalry, selfishness, the partisan spirit; divided loyalties, for private ends, etc. Wordsworth says; "The word "eritheia" is from "erithos," "a labourer for hire" (from root "erdo"), **1**) "a mercenary;" and **2**) one who "hires himself" to a cabal for "party purposes;" and therefore signifies, **3**) "a venal partisan;" such as the "factions" of gladiators, and other ruffians hired by rival candidates at elections to intimidate the voters in the Roman forum. Hence "eritheia" signifies "venal partisanship." Aristotle uses the verb "eritheuesthai," to mean canvassing for office through hired partisans; it speaks of a man who seeks power for himself and his party for the very worst of motives, love of power and personal ambition, without any concern for the welfare of the people. Aristotle said that this practice could lead to revolutions.

Paul uses "eritheia" five times, Rom 2v8, 2Cor 12v20, Gal 5v20, Phil 1v16, 2v3; he uses it in the context of party spirit and divisions within the churches. In 2Cor 12v20, Paul feared that party spirit was a sin that defiled the Corinthian Church. In Phil 1v16,17, Paul criticises the competitive party spirit of some preachers. In Phil 2v3, Paul exhorts us not to do anything from ambition, or vainglory, but to follow Christ's wonderful example, of self-renunciation and humility. In Rom 2v8, Paul uses "eritheia," of worldly people, whose self-seeking unrighteous ambition, stops them from obeying the Truth. This scrambling after wealth, honour, position, and power, has disastrous effects in churches and homes, as well as the world. Rackham says the meaning is "election intrigue;" which would well describe the power politics and attitudes of the world, which have corrupted church organisations. Paul is speaking of a self-seeking ambitious person, who seeks after power and office, not with the thought of loving service, but for personal and party, profit and prestige. The self-seeking sinful ambition that ruined Satan, is the sin that has ruined so many Christians, churches and denominations, and destroyed many marriages. Isaiah 14v12-20.

Divisions. "Dichostasia" (NT:1370).

"Dichostasia," means "splits in two," or "a standing apart," from "dicha," "asunder," and "stasis," "apart." It speaks of a state of acute and settled division, which destroys the unity of Christ's body, or a marriage. In the New Testament, "dichostasia" only occurs in Paul's writings. In Rom 16v7, Paul warns the Roman Christians to mark and avoid those who cause divisions. In 1Cor 3v3, of the divisions in the Corinthian church due to carnality and spiritual infancy. In Gal 5v20, of the divisions due to domination by the flesh. The outward cause of division in the Church, may seem to be theological controversy, personal animosity, class or race hatred, or denominational affiliation; however, the real cause is domination by the carnal nature, and failure to mature spiritually.

Heresies. "Haireseis" (NT:139).

The English word "heresies," is a transliteration of the Greek word "haireseis;" the English word speaks of false doctrine which is opposed to orthodox Truth; whereas "haireseis," means "choosings, preferences," and is derived from "haireomai," or "haireo," "to choose, to select." (See Phil 1v22, 2Thess 2v13, Heb 2v25). It can be used either for a good or bad choice, or preference. In the New Testament, "hairesis" usually speaks of a form of opinion, and is used in the sense of a sect; of the sect of the Sadducees in Acts 5v7; of the sect of the Pharisees in Acts 15v5 and 26v5; of Christians, as the sect of the Nazarenes in Acts 24v5, which Paul says his opponents contemptuously called heresy, "haireisin," in Acts 24v14; in Acts 28v22 the Jews at Rome said to Paul, "concerning this sect, "hairesis," we know that it is everywhere spoken against." (see also Luke 2v34).

The plural "haireseis," is also used to speak of preferences or choosings, which cause division in the church. In 1Cor 11v19, "heresies," could be "sects," separating on doctrinal lines. Christians can have different preferences and different doctrinal views, and yet remain in perfect love and accord. However, intellectual differences can lead to the actual separation of Christians from one another, and this is what Paul is thinking of in Gal 5v20, and 1Cor 11v19. This difference of opinion, "hairesis," can lead to actual schism, "schisma," in the body of Christ; and even to "damnable heresies," that destroy the soul, and fragment the Church. 2Pet 2v1.

Envyings. "Phthonoi" (NT:5355).

Envy is more destructive and malignant than jealousy. "Zelos," casts hostile grudging looks; "phthonos," "envy," has

arrived at the stage of hostile acts. It is grief at another person's good fortune, it is not just the pain that they do not possess their good fortune or blessing, but the bitterness that the other person does. It is not so much the desire for what another person has; it is the desire to take away from them what they have, or prevent them from possessing it. "Zelos," "jealousy," can sometimes speak of noble ambition, and desire for something good, as well as a covetous evil desire; whereas. "phthonos," "envy," can only speak of a bitter ill will. It is not just the pain over an enemy's good fortune; it is the grief over a friend's good fortune. The jealousy, "zelos," of the Jews led to the active opposition of the more malignant "phthonos," "envy;" and caused them to murder Jesus. Though Judas became possessed by Satan, it is not recorded that any of the leaders of Israel became possessed, the evil jealousy and envy in their hearts drove them to oppose and murder Jesus. Mark 2v5-7,16,23,24. 3v1,2. 15v10, Matt 27v18.

"Phthonoi," occurs in the Majority Text, here in Gal 5v19-22. In Rom 1v29, it is one of the sins people are filled with when they choose not to retain God in their knowledge; and in Phil 1v15,16, of some who preached Christ to spite Paul, and to hinder his ministry. Ahab's covetous envy of Naboth's vineyard led to the murder of Naboth, it is a very dangerous sin. 1Kings 21v1-19, 2Kings 9v21-26, 1Tim 6v4, Titus 3v3, 1Pet 2v1 (Gal 5v26, "phoneo"). The envy that leads to keeping up with the Jones's can lead to tragic circumstances.

Murders. "Phonoi" (NT5408).

Envy and strife has led to large numbers of murders throughout the centuries. In Gal 5v21, the alliterative reading, "phthonoi phonoi," "envy, murder," occurs in a large majority of texts and versions; A, C, D, F, G, K, P, Psi, the Byzantine manuscripts, the Lectionaries, most Old Latin manuscripts, the Vulgate, the Syriac Peshitta and the Harklean, the Coptic Bohairic, the Gothic, the Armenian, the Ethiopic, Cyprian, etc.. Paul uses "phthonoi phonoi," envy, murder, together in Rom 1v29; and with good reason, for envy has often caused murder and war, as we see in the case of Cain and Abel, and world history. Gen 4v1-10, James 3v14-4v6.

Drunkenness. "Methe" NT3178).

Paul warns us that drunkards will not inherit God's kingdom, and we are not even to eat with them. Luke 21v34, 1Cor 5v10,11. Untold millions of marriages and homes have been destroyed, and are still suffering today from drunkenness. It causes physical and psychological injury to husbands, wives and children, financial deprivation, stress, anxiety and fear. Paul said he would not drink wine if it caused anyone to stumble, this is an important principle. Prov 20v1, Rom 14v21, 1Cor 8v9,13. Social drinking with unbelievers is very dangerous. 1Cor 6v9 to 7v1. It is true that Jesus drank wine with perfect self-control. Matt 11v19, Luke 7v34. However, Jesus warns us that drunkenness will stop us from being prepared for His coming, and will end in eternal punishment. Matt 24v48-51, Luke 21v34. Also see Prov 20v1, Isaiah 28v7, Ezek 23v33, 39v19.

Riotous Orgies And Feasting. "Komos" (NT:2970).

Paul uses "methe," "drunkenness," and "komos," "riotous feasting," in Rom 13v13, the only other place where they occur together in the New Testament. Paul was not thinking of a celebration, he was speaking of total debauchery, orgies and riotous blasphemous feasting; like Belshazzar's feast. Dan 5v1-31. Peter warns against this "revelling and banqueting," in 1Pet 4v3.

And Such Like. Paul states that the list could be extended, it is comprehensive but not exhaustive.

Conclusion.

The works of the flesh cannot be exorcised. Paul tells us that the cure for the works of the flesh, is repentance, the crucifixion of the flesh with its affections and lusts, living and walking in the Spirit, and the growth of the fruit of the Spirit. Gal 5v16-26. Those who replace this teaching of Paul with a false Christian exorcism; lead Christians into a quagmire of self-deception, unscriptural fantasies, demonic dominance, and serious psychological and spiritual damage.

Appendix 2: In Gen 3v16, God Did Not Curse Women.

Several mistranslations of Gen 3v15,16, twist and distort God's statement about women.

The First Mistranslation. "I will greatly multiply thy sorrow." Gen 3v16.

According to Katherine Bushnell, an outstanding Hebrew scholar, "I will greatly multiply thy sorrow," in Gen 3v16, is incorrectly translated, she writes in paragraph 117 of her book, "God's Word To Women:" "We hold that verse 16 should have been rendered, "Unto the woman He said, A snare hath increased thy sorrow," - the word "snare" being, literally rendered," "a lying-in-wait." Instead, it is rendered, "I will greatly multiply thy sorrow." The difference between the two in Hebrew lies wholly in the interlinear vowel-signs of comparatively recent invention. (Footnote) The difference is between HaRBeh, AaRBeh, "multiplying I will multiply," and HiRBah AoReB, "hath caused to multiply, (or made great), a lying in wait." - the verb, as usual preceding its nominative. The capital letters, alike in both phrases, alone constitute the original text. This participle form, ARB, occurs fourteen times in Joshua and Judges. It is translated "ambush," and "liers-in-wait," or "in ambush." It is possible that we should read here, "A lier-in-wait (the subtle serpent) hath increased thy sorrow."

Bushnell informs us why the Jews added the vowel letters to the Hebrew text, in paragraph 6 of her book, she writes: "Hebrew ceased to be spoken by the common people during the Babylonian captivity. It was practically a "dead language" as early as 250 BC. In the absence of expressed vowels, its pronunciation was likely to become lost. So the Scribes took four consonants, "a h v and j," and inserted them into the text to indicate the vowel sounds. While this device helped to some extent, in the end it led to confusion, often raising the question: "Is this letter a consonant, belonging to the original, or is it a vowel-letter, added by the Scribes?" Moreover the insertion of these vowel-letters did not prove sufficient; then, as late as 600-800 AD, a whole system of vowel-signs was added, most elaborately indicating the vowels of each word as tradition had preserved it. These vowel-signs were interlinear, and therefore did not confuse the text, as did the vowel-letters." End of quote.

The rendering in Gen 3v16, "Unto the woman He said, I have greatly increased thy sorrow," is against both the context and character of God, it should be translated, "Unto the woman He said, A snare hath increased thy sorrow," the word snare being literally, "a lying in wait," Satan, in the form of a serpent. Rev 12v9.

Where Did This Attack On Woman And The Character Of God Come From? From "The Days Of Mingling."

The time between the Old Testament and the New Testament has been called "the days of mingling." The Jews tried to adopt Hellenistic ideas from the Greek cities which surrounded Palestine. Greek kings were in control in Syria and Egypt so the Jews decided to obliterate the ideas of Jewish life and religion which were offensive to these Greeks. F. W. Farrar, and others say, "This semi-faithless epoch was described as the days of mingling." This was the time when the Jews mingled freely with the heathen population, F. W. Farrar says that they were "fascinated by the attractions of Greek life and literature, they wished to adopt Hellenistic ideas and to obliterate the most essential distinctions of Jewish life and religion."

Some think that it was during this time that women were given the badge of inferiority and servility. Before this the woman had a place in the tabernacle services as priestesses and Levites, and this is proved by the technical term used in Exodus 33v38 and 1Sam 2v22, which is translated as "serving women." It was during those days that the blame was shifted from Adam to Eve, she was linked with the heathen teaching of Pandora (Greek mythology), and Eve was blamed as the one who opened Pandora's box on the world. The city of Alexandria led the way in reconciling the Scriptures with pagan Greek teachings.

From The Talmudic Teaching.

This taught, "From a woman a beginning of sin and because of her all die." Ecclesiasticus 25v24. The wisdom of Ben Sira, and many others, said the same dreadful theology, and greatly disparaged women.

The Ten Curses of Eve in a Talmudic commentary on Genesis.

In Lesson 13 of her book, "God's Word To Woman," Katherine C Bushnell quotes the outrageous and disgusting 10 curses of Eve, from Dr. Hershon's, "Genesis With A Talmudic Commentary." (Bagster London). Bushnell states that some of the details were so obscene and filthy that she was unwilling to print them.

"Greatly multiply" refers to catamenia, etc.

"Thy sorrow" in rearing children.

"Thy conception."

"In sorrow shall thou bring forth children."

"Thy desire shall be unto thy husband." (This is followed by language too coarse and vulgar for reproduction leaving no doubt of the Rabbinical interpretation of desire: it was gross physical lust).

"He shall rule over thee." (More, and even fouler language)

She is wrapped up like a mourner, that is.

Dares not appear in public with her head uncovered.

Is restricted to one husband, while he may have many wives.

Is confined to the house as to a prison.

NB1 Those who teach that woman is under a curse like this, are really putting themselves under a curse for misinterpreting the Scriptures in this fraudulent, contemptible, and insulting way. Those who believe, teach and practice these outrageous and evil doctrines can expect severe censure on judgement day. James 3v1.

NB2 God certainly did not ordain women's servitude to man. We read in Gen 21v12, that God told Abraham to obey Sarah. See 1Cor 7v4, where Paul states, "The wife's body does not belong to her alone but also to her husband. In the same way, the husband's body does not belong to him alone but also to his wife. (NIV)

From Church Leaders Who Were Influenced By The Talmud.

Many Church leaders have been influenced by the Talmud, and by heathen ideas about women.

Tertullian twisted the Scriptures when he said that God visited Eve's sin and guilt on all women.

He stated, "Do you not know that you are an Eve? God's verdict on the sex still holds good, and the sex's guilt must still hold also. YOU ARE THE DEVIL'S GATEWAY, you are the avenue of the forbidden tree. You are the first deserter from the Law divine. It was you who persuaded him (Adam), whom the devil himself had not strength to assail. So lightly did you esteem God's image. For your deceit, for death, the very Son of God had to perish." End of quote.

What a male chauvinist twisting of the facts, and perversion of the truth! Tertullian fails to mention that Jesus was born of a woman and that the Scriptures ascribe the transgression to Adam. Adam is mentioned in Job 31v33 and Hosea 6v7 ("men" can be translated as Adam), and he is the one who gets the blame. Paul also states that Adam is to blame for the fall, in 1Cor 15v22, and seven times in Rom 5v12-19. In 1Tim 2v14, Paul says that the woman was completely deceived, "exapatheisa," the aorist passive indicative of, "exapatao," "to deceive completely," or "to deceive successfully," and states that Adam was the one "who stepped over the boundary," "parabasis," and transgressed.

In 2Cor 11v3, "beguiled," is "exepatesen," the aorist indicative active of "exapatao," the preposition "ex" in the compound is perfective, and so means to completely deceive. Here we see Satan as the active agent in deception, in 1Tim 2v14, we see Eve as the passive deceived one. God says in Ezek 18v1-32 (NB v2,20), that guilt cannot be transferred from parent to child.

Calvin said that God cast Eve into servitude to men.

This is the same as saying that God made men a curse to women, but God has decreed the very opposite, for the husband who does not treat his wife properly will have his prayers "cut off" by God. In 1Pet.3v7, "egkoptesthai" the present passive indicative of "egkopto," means, to cut in on, and so to hinder, to impede, to detain. Christian men are commanded, "Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it." Eph 5v25.

The Second Mistranslation About "Conception."

In the Hebrew of Gen 3v16, the word translated as "conception," is HRN, but this not the correct Hebrew for "conception," which is correctly spelt as HRJWN in Ruth 4v13 and Hosea 9v11, it occurs nowhere else in the Hebrew Old Testament. Even though some Hebrew scholars say HRN is "an abnormal formation which occurs nowhere else in the Old Testament," and the lexical authorities Brown, Briggs, and Driver say that it is a "contraction or erroneous," the Septuagint translators, who were outstanding Hebrew scholars, decided that the correct translation of HRN was, "thy sighing." The sentence means, then, "a snare hath increased thy sorrow and thy sighing." Many ancient authorities agree with the Septuagint.

The Third Mistranslation "Desire." "Teshuwqah" or "Teshuqa." (OT:8669).

"Teshuqa," only occurs 3 times in the Old Testament, in Gen 3v16, 4v7 and The Song of Solomon 7v10. In paragraphs 124 and 127, of her book "God's Word To Women," K. Bushnell states: "The correct rendering of Gen 3v16 is this: "Thou art turning away to thy husband, and he will rule over thee," - not as it has been rendered, "Thy desire shall be to thy husband." This assertion, as to the correct meaning of the phrase we shall now prove. As we have said before, a misinterpretation of Scripture can be proved by the misfit. The usual construction put upon the language of this verse fits accurately nowhere, the correct interpretation fits all around."

Bushnell continues, "Thus we see that the context does not prove that this "shall be" of the sentence translated, "thy desire shall be to thy husband" is imperative. We can assert positively that this sentence is a simple future or present, warning woman of the consequences of her action. So it is rendered in all the ancient versions; never as an imperative. As a prophecy it has been abundantly fulfilled in the manner which man rules over woman, especially in heathen lands." End of quote.

According to Bushnell, "teshuqa" is derived from the verb "shuwq," its simplest meaning is, "to run," the prefix "te," "gives "teshuqa" an abstract meaning and corresponds to our termination "ness," as in "goodness," or "kindness," etc.. The ending "a," is added to give the feminine form (of the verb), it can mean, "to run repeatedly," that is to run back and forth," and so have the derived sense of "turning," which most ancient versions give it. In Gen 3v16, Eve's turning. In Gen 4v7, Cain's turning, or sins turning, or crouching ready to pounce like an animal. In Song of Solomon 7v10, the woman states she is her beloved's, and his turning is towards her. Bushnell says, (para. 126): "No verbs are expressed. The conjunction is one for all and also the preposition. This is true of the Hebrew original also. In fact there is no variety in the three sentences, excepting in the proper nouns implied in the pronouns used. The sense of the three passages must be similar."

The Translation Of "Teshuqa" In The Most Ancient Versions.

The Septuagint. Translates "teshuqa," as "turning" in the three places where it occurs; as "apostrophe," "turning away," in Gen 3v16, and 4v7, and as "epistrophe," "turning to," in Song of Solomon 7v10. God said that the consequence of Eve turning away from God to her husband, was that her husband would rule her. Nearly every quotation of the Old Testament in the New Testament follows the Septuagint, which tradition says was a translation of the Hebrew Old Testament into Greek by 72 Jewish scholars in Alexandria that was started about 285 BC. The Septuagint was much favoured by the Jews until Christians used the translations of its prophecies to prove that Jesus was the Messiah.

The Syriac Peshitto. Which some say was translated from Greek manuscripts as early as 100 to 200 AD, renders Gen 3v16, as "thou wilt turn;" and Gen 4v7, as "will turn;" and the Song of Sol 7v10 as "turning."

The Samaritan Pentateuch. About 100 AD. Only has Gen 3v16 and 4v7 readings and translates both as "turning."

The Old Latin. About 200 AD, reads "turning" in all three places, in Gen 3v16, 4v7, and Song of Sol 7v10.

The Coptic Sahidic. About 300 AD, translates "teshuqa," as "turning," in Gen 3v16 and 4v7, but being fragmentary it lacks any reading of the Song of Sol 7v10.

The Coptic Bohairic. About 350 AD, is more reliable than the Coptic Sahidic, but being fragmentary it lacks Song of Sol 7v10, but translates Gen 3v16 and 4v7 as "turning."

The Ethiopic. About 500 AD, renders all three passages by words meaning "turning".

These ancient versions deny that Eve was under a curse from God, and was driven by lust after her husband.

The reason for the mistranslations of "teshuqa" in Jerome's Vulgate.

The Vulgate is a translation from the Greek Scriptures into Latin made by Jerome in about 382 AD. Jerome went to Palestine and studied Hebrew under Jewish rabbis and appears to have been to some extent poisoned by their Talmudic traditions. He translated Gen 3v16, "Thou shalt be under the power of a husband and he will rule over thee;" which is in no way a correct translation of the original. In Gen 4v7, Jerome translates "teshuqa," as "his appetite," which is another strange translation. In Song of Sol 7v10, Jerome gets to the truth when he translates "teshuqa," as "his turning."

Wycliffe's Version. Made in 1380 AD was translated from the Vulgate not the Hebrew, Wycliffe followed the Vulgate in all three places as did the Douay Version of 1609.

NB1 The disproportionate unscholarly influence of the Italian Dominican Monk Pagnino.

Bushnell records in paragraph 142: "After Wycliffe's version, and before any other English Bible appeared, an Italian Dominican monk, named Pagnino, translated the Hebrew Bible. The "Biographie Universelle," quotes the following criticism of his work, **in the language of Richard Simon: "Pagnino has too much neglected the ancient versions of Scripture to attain himself to the teaching of the rabbis."** What would we naturally expect, therefore? That he would render this word "lust," - and that is precisely what he does in the first (Gen 3v16) and third place (Song of Sol 7v10); in the second (Gen 4v7), he translates, "appetite."

Pagnino published his translation of the Hebrew Bible in 1528, and it influenced every older English version in their translation of Gen 3v16, for they render "teshuqa," as "lust," or "desire." What would we expect from the polluted Babylonian Talmud, and those who follow it, but the word "lust;" it is sad that this source and Pagnino had such a bad influence on the English translations of Gen 3v16. Cranmer's Bible of 1539 first translated "teshuqa" as "lust" in Gen 3v16, and the Geneva Bible and the Authorised Version and the Revised Version softened the idea to "desire."

Bushnell states in paragraph 145: "Following him (Pagnino), to the neglect of ancient versions, the English translators have not, in regard to Gen.316, set forth the proper sense of "teshuqa." Lewis in "Lang's Commentary," states, "The sense of this word (teshuqa) is not "libido," or sensual desire." It is a striking fact, that Tyndale, Coverdale, Matthew, (John Rogers) and Cranmer all translated "teshuqa " in Song of Sol 7v10 as "turning."

NB2 The influence of some Church Fathers.

Bushnell states that Church Fathers translate "teshuqa," as "turning." Clement of Rome who died 100 AD. Irenaeus who died 202 AD. Tertullian who was born 160 AD. Origen who was born 186 AD. Epiphanius who was born 310 AD in Palestine. Ambrose who was born 340 AD. Augustus who was born 354 AD. Theodoret who was born 386 AD. All translate "teshuqa" as "turning," in one, two or all three passages. The famous Philo, a Jew of Alexandria who died in 50 AD also translates "teshuqa," as "turning."

There can be little doubt that Gen 3v16 should be translated; "You are turning away to thy husband and he will rule over thee." This was not a curse, but a prophecy of the domination of women by men, something which has, tragically, been fulfilled not only among the Heathen, but also, all too often, in the Church as well.

"Rule," is "mashal," to rule, to reign, to have dominion, to manage, to rule over. It occurs 83 times in the Hebrew Old Testament, God uses "mashal," to tell Cain that he could rule over and master the sin that was taking hold of him. It is used of Eliezer managing all of Abraham's house, Gen 15v2, 24v2. It is used of Joseph's brothers not entertaining the thought of Joseph ruling over them, Gen 37v2, (44v8,26). It is used of the rule of an oppressive king, as in Isaiah 19v4. Of higher justice in Exodus 21v8, Deut 15v6. Of the powerful ruling rich, Prov 22v7. Of political leadership, 1Kings 4v4-21, (Rom.13v1-7). Of self rule and self control, Prov 16v32. And of God's overruling providence, Psalm 89v10.

The Fourth Mistranslation, "Bruise," "Shuph." "Shuph," occurs 3 times in the Old Testament, in Gen 3v15, it is translated as "bruise," in Job 9v17 as "breaking," and in Psalm 139v11. as "cover." "Shuph," is used to mean "bite" (serpent bite), crush, break, and cover." The serpent will bite the heel, and the seed of the woman will crush the serpent's head. Psalm 72v9, Rom 16v20, Gal 3v16, Eph 2v14-18, Col 2v15, Heb 2v14, 1John 3v8, 5v18, Rev 12v7-12, 19v11, 20v1-3,10. Some think that "shuph" means the seed will be in wait for the serpent's head, for some of the ancient versions translate "shuph" as "lying in wait," or a kindred idea, and the Revised Version gives this as an alternative meaning in the margin. This could mean that God, in Christ, would be "lying in wait" for the serpent to crush his head, just as the serpent had lay in wait for Eve and Adam to deceive and destroy them.

The Woman And Her Seed Has Always Been A Threat To Satan.

This prophecy has been like a sword over Satan's head from the day that it was uttered. Christ partly fulfilled this in His life and atoning death, and will fulfil it in great measure, when Satan is cast into the Abyss at our Lord's second coming. It will finally be completely fulfilled, when Satan is cast into the lake of fire, at the end of the Millennium. Heb 2v14, Rev 20v1-10.

The Lessons We Can Learn From The Temptation And Fall In Eden.

Trust God and obey His word. Adam and Eve failed to trust God, and believed Satan's lies. They failed to be open with God, and refused to admit sin and failure, and so missed forgiveness and restoration.

God can still bring our marriage partners to us; "He who finds a wife finds what is good, and receives favour from the hand of the Lord." Prov 18v22. "A prudent wife is from the Lord." Prov 19v1. God provided a helper suitable for Adam. Gen 2v18. God's unsearchable wisdom can direct us in marriage. Rom 11v33-36. However, don't leave it all to God, the decision is yours. In Psalm 32v8-11, God tells us to use sanctified common sense, and not to be like a horse or mule which have no understanding; He wants to throw away the reins, He does not want to dominate our choices. Be glad and rejoice in the guiding mercy of God, He will guide us with His eye, and warn us, where necessary, of possible dangers. God can make our marriages a new creation in Christ. 2Cor 5v17. As Paul states, "Love always protects, always trusts, always hopes, always endures, love never fails." 1Cor 13v7,8.

Another Mistranslation, "Rib."

We read in the Authorised Version of Gen 2v21 that God took a rib out of Adam and made Eve, however, "rib" is not the correct translation. The Hebrew word translated as "rib," in Gen 2v21 (OT:6763), occurs forty-two times in the Old Testament, in most cases it is translated as "side," or "sides," and elsewhere as "corners," or "chambers," but the only place where it is translated as "rib," is in Gen 2v21,22, which describes the creation of Eve from Adam. If the Lord had meant "rib," He would have used the word for "rib" that He uses in Dan 7v5, (OT:5967), which means "rib," and nothing else. In the Septuagint version, the word is "pleura," which is invariably translated as "side" in the New Testament, where it is used of the side of Jesus into which the spear was thrust, John 19v34 and 20v20,25,27, and of the angels smiting Peter on the side to wake him up, when he was asleep in prison, in Acts 2v7. "Pleura is also used to speak of a person's side in the Greek of Homer and Herodotus. Adam stated, "she is flesh of my flesh," not just, "she is bone of my bone." God made a female clone out of the flesh and bone of the side of Adam, a truly remarkable miracle.

In Gen 3v16, God Did Not Curse Woman.

This is a summary of the teaching of the Scriptures that we have just considered.

Some use a mistranslation of Gen 3v16, which twists and distorts God's attitude to women, to justify the domination of women by men. It was not God, but Satan "the liar in wait," who increased the sorrow and pain of women.

According to the outstanding Hebrew scholar Katherine Bushnell, the translation, "Unto the woman He said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow," in Gen 3v16, is incorrect. Bushnell states in her book, "God's Word To Women," that it should have

been translated, "Unto the woman He said, A snare (literally, "a liar-in wait) hath increased thy sorrow." The participle form, ARB, occurs fourteen times in Joshua and Judges, and is translated as "ambush," and "liars-in-wait," or "in ambush," so Gen 3v16, could be translated, "A liar-in-wait (Satan in the form of a serpent) hath increased thy sorrow."

The Hebrew HRN has also been incorrectly translated in Gen 3v16, as "conception."

However, HRN is not the correct Hebrew for "conception," which is correctly spelt as HRJWN in Ruth 4v13 and Hosea 9v11. HRN occurs nowhere else in the Hebrew Old Testament, however, the Septuagint translators, who were outstanding Hebrew scholars, decided that the correct translation of HRN was, "thy sighing," "tou stenagmos autes." "Stenagmos," means "groanings," or "sighings," and is so translated in Exodus 2v24, 6v5, Job 3v24, etc. Many ancient authorities agree with the Septuagint. The A.V. rendering in Gen 3v16, "Unto the woman He said, I have greatly increased thy sorrow and thy conception," is against both the context and character of God, it should be translated, "Unto the woman He said, A snare (literally "a liar-in-wait") hath increased thy sorrow and thy sighing." That ancient serpent, Satan, being "the liar-in wait." Rev 12v9.

The Hebrew "teshuqa," in Gen 3v16, has also been incorrectly translated, as "desire," or "lust."

In paragraphs 124, 127, of her book "God's Word To Women," Bushnell states: "The correct rendering of Gen 3v16 is; "Thou art turning away to thy husband, and he will rule over thee," not as it has been rendered, "Thy desire shall be to thy husband."

Bushnell later continues, "Thus we see that the context does not prove that this "shall be" of the sentence translated, "thy desire shall be to thy husband" is imperative. We can assert positively that this sentence is a simple future or present, warning woman of the consequences of her action. So it is rendered in all the ancient versions; never as an imperative. As a prophecy it has been abundantly fulfilled in the manner which man rules over woman, especially in heathen lands." End of quote.

Lewis in "Lang's Commentary," states, "The sense of this word "teshuqa" is not "libido," or sensual desire." "Teshuqa," occurs 3 times in the Old Testament, in Gen 3v16, 4v7 and The Song 7v10. Bushnell states that the Church Fathers translate "teshuqa," as "turning." Clement of Rome (died 100 AD). Irenaeus (died 202 AD). Tertullian (born 160 AD). Origen (born 186 AD). Epiphanius (born 310 AD in Palestine). Ambrose (born 340 AD). Augustus (born 354 AD). Theodoret (born 386 AD). All translate "teshuqa" as "turning," in one, two or all three passages. The famous Jew, Philo of Alexandria (died 50 AD) also translates "teshuqa," as "turning."

Tertullian twisted the Scriptures when he said that God visited Eve's sin and guilt on all women. He stated, "Do you not know that you are an Eve? God's verdict on the sex still holds good, and the sex's guilt must still hold also. You are the Devil's gateway, you are the avenue of the forbidden tree. You are the first deserter from the Law divine. It was you who persuaded him (Adam), whom the devil himself had not strength to assail. So lightly did you esteem God's image. For your deceit, for death, the very Son of God had to perish." End of quote.

What a perversion of the truth! Paul states seven times in Rom 5v12-19, and once in 1Cor 15v22, that Adam is to blame for the fall. In 1Tim 2v14, we see Satan as the active agent in deception, and Eve as the passive deceived one. Paul says that the woman was completely deceived, "exapatetheisa," the aorist passive indicative of, "exapatao," "to deceive completely," or "to deceive successfully," and states that Adam was the one "who stepped over the boundary," "parabasis," and transgressed. In 2Cor 11v3, "beguiled," is "exepatesen," the aorist indicative active of "exapatao," the preposition "ex" in the compound is perfective, and so means to completely deceive. God says in Ezek 18v1-32 (NB v2,20), that guilt cannot be transferred from parent to child.

Calvin said that God cast Eve into servitude to men. However, God has decreed the very opposite, for husbands who do not treat their wives properly will have their prayers "cut off" by God. In 1Pet 3v7 "egkoptesthai" the present passive indicative of "egkopto," means, to cut in on, and so to hinder, to impede. In Eph 5v25, Paul commands Christian men, "Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it." God certainly did not ordain that women should be in servitude to men.

It is a great pity that some theologians and translators have too been influenced by the perverted ideas of the Babylonian Talmud, and the Italian Dominican monk Pagnino, (who published his translation of the Hebrew Bible in 1528), and as a result have translated "teshuqa," as "lust," or "desire." The "Biographie Universelle," quotes the following criticism of Pagnino's work, in the language of Richard Simon: "Pagnino has too much neglected the ancient versions of Scripture to attain himself to the teaching of the rabbis." The Samaritan Pentateuch, the Old Latin, the Coptic Sahidic and Bohairic, and Ethiopic, translate "teshuqa," by words meaning "turning". The Syriac Peshitto, renders Gen 3v16, as "thou wilt turn;" and Gen 4v7 as "will turn;" and the Song of Sol 7v10 as "turning." The Septuagint, translates "teshuqa," as "turning" in the three places where it occurs; as "apostrophe," "turning away," in Gen 3v16 and 4v7, and as "epistrophe," "turning to," in Song 7v10. Nearly every quotation of the Old Testament in the New Testament follows the Septuagint, which tradition says

was a translation of the Hebrew Old Testament into Greek by 72 Jewish scholars in Alexandria started in about 285 BC. The Septuagint was much favoured by the Jews until Christians used the translations of its prophecies to prove that Jesus was the Messiah. These ancient versions deny that Eve was under a curse from God, and was driven by lust after her husband.

In Gen 3v16, "Your desire will be to your husband, and he will rule over you," should be translated; "You are turning away to your husband and he will rule ("rule," is "mashal," to rule, to reign, to have dominion) over you." This was not a curse, but a prophecy of the domination of women by men, something which has, tragically, been fulfilled not only among the Heathen, but also, sadly, in the Church as well.

The glorious Gospel of Jesus reinstates women to a position of equality with men, as Paul states in Gal 3v26-28, "For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus." (KJV)

Appendix 3: Paul's Doctrine Of Sin In The Flesh.

1) Children are the result of a combination of Divine and human activity: the parts which God alone can give, soul and spirit, are of course perfect, and only the part which comes from man is imperfect owing to inherited, but dead, sin in the flesh. "For without the law sin was dead", "Now then it is no more I that do it. but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me, that is in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing." Rom 7v8,17. What a joy then to realise that in every birth The Lord Himself has taken a hand and given spirit to the helpless babes of even the wickedest parents! Zech 12v1. The illegitimate offspring of sexual irregularity are accepted by God and even at times form rungs in the Royal Ladder that led to The Messiah. Judges 11v1, Matt 1v3,5,6.

2) All children are therefore, through their living spirit, alive to God and capable of knowing God, having the further grace of a personal Angel with instant access to the Almighty.

3) When, however, moral law enters a child's heart sin revives, for the strength of sin is the law: where there is no law there is no transgression and God is not angry until Law has been broken. Rom 4v15, 5v13, 1Cor 15v56. At this point both sin and soul are alive, and temptation begins; for the now-living "sin in the flesh" proceeds to tempt the soul, and as in Eve's case by deceit enters it, and kills it. For this the soul is justly to blame, as were Adam and Eve, for rejecting the Knowledge of God which would have kept it pure, and doing that for which it would have blamed another. "Therefore thou art inexcusable O man, whosoever thou art that judgest, for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things" Rom 2v1-3.

4) All passages alike stress the fact that the soul only dies when it commits sin, up to that point being alive to God, and by His grace able to resist temptation, and therefore justly under His wrath when it deliberately and unnecessarily chooses to do that for which it would blame another.

5) Temptation is a blessing allowed by God to strengthen our moral nature and give the soul victory over the flesh, the inevitable point of weakness. "The spirit truly is ready but the flesh is weak." Mark 14v38. Thus it was the Holy Spirit who led Christ into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil, and into the Garden of Gethsemane. Mark 1v12, 14v32-38, Heb 4v15, 5v7. Temptation, though the pathway to victory and honour, is not rashly to be approached in one's own strength, but only at the direct leading of the Holy Spirit and at God's time, as in the case of Abraham at Mt. Moriah. Gen 22v1-14. The temptation of a fool leads to disgrace and failure, for pride goeth before a fall: only the wise are blessed thereby and promoted to honour, as were Daniel and the three Children. Luke 22v28, Phil 2v7-11, Heb 2v18, James 1v4,12, 1Pet 4v12,13, Rev 2v10.

6) It is not always realised that temptation to be disobedient to the Law of Love is inevitable to the purest soul. Both Lucifer and his Angels, and Adam and Eve, were all created perfect and lived in perfect surroundings; yet all fell to a temptation which derived its strength from the natural desire to please themselves and have their own way, rather than obey someone else. It is inevitable that we should desire happiness but we are not to purchase it at another's expense. The safety of the soul lies, not in the absence of temptation but in immunity to its blandishments, won as the result of experience. Adam and Eve were meant to know good and evil not by eating of the tree and thus committing evil, but by resisting the lies of Satan and driving him from the garden by continuous resistance and refusal. The fight, though not the defeat, of Adam and Eve and Everyman (Rom 7v7-25), is inevitable, and is the only path to victory and final perfection of character, and security against any possibility of failure in the future.

7) Sin has no existence by itself, and was not created by God, who created all things. It is simply a possible attitude of soul, and its existence depends solely upon the will of the sinner. If all sinners repented all sin would disappear: it is only the eternal refusal of sinners to repent which will keep sin in eternal existence. God is in no way responsible for it: He has created free wills, but not evil wills, as some theologians have stated, thus making God the Author of evil. Sin was the child of the first Will which chose evil, although the possibility, but not the actuality of it, lay dormant in the freedom of the will:

but sin has no separate existence by itself: it is only a possible attitude of will, leading to sinful actions of body.

See also the first Foundation Truth, "Repentance From Dead Works," (in "Foundation Truths"), at: www.truthforthelastdays.com

Appendix 4: All The Covenant Names Of Yahweh Are Given To Us In The Name Of Jesus.

Yahweh Elohim. The Lord our God. Deut 6v4, etc. This manifests the Trinity, Gen 1v26. "And God said, Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth." Elohim is plural, it is used to describe the plural evil Gods of the Canaanites, and the demon powers behind them. Exodus 20v3. In order to try and deny this obvious reference to the Trinity, heretics, like "Jehovah's Witnesses," have tried to prove, but without any success, that "Elohim" is, "The plural of majesty."

Yahweh Adonai. Our Sovereign Lord. Gen 15v2,8. Often with "Lord of Hosts." Isaiah 34v15, 10v23,24, 22v5,15, 28v22.

Yahweh Rophi, or Yahweh Rapha. The Lord our Healer. Exodus 15v26, Isaiah 53v4, Matt 8v16,17.

Yahweh Jireh. The Lord will see and provide, or equally correctly, The Lord will appear, or be seen. Gen 22v8-14. It was a place in Jerusalem, later called Moriah. God provided His Lamb in Jerusalem, on the cross at Golgotha. Matt 27v33, Mark 15v22, Jn.19v17.

Yahweh Nissi. The Lord our Banner and Conqueror. Exodus 17v15. The battle cry of Moses, 1491 BC. The uplifted hands of Moses, and the invoked Divine Name, defeated the Amalekites; Moses built an altar to commemorate this victory.

Yahweh Tsabaoth. The Lord of Hosts. 1Sam 1v3. This battle cry of the saints occurs 281 times in the Old Testament. Psalm 46v7,11. Our Lord said He could CALL for "twelve legions of angels," in Matt 26v53, it was part of His normal practice in His ministry to the multitudes. It seems Elisha also invoked the name of Yahweh for angelic help, and got it, for he says in 2Kings 6v15-18, "They that be with us are more than they that be with them." David beat Goliath by calling on the name of Yahweh. 1Sam 16v45.

Yahweh Shalom. The Lord our peace. An altar erected by Gideon about 1256 BC. Judges 6v24. Gideon's act and expression of faith. It was also the Aaronic blessing on Israel; it brought physical, spiritual and material peace, blessing and well-being. Numb 6v22-27. "Peace I leave with you, My peace I give unto you." John 14v27. He gives us the peace of Heaven.

Yahweh Shammah. The Lord is present, or there. Ezek 48v35. The promised future kingdom presence.

Yahweh Mekaddishkim. The Lord our Sanctifier. Exodus 31v13, Lev 20v8, 21v8, 22v9,16,32, Ezek 20v12. etc.

Yahweh Ra-ah or Rohi. The Lord my Shepherd. Psalm 23v1.

Yahweh Tsidkenu. God our Righteousness. Jer 23v6, 33v6. Christ's atonement justifies us. Rom 5v1,2, 1John 4v9,10.

Yahweh Hoseenu. God our covenanted Creator. Psalm 95v6, Heb 3 and 4. Praise and worship give victory over foes.

Yahweh Elyon. The Lord Most High. Psalm 7v17. Supreme in love and power, he reigns in perfect justice over all.

Yahweh Eloheenu. The Lord OUR God. Psalm 99v5,8,9. OUR God of joyful fellowship and worship. Acts 1v14, 2v1.

Yahweh Eloheka. The Lord THY God. Exodus 20v2,5,7. The eternal God with whose name we encourage each other.

Yahweh Elohay. The Lord MY God. Zech 14v5. MY eternal God of personal encouragement.

The Covenant Names Of Yahweh That David Called On, And Proved. 2Sam 22v1-4, 14v22, Psalm 18.

Yahweh is my Rock, The God of my rock. Yahweh my Shield. Yahweh my Salvation. Yahweh my Saviour, Thou savest me from violence. Yahweh, Who gave David victory over the giants and his other enemies. 2Sam 21v15-22, 22v1-3. Yahweh my Refuge, Yahweh my High Tower. Yahweh my Fortress and my Deliverer.

David proved that the Divine Name could be invoked at all times and in all situations; this was the reason for his victories. We see from 2Sam 22v1-3, 14v22 and Psalm 18, that David took God at His Word and called upon, and proved, the Divine Name in defence and deliverance. Solomon realised the source of his father's victories, he had seen David prove the power of the invoked Covenant Names of God, and invoked and proved them personally for himself, he wrote in Prov 18v10, "The

name of Yahweh is a strong tower ("migdol," "a great tower"), the righteous runneth into it and are safe." The Covenant Names of God are weapons of power and love for the children of God to use, they are all available to us, and are included in the Name of Jesus. Invoke His Covenant Names at all times, into all your situations, and He will be there to be to you, what He is, and what His Names declare Him to be. 2Cor 1v20.

So we can see that God's character and His covenant names are vitally linked and interconnected.

(For a more in-depth study on the covenant names of Yahweh, please see Bill Turner's study titled, "The Name Of Jesus Gifts To Us All The Covenant Names Of Yahweh" which can be found at www.truthforthelastdays.com)

Appendix 5: Reuel (Jethro). The Priest Of Midian.

In Exodus 2v18 the priest is called "Reuel" (OT:7467), which means "friend of God" (El) and in Exodus 3v1, "Jethro" (OT:3503), which means "his excellence". This title, "the priest of Midian" (The Midianites derived their origin from Midian, the fourth son of Abraham by Keturah, so we can see how "Reuel" was a worshipper and Priest of the True God, "El." The great bulk of his tribe, certainly those who lived farther north and more closely in contact with the Hamites of Canaan (also see Num 25v17,18, 31v3,16), were already plunged in idolatry. Gen 25v1,2) shows that he was the leader (prince) and spiritual head of the branch of the Midianites located there, exercising a ministry like that of Melchizedek. Gen 14v18-24. The name "Re`uw'el" (OT:7467), (Reguel, friend of God) indicates that this priest served the old Semitic God El ('eel). This "Reguel," who gave his daughter "Zipporah" (OT:6855) (which means "little bird") to Moses (Zipporah also bore two children to Moses, Gershom (OT:1647), which means, "a refugee" i.e. "a stranger or sojourner there" for Moses said (in Exodus 2v22), "I have been a stranger in a foreign land" and Eliezer (OT:461), which means "God of help" for Moses said (in Exodus 18v4), "for the God of my father, was mine help, and delivered me from the sword of Pharaoh."), was unquestionably the same person as Jethro (Yithrow, (OT:3503)) the "chathan" (OT:2859) of Moses and priest of Midian (Exodus 3v1). Reuel's son "Hobab" (OT:2246), Hebrew "Chobab" (which means "cherished") is also called Moses' "chathan" in Judges 4v11 (cf. Num 10v29) ("chathan" is used for both "father-in-law" and "brother-in-law" i.e. a relative by marriage) and it is clear from an examination of the following Scriptures, Exodus 2v16-20, 18 (all), Num 10v29, Judges 4v11, that "Chobab" was Moses' brother-in-law (not his "father-in-law" or some very close relative by marriage (in Num 10v29, "Hobab" is also called the "ben" (OT:1129) (which means a son (as a builder of the family name), in the widest sense (of literal and figurative relationship), grandson, subject, nation etc..) of Reuel, "Reguel" was the proper name of his father-in-law, and "Jethro" was either a title, or the surname which showed the rank of Reguel in his tribe, like the Arabic Imam.

Reuel (friend of God) was a worshipper of the Living God, the God of his father Abraham, he was justified by faith and was a wise, godly man and indeed this was one of the main reasons that Moses, when he had fled from Pharaoh's wrath and come to Midian, quite happily remained there, working for Jethro and receiving Zipporah from him for his wife. Reuel had followed the example of his father Abraham's faith and also had a full knowledge of the walk, life of faith and ministry of Melchizedek as priest of the Most High God and the Melchizedek priesthood. The Scriptures state (Isaiah 41v8, James 2v23) that Abraham was "the friend of God," and it was the example of Abraham's walk, life and faith that Reuel had imitated and Abraham had in turn imitated the walk, life and faith of Melchizedek. So we can see that Reuel, also called "friend of God," was a person who "walked with God," someone who lived in constant communion with Him, who's mind was in Heaven before the Throne of God, while his feet were upon the earth. Reuel also had followed Melchizedek's example of prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)), having rose up with the Lord into the heavenly places, conquering and subduing the powers of darkness and then occupying his heavenly Canaan, manifesting God's power and love in the heavenly places and upon earth through the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Once Moses had got to Midian and met Reuel, he knew straight away what a godly, wise and spiritual person Reuel was and so dwelt with him and his family in Midian. Reuel, when he had met Moses, would also have perceived that he was a godly person with a great calling upon his life from God. It would also have been not long before Reuel found out either by being told by the Holy Spirit or by Moses that Moses would be God's appointed deliverer and ruler of Israel. Reuel spent the next forty years praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) Moses into the ministry that God had for him, so that he became a prophet like unto the Lord Jesus, whom the pre-incarnate Christ would talk to "face to face, as a man talks to his friend and not in visions, dreams, riddles or dark sayings." The prayings ((Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), which means "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") of Reuel for Moses were such that they produced a beautiful Christ like character in him which caused God to look upon Moses as His friend. Exodus 33v11, Num 12v7,8, Deut 18v15-19, Acts 3v22,23, 7v37.

There was also a deep affection, love and respect between Moses and Reuel, for we see the following written in Exodus 18v7, "And Moses went out to meet his father in law, and did obeisance, and kissed him; and they asked each other of their welfare; and they came into the tent." The Living Bible gives the following translation of Exodus 18v7 as, "Moses went out to meet his father-in-law **and greeted him warmly**; they asked about each other's health and then went into Moses' tent to talk further." After Moses had told him all that the Lord had done for Israel, Reuel rejoiced in the Lord. Some commentators say that Reuel only came to know the Lord after he heard about the mighty signs, wonders and miracles that the Lord had done against the Egyptians, however, it is quite clear that Reuel was a priest of the Most High God when Moses fled to Midian, for here at Mount Sinai we see him make a burnt offering and sacrifices to the Lord, with Moses, Aaron and the elders of Israel all present, with **ALL** his offerings and sacrifices being accepted by the Lord, which was so very different

from the time when Nadab and Abihu, Aaron's two sons, offered profane fire before the Lord and for this fire went out from the Lord and consumed them. Lev 10v1,2.

On the next day Moses went out to judge the people and spent all day, from morning until evening doing so, however, the wise and godly Reuel saw very quickly that if Moses continued doing this that both he and Israel would soon be worn out. Reuel suggested to Moses that he should delegate authority amongst the leaders of the tribes by getting the people to pick out persons they knew and trusted "to be rulers of thousands, and rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens." They would then judge the people at all times and only bring the hard cases to Moses for him to judge. So Moses brought this suggestion before the Lord, which indeed Reuel had suggested he do, and this seemed good in the eyes of the Lord, with the result that Reuel's suggestion was implemented. This incident is quite remarkable, for here we have Moses, a prophet like unto the Lord Jesus, whom the pre-incarnate Christ knew face to face, receiving wise advice from Reuel, his father-in-law, which was then subsequently sanctioned by the Lord and put into force. In the next forty years we don't read of any such incident happening again (when Moses is given wise counsel by a human), so it really goes to show, that at the time that Reuel made this suggestion, he was certainly inline with the mind of the Lord, when Moses wasn't. Exodus 18v1-27, Deut 1v9-18.

With Reuel's wise counsel implemented, he then took his leave off Moses and went back to his own land.

Appendix 6: Asaph, The Seer, The Levite, The Holy Ghost Singer, and Worship Leader.

Introduction.

We owe a great debt to the great hymn writers of the past, their hymns were written in revival and produced great moves of God, and a renewing of the spiritual life of the Church, and they still do today where they are sung in a prayerful and devotional way. The Word of God comments on the leading influence that the psalms of David and Asaph had in the spiritual life of Israel. The Scriptures reveal the exceptional prophet Asaph, one of the badly neglected, but truly great prophets of the Old Testament. Asaph dominated the worship of David's Tabernacle with the power of God and lifted the people of God into the heavenly places in Christ.

a) Asaph was a "seer," a "chozeh," (OT:623). "Asaph the seer" (2Chron 29v30), "seer" is in Hebrew "chozeh." "Choze" (OT:623), means "one who was taught and instructed by visions." David so valued Asaph as a prophet of God that he appointed Asaph to be the leader of praise in the tent where the tabernacle was housed.

b) David knew that instruction was not enough. David knew that victory depended upon communion with God, and a true spirit of worship. See 1Pet 1v1-3. Examples: David wanted the people to catch and imbibe the spirit of worship, and experience the power of God, as they came to worship at the feasts, in the city of David, i.e. at Jerusalem. It was not just singing, it was anointed Holy Ghost inspired singing, with divinely inspired psalms led by Asaph the prophet who had an outstanding prophetic ministry. David knew the secret that the safety and security of Israel depended upon the continual Holy Ghost worship meetings in the Tabernacle around the Ark of the Covenant.

David knew that the safety and security of Israel depended on the continual Holy Spirit inspired worship in the Tabernacle, that prophetically directed worship was the best means of keeping the spiritual glow among God's people. David desired the people of God to be changed and inspired by listening to the inspired Holy Spirit inspired singing of Asaph and his brethren and children. We read in Num 10v35,36, "And whenever the Ark set out, Moses would shout, 'Arise, O Lord, and let your enemies be scattered! Let them flee before you!' And when the Ark was set down, he would say, 'Return, O Lord, to the countless thousands of Israel!' New Living Translation. "When Moses sent out the ark, he said "Let God arise and let your enemies be scattered, and let those who hate you flee before you." Num 10v35.

NB Psalm 68v1-8, "Let God arise, let his enemies be scattered: let them also that hate him flee before him. As smoke is driven away, so drive them away: as wax melteth before the fire, so let the wicked perish at the presence of God. But let the righteous be glad; let them rejoice before God: yea, let them exceedingly rejoice. Sing unto God, sing praises to his name: extol him that rideth upon the heavens by his name JAH, and rejoice before him. A father of the fatherless, and a judge of the widows, is God in his holy habitation. God setteth the solitary in families: he bringeth out those which are bound with chains: but the rebellious dwell in a dry land. O God, when thou wentest forth before thy people, when thou didst march through the wilderness; Selah: The earth shook, the heavens also dropped at the presence of God: even Sinai itself was moved at the presence of God, the God of Israel."

NB 1Chron 25v1-3, "Moreover David and the captains of the army separated for the service some of the sons of Asaph, of Heman, and of Jeduthun, who should prophesy with harps, stringed instruments, and cymbals. And the number of the skilled men performing their service was: Of the sons of Asaph: Zaccur, Joseph, Nethaniah, and Ashareliah; the sons of Asaph were under the direction of Asaph, who prophesied according to the order of the king. Of Jeduthun, the sons of Jeduthun: Gedaliah, Zeri, Jeshaiiah, Shimei, Hashabiah, and Mattithiah, six, under the direction of their father Jeduthun, who prophesied with a harp to give thanks and to praise the Lord." NKJV

c) In 2Chron 29v30 we see that Hezekiah's revival was inaugurated and sustained with the psalms of David and Asaph. Hezekiah and all the men with him bowed their heads and worshipped (2Chron 29v29), and "commanded the Levites to sing praise unto the Lord with the words of David, and of Asaph the seer. And they sang praises with gladness, and they bowed their heads and worshipped."

We read in 2Chron 29v29,30, "And when they had finished offering, the king and all who were present with him bowed and worshipped. Moreover King Hezekiah and the leaders commanded the Levites to sing praise to the Lord with the words of David and of Asaph the seer. So they sang praises with gladness, and they bowed their heads and worshipped." NKJV. So we see that Hezekiah's revival was inaugurated and sustained with the inspired psalms of David and Asaph, the seer. Hezekiah and all that were with him bowed and worshipped, and the Levites were commanded to sing praise to the Lord with the words of David and Asaph the seer. The people sang praises with gladness and bowed their heads and worshipped.

d) It appears that Asaph could have been a descendant of Caleb. 1Chron 2v42,43 states, "The descendants of Caleb the brother of Jerahmeel were Mesha, his firstborn, who was the father of Ziph, and the sons of Mareshah the father of Hebron. The sons of Hebron were Korah, Tappuah, Rekem, and Shema." NKJV 1Chron 2v50,51,55, **"These were the descendants of Caleb:** The sons of Hur, the firstborn of Ephrathah, were Shobal the father of Kirjath Jearim, 51 Salma the father of Bethlehem, and Hareph the father of Beth Gader." "And the families of the scribes who dwelt at Jabez were the Tirathites, the Shimeathites, and the Suchathites. These were the **Kenites** who came from Hammath, the father of the house of Rechab." NKJV We read in 1Chron 2v43 that Asaph was a son of Hebron, so he could have been a descendant of Caleb?

David knew prophetically directed worship was the best means of keeping the spiritual glow among God's people. Joshua was full of the Spirit and wisdom for Moses had laid his hands upon him. David desired the people of God to be changed by listening to the Holy Ghost singing of Asaph and his brethren and children.

Num 10v35 states, "Whenever the ark set out, that Moses said: "Rise up, O Lord! Let Your enemies be scattered, And let those who hate You flee before You."

Psalms 68v1 states, "Let God arise, let his enemies be scattered: let them also that hate him flee before him."

Compare 1Sam 4v1 to 6v21.

It can be seen from 1Chron 25v1-3 the singing was prophetic, "David and the captains of the host separated to the service of the sons of Asaph, and of Heman, and of Jeduthun, who should prophesy with harps, with psalteries, and with cymbals...The sons of Asaph under the hands of Asaph prophesied... the sons of Jeduthun under the hands of their father Jeduthun, who prophesied with a harp, to give thanks and to praise the Lord."

The sons of Korah later joined in the temple worship with the sons of Asaph. In 1Chron 2v42,43 we read of a son of Hebron, Korah a son of Caleb the Kenezite (Num 32v12), of Edomite extraction. Cf. 1Chron 9v19. Godly parentage.

I Asaph and the bringing of the Ark to Jerusalem.

a) After the Ark of the Covenant was returned by the Philistines after seven months in Philistia (1Sam 6v1), it was opened by the men of Bethshemesh and 50,070 men died in the plague. They asked the men at Kirjathjearim to take the Ark and it was in the house of Abinadab for 20 years (1Sam 7v1,2) during the Philistines oppression and they were doubtless in servitude for "Israel lamented after the Lord" and Samuel prophesied, "If ye do return unto the Lord with all your hearts, then put away the strange gods and Ashteroth from among you, and prepare your hearts unto the Lord, and serve him only: and he will deliver you out of the hand of the Philistines. Then the children of Israel did put away Baalim and Ashteroth, and served the Lord only." 1Sam 7v3,4. Samuel prayed for the people and they won a wonderful victory over the Philistines at Mizpeh, after the sacrifice of a suckling lamb and a miraculous thunder. 1Sam 7v9,10,12. 20 years plus 40 years of Saul's reign

b) It was David who brought back the Ark of God to place it in the centre of the life of Israel, in the City of David (captured from the Jebusites, 2Sam 5v6,7), at the place where Abraham offered Isaac on Mount Moriah. It was neglected during Saul's reign. David had to restore a spirit of worship in order to bring victory to Israel.

The Philistines put the Ark on a new cart. 1Chron 13v7. It should have been carried by Levites. Exodus 37v5, Num 4v15, 7v9, 10v21 etc. Then Uzza died for touching the Ark. David leaves it in the house of Obbedom for three months. David was frightened. 2Sam 6v9 cf. 2Sam 6v1-10.

c) The blessing of God upon Obbedom's house causes David to decide to bring the Ark back to Jerusalem. 2Sam 6v11,12.
1) The Levites had to carry it. 1Chron.15v2.

- 2) After six steps there were oxen and fatlings sacrificed. 2Sam 6v13.
- 3) David got the God-appointed Levite ministries to operate.

The three leaders of the Levites.

Heman the Kohathite.
Asaph the Gershomite.
Ethan the Merarite.

d) The playing of music. Cymbals of brass led procession, solemnity and joy. 1Chron 15v16-19.
The psalteries and harps and cymbals.

e) The maiden's choir (?) The Alamothe. 1Chron 15v20.

The man's choir. 1Chron 15v21,22, excelled on harps, skilful in song.

The clashing of cymbals, the joyful lifting up off the voice. The Ark came back Asaph, Heman and Ethan behind David, with joy! 1Chron 15v25.

Michael despises David for his dancing before the Lord. 1Chron 15v29, 2Sam 6v16,20-23 and remains childless for it.

II Asaph and the tabernacle worship 1Chron 16v4-43.

1) Asaph was the chief worshipper of God. 1Chron 16v4,5.

a. To thank and praise the Lord God of Israel. 1Chron 16v4.

b. An anointed clash of cymbals fanning out an anointing upon the sound made by the cymbals. Asaph made a sound with cymbals.

c. Asaph and his brethren and sons sing David's psalm at the dedication of the new Tabernacle. Psalm 105, 1Chron 16v7-36.

d. Asaph had a continual ministry before the Ark, continually as every day's work required. 1Chron 16v37.

Burnt offerings morning and evening. 1Chron 16v40.

To give thanks to the Lord because His mercy endureth forever. 1Chron 16v41, Psalm 136.

2) The spiritual nature of the ministry. 1Chron 25v1-9.

To prophesy with harps, psalteries and with cymbals. 1Chron 21v1. Prophesied. 1Chron 25v2.

Prophesied with a harp to give thanks and praise to the Lord. 1Chron 25v3.

3) Asaph before the Ark.

a. God confirms covenant to David, visible sign of God's covenant.

b. Ark of the covenant in Heaven. Rev 11v19

III Asaph and his Psalms.

1) Asaph wrote twelve (12) Psalms, 50,73,74,75,76,77,78,79,80,81,82,83.

Wonderful Psalms of praise and prediction.

Wonderful Psalms of prayer and intercession.

Wonderful Psalms of instruction and Scriptural exposition.

Some have objected to Psalm 74 and 79 being written by Asaph, because they refer to the Babylonian captivity, but it only proves the great prophetic ministry of Asaph. **He saw the captivity centuries BEFORE it happened!**

2) Asaph under test. Psalm 73. The chief leader in worship was under severe test.

a. Asaph doubted that his heart was not clean?

b. The wicked were not in trouble, they were corrupt and mocked God.

c. Asaph was tested by severe physical illness; he was chastened every morning plagued all day. Psalm 73v14, Job chapters 1 and 2, 1Peter 1v4-7.

d. "Then I understood their end." Psalm 73v17.

With Satan the wicked would end in Hell at death.

With God Asaph would end in Heaven after death.

The wicked were blinded by Satan as to their end. 1John 2v17, "The world passeth away."

(Please see the study, "A Divine Hymnology For The Last Days" by Bill Turner at www.truthforthe lastdays.com)

Appendix 7: God Made Jesus The Perfect Saviour And High Priest Through Suffering.

We read in The Amplified Version of Heb 5v8-10: **"Although He was a Son, He learned [active, special] obedience through what He suffered. And, [His completed experience] making Him perfectly [equipped], He became the Author and Source of eternal salvation to all those who give heed and obey Him, [Isa.45v17.] Being designated and recognized and saluted by God as High Priest after the order (with the rank) of Melchizedek. [Ps.10v4.]"**

NB Jesus experienced dreadful and relentless conflict and suffering all through His life. The Church has largely confined the sufferings of Jesus to the last few days and hours of His life, and has completely failed to see the tremendous conflicts, bruising and pain He had to endure in His daily life at Nazareth and His ministry. This is revealed by **Isaiah 53v11, "He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied:** by His knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities." However, the Hebrew of this verse means much more than the truth that is conveyed by King James Version.

In Isaiah 53v11, "He shall see of the travail of His soul," "travail," is "amal" (OT:5999)." "Travail," "amal," speaks of a lifetime of arduous and exhausting labour and toil, which produces sorrow, grief, trouble and trials. It is a dark word that speaks of a life of burdensome and protracted toil, trials and trouble, not a short period of trials, problems and difficulties. Jesus was badly bruised and suffered throughout all His life. A lifelong trial of unrelenting bruising, suffering and hurt. "Amal" (OT:5999) does not refer to travail in childbirth, but to the drudgery, hard labour and tough grind of a worker, which produces exhaustion, sorrow, grief, and trouble. The salvation of all those who believed in Jesus was going to make all Christ's soul destroying drudgery, trials, grief, and hardship worthwhile.

Today's English Version gives a correct and very enlightening translation of Isaiah 53v11, it reads, **"After a life of suffering, He will again have joy; He will know that he did not suffer in vain. My devoted servant, with whom I am pleased, will bear the punishment of many and for His sake I will forgive them."**

In Isaiah 53v11, "shall be satisfied," "saba" (OT:7646), means, to be saturated; to be abundantly satisfied and full. The foundations of the eternal kingdom of God are built on the impregnable and indestructible foundation of the amazing sacrificial suffering love of Jesus. In Heb 12v2, "the joy that was set before Him," was the joy of redeeming us and making us partakers of the kingdom of Heaven. Paul too, like his Lord, said that his joy and crown was getting His converts into Heaven. Paul states in 2Cor 1v14, "As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as you also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus. Paul repeats this again in 1Thess 2v19,20, "For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even you in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? For you are our glory and joy." And yet again in Phil 4v1., "Therefore, my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved."

A comment of Barnes on the Hebrew word in Isaiah 53v5, for "bruised," "daka" (OT:1792) reveals the life-long suffering of Jesus. "The word used here, "daka" (OT:1792), means properly to be broken to pieces, to be bruised, to be crushed. Job 6v9, Psalm 72v4. **Applied to mind, it means to break down or crush by calamities and trials; and by the use of the word here, no doubt, the most severe inward and outward sufferings are designated.** The Septuagint renders it, "memalakista," 'He was rendered languid,' or feeble. The same idea occurs in the Syriac translation. **The meaning is, that he was under such a weight of sorrows on account of our sins, that he was, as it were, crushed to the earth."** End of quote.

NB: Satan thought that by catastrophic and appalling physical pain and mental pressure he would subdue and defeat Jesus, but he failed completely to accomplish this. Jesus completely defeated him, even though He endured the very worst physical and mental sufferings. Jesus suffered even worse devastating physical and mental suffering than His beloved servant Job endured. As Jesus watched the suffering of Job He knew that even worse mental and physical suffering, and an even more relentless spiritual attack and opposition was coming His way when He became man.

We read in the Hebrew of Psalm 69v20, that the reproaches and vicious opposition that Jesus experienced were so severe that they made Him physically ill. "Insults and reproach have broken my heart; I am full of heaviness and I am distressingly sick. I looked for pity, but there was none, and for comforters, but I found none." (Amplified Bible). "Distressingly sick," speaks of the most trying and extreme sickness, and since Jesus was tempted in all points like as we are, this must have included mental pain as well as physical pain. Young's Literal Translation correctly translates "mak'ob," (OT:4341), (grief, pain, anguish) as "pain" in Isaiah 53v3 and 4, in v3, "A man of pains (mak'ob," (OT:4341)), and acquainted with sickness," and in v4 And our pains (mak'ob," (OT:4341)) he hath carried them." End of quote.

The scholars Keil and Delitzsch, say of Isaiah 53v4: "Freely but faithfully does the Gospel of Matthew translate this text, 'Himself took our infirmities and carried our sicknesses.' The help, which Jesus rendered to people with all kinds of bodily sickness, is taken in Matthew to be the fulfilment of what in Isaiah is prophesied of the Servant of Jehovah. The Hebrew verbs of the text, when used of sin, signify to assume a heavy burden and bear away the guilt of sin, as one's own; that is, to bear sin mediatorially in order to atone for it. But here, where not our sins, but our sicknesses and pains are the

object, the mediatorial sense remains the same. It is not meant that the Servant of Jehovah merely entered into the fellowship of our sufferings, but that He took upon Himself the sufferings that we had to bear, and deserved to bear; and, therefore, He not only bore them away, **but also in His own person endured them in order to discharge us from them.** Now when one takes sufferings upon himself which another had to bear, and does this, not merely in fellowship with him, but in his stead, we call it Substitution." End of quote. **NB A great Hebrew scholar declares that it was Substitution.**

1) Jesus experienced great reproach, rejection, and heartbreaking opposition in His home. This reproach, pain, and suffering was not confined to events around the cross. We read in Psalm 69v7-11, that there was reproach, ostracism and opposition from Christ's four brothers and His sisters. Scorn and derision was heaped upon Jesus by the townspeople and elders of Nazareth, and by the drunkards who made up vile songs about Him. The Devil certainly camped out at Nazareth during Christ's 30 years there, and stirred His family and the people against Jesus. This reproach broke the loving heart of Jesus, and made Him "distressingly sick."

a) Jesus experienced some good early years with His family, then things went badly wrong. We read in Luke 2v39,40, "So when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their own city, Nazareth. And the Child grew and became strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon Him." NKJV. Then after Christ's visit to the temple at twelve we read in Luke 2v49-52, "And He said to them, "Why did you seek Me? Did you not know that I must be about My Father's business?" But they did not understand the statement, which He spoke to them. Then He went down with them and came to Nazareth, and was subject to them, **but His mother kept all these things in her heart.** And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men." NKJV.

The favour, which is mentioned in Luke 2v52, that Jesus had with people at Nazareth seems to have quickly disappeared, from His family, and most of the people in Nazareth when Jesus got older, for like people elsewhere, they loved darkness more than light, because their deeds were evil. Luke 2v52, John 3v19. Without preaching, Jesus, the light of the world exposed their sinful darkness by His godly, unselfish actions, and life of love and prayer. We know that Jesus did not preach to the people of Nazareth until His first sermon there, which resulted in them trying to kill Him. Jesus and God the Father knew how they would reject anything that Jesus had to say, so God hid the marvellous knowledge of Jesus away, until Jesus started His ministry. Isaiah 49v1,2. The life of Jesus at Nazareth was not preaching time, but education time for Jesus, in preparation for His earthly ministry, His atoning death, and His Heavenly ministry as our Great High Priest after the order of Melchizedek. Isaiah 50v3-7. The fact that Mary "kept all these things in her heart," shows that she was unable to openly repeat the wonderful things that God had done for her, and it confirms the rejection that both she and Jesus suffered at Nazareth. Satan certainly succeeded in turning the town against Jesus in a major way.

Mary did not talk about these events, and the fact that she kept these things hidden away in her heart speaks volumes. The reasons become obvious when we read and study the above Scriptures. Mary definitely felt that she must keep quiet because of the bad attitude to Jesus, of the people of Nazareth, and the rest of her children, and so she hid the events of former years, and the deep feelings of her heart from everybody. See Psalm 69v7-12,20, Luke v16-30. **NB in Luke 4v28., ALL the people in the synagogue tried to kill Jesus.**

Jesus was treated like a stranger and alien by His brothers and sisters. Psalm 69v7-11, Matt 13v55,56, Mark 3v21, 6v3. The Amplified Bible translates Psalm 69v8-11, "I have become a stranger to my brethren, and an alien to my mother's children. [John.7v3-5.] For zeal for Your house has eaten me up, and the reproaches and insults of those who reproach and insult You have fallen upon me. [John 2:17; Rom 15:3.] When I wept and humbled myself with fasting, I was jeered at and humiliated; When I made sackcloth my clothing, I became a byword (an object of scorn) to them."

These verses declare that Christ's holiness and dedicated prayer life, caused His four brothers, and at least three sisters, to be severely hostile to Jesus and they despised and rejected Him, and treated Him like a stranger and an alien, and verbally reproached and criticised Him. We are definitely told that this was because of Christ's dedicated life of fasting and prayer, and holy living, because zeal for God's house and children had eaten Him up and devoured Him. See John 2v13-17. We must remember that no temple had been built when David wrote this psalm, and scholars tell us that the word "house" here can, and does, mean the household and family of God. Christ's constraining love for mankind impelled Jesus forward.

We read in John 7v5, that His brethren did not believe in Him. However, after His resurrection Jesus appeared to James and restored and revolutionised Him, and he became a pillar and leader in the Church, and Jude also came to faith in Jesus. James and Jude wrote short but powerful epistles, and in them they humbly acknowledged the Divine Lordship of Jesus. James 1v1, Jude v1.

We read in Mark 3v21, that Christ's family said that Jesus was insane when He upset the religious hierarchy. In Mark 3v22 the religious hierarchy said that Jesus was possessed by, and did His works by Beelzebub, and as we have seen, when His family heard of this, they came to take Him home. The religious leaders of Israel may well have instructed them to do this. The four big and strong brothers of Jesus came to lay hold of Jesus (Greek, "kratesai" (NT:2902)), and by force to take Him home.

In Mark 3v21, the words "hoi para autou," mean literally, "those from the side of Him," this is undoubtedly referring to the family of Jesus, as it does in the Septuagint, as Mark 3v31 expressly mentions, "His mother and brothers." "Hoi para autou," is translated as "His family," by NRSV; RSV; NIV; NLT; TEV. Weust translates Mark 3v21., "And having heard, **those nearest to Him among His kinsfolk** went out for the purpose of taking Him by force, for they were saying, He is out of His mind." Wycliffe has; "kinsmen." Tyndale has; "they that belonged unto him." Vincent states, "Literally, "they who were from beside him," i.e., by origin or birth. His mother and brethren." The Amplified Version translates Mark 3v21, "And when those who belonged to Him (His kinsmen) heard it, they went out to take Him by force, for they kept saying, He is out of His mind (beside Himself, deranged)!" End of quote.

When Jesus upset the religious leaders of Israel, His brothers came to forcibly take Him home (Greek, "kratesai" (NT:2902)), 'to seize by force' (Weymouth). They said "elegon," the imperfect tense of "lego" (NT:3004), "they kept saying," that Jesus was out of His mind; "exeste," the aorist active indicative of "existemi" (NT:1839), to be beside ones self, to be insane. What a sad day for Jesus when His family thought and said that He was insane. This very same charge was brought against Paul. See Acts 26v24, 2Cor 5v13.

These were Christ's family, they were certainly not His disciples, for His disciples were in the house with him. There can be no doubt that Mary did not believe that Jesus was insane, though she certainly seems to have doubted His judgement when He deliberately challenged the theology of the religious leaders of Israel, and greatly offended them. This caused Mary to fear for Christ's safety, and the safety of rest of the family, for Mary and Christ's brothers realised the danger that they would be in if Israel's religious leaders thought that they shared the same views as Jesus, and so Mary backed His brothers' plan of action to forcibly take Jesus home. By linking, "My mother and my brothers" together in Mark 3v34,35, the Scriptures imply that Mary felt that this action was correct. It also shows that she was influenced the rejection of Jesus by the people of Nazareth, and by the unbelief of the rest of the family, and was afraid of the result of the enmity of Israel's religious leaders. Mark 6v1-6.

Mary was certainly influenced by the gross moral and spiritual conditions of Nazareth. Matt 4v14-16. Nathanael lived at Cana, some four to eight miles from Nazareth, he knew well its bad character, and said, "Can any good thing come out of Nazareth?" John 21v2, 1v46. The Devil had cast a particularly strong covering and veil over Nazareth and its townsfolk, however the Lord Jesus did not let darkness fill His mind and spirit, but by filling His mind with Truth and His great prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783) which mean "the making of interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances") life, He "bound the strongman" by defeating the Devil and the powers of darkness and entered into God's rest. Isaiah 25v7, Matt 12v25-30, Heb 4v3. The false traditions that were taught in the Synagogue would also have had a bad effect on Mary's faith. Matt 15v1-14, Luke 11v52-54, Rom 3v23, 7v7-24, Eph 2v1-3, James 1v13-15. Living with Jesus rescued Mary from the worst of the unbelief of the rest of the family, and she manifested great faith at the marriage in Cana, when she believed that Jesus could do a miracle and provide wine for the feast. Anyway, she could never forget that she had been visited by the angel Gabriel, and knew that the birth of Jesus was totally miraculous, and she had seen Jesus do many miracles at home to provide for their material needs, that is why in John 2v5, she had the faith to say to the servants at the marriage feast, "Do whatever he tells you."

In spite of all the problems at Nazareth, Jesus "increased in wisdom and stature." "Increased," is "proekopten" the imperfect active of "prokopto" (NT:4298), which means properly, "to cut and beat a passage forward, to drive forward, to advance and make progress," then to grow, to increase. ("Prokopto," is used of Paul's pre-Christian progress in Judaism in Gal 1v14; of false teachers going forward in evil and to judgement in 2Tim 2v18 and 3v9, of time being far spent in Rom 13v12. Paul warns us in 2Tim 3v13, that evil men will stubbornly beat their way forward, and advance into greater and greater evil and deception.)

In the case of Jesus, the imperfect of "prokopto," informs us that Jesus kept actively and vigorously cutting his way forward, as through a forest or jungle. Jesus was the true spiritual pioneer of faith, He resolutely hacked and cut His way through the dark spiritual jungle of Nazareth, and went forward with God His Father. The wonderful child, youth, and man, Christ Jesus, was totally determined to save and bless us. No praise that we can give, is sufficient to thank Him for the terrible trials He faced and overcame for our sakes. He is beyond doubt, truly worthy of all the praise that we can give Him. Jesus also kept growing in stature (Greek, "helikia" (NT:2244)), as in Luke 12v25, and in wisdom, which is far more than knowledge. Jesus matured physically, intellectually, and spiritually, and victoriously overcame the gross spiritual darkness of Nazareth. Blessed be His Name!

2) Jesus was bitterly criticised, and sceptically rejected by most of the people in Nazareth.

a) Moral, honest and sincere people at Nazareth admired Jesus in His early years, then things went badly wrong. We read in Luke 2v40,52, that Jesus found favour during His early years at Nazareth with the decent people there, they could not help but appreciate this beautiful, helpful, gracious and loving, and God-blessed boy, then things went badly wrong.

We read in Psalm 69v20, that the vicious verbal attacks on Jesus made Him physically ill. The Devil, the Slanderer, stirred up almost everybody to viciously criticise Jesus. In Psalm 69v7,9,10,12,19,20 (with Heb 12v3) we are told five times that at Nazareth, as well as elsewhere, Jesus was taunted, reproached and spoken against, and the Hebrew of Psalm 69v20, states that this reproach broke His heart and made Him physically ill. The heartbreaking horror of this rejection and loneliness is graphically revealed in these Scriptures. See what He endured for you! Blessed be His holy Name!

The Amplified Bible correctly translates Psalm 69v19-21, "You know my reproach and my shame and my dishonour; my adversaries are all before You [fully known to You]. Insults and reproach have broken my heart; I am full of heaviness and I am distressingly sick ("nuwsh" (OT: 5136), a primitive root, which means, to be sick, and (figuratively) distressed). I looked for pity, but there was none, and for comforters, but I found none. They gave me also gall [poisonous and bitter] for my food, and in my thirst they gave me vinegar (a soured wine) to drink. [Matt.27v34,48.]"

The Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary, states that, "And I am full of heaviness," literally means, "I am sick."

Barnes makes the following valuable comments on Psalm 69v20, "[Reproach hath broken my heart] The reproaches, the calumnies, the aspersions, the slanders of others, have crushed me. I am not able to bear up under them; I fail under the burden. Distress may become so great that life may sink under it, for many die of what is called "a broken heart." Undeserved reproaches will be as likely to produce this result on a sensitive heart as any form of suffering; and there are thousands who are crushed to the earth by such reproaches. [And I am full of heaviness] Or, I am sick; I am weak; I am ill at ease. My strength is gone. [And I looked for some to take pity] Margin, "to lament with me." The meaning of the Hebrew word is to pity; to commiserate; to show compassion. (Job 2v11, 42v11, Isaiah 51v19, Jer 16v5.). [But there was none] There was no one whose heart seemed to be touched with compassion in the case; none who sympathized with me. [And for comforters] For those who would show sympathy for me; who would evince a friendly feeling in my distress. [But I found none] He felt that he was utterly forsaken by mankind. There is no feeling of desolation like that." End of quote.

Spiritual conflict through evil men and angels, caused Jesus considerable stress, mental conflict and physical illness. Jesus looked in vain for people who would comfort Him, and take pity on Him, but He could not find anyone who was able to understand His problems and heartache, or who were prepared to help Him, this was why God sent Moses and Elijah to talk with Him and help Him in the Mount of Transfiguration. Life at Nazareth was extremely hard for our dear Lord Jesus. Even His good mother Mary was unable to give the kind of sympathy or spiritual help that Jesus needed. We read in Psalm 69v20,21, that Jesus did look for people who could help, strengthen, and comfort Him, but no one was in the spiritual condition to do so. The heart of Jesus was broken by the reproach He suffered at Nazareth and during His ministry. Everyone, including the apostolic band, failed to comprehend, or help Jesus, with the great inner pain and suffering that this reproach and rejection caused Him. Mary of Bethany may have partially perceived it, but no one else did.

b) We read in Ps 69v10-12, that Christ's holy prayerful life stirred up great opposition against Him. The Amplified Bible translates Psalm 69v7-12, "Because for Your sake I have borne taunt and reproach; confusion and shame have covered my face. I have become a stranger to my brethren, and an alien to my mother's children. [John 7v3-5.] For zeal for Your house has eaten me up, and the reproaches and insults of those who reproach and insult You have fallen upon me. [John 2:17; Rom 15:3.] When I wept and humbled myself with fasting, I was jeered at and humiliated; When I made sackcloth my clothing, I became a byword (an object of scorn) to them. They who sit in [the city's] gate talk about me, and I am the song of the drunkards."

Jesus was ostracised and rejected by His brothers and sisters, and the judges and businessmen, who sat in the gate of Nazareth, censured and criticised Jesus, and drunkards made up and sang vile and disgusting songs about Jesus. The gates were the usual place of public gatherings, of law proceedings, and of transacting business. The towns magistrates and judges sat in the gate to administer justice, this means that those who had rank and power, joined in the reproach against Jesus. Jesus was also reproached by others who were gathered around the gates, the people of business, and the townspeople who gathered there; Jesus was the subject of idle and malicious chatter. "They that sit in the gate speak against me," is literally, "speak with premeditation ('siyach') against me;" they "think upon me," and with sneers repeat derisive and contemptuous remarks at my expense. Jesus was the subject of a smearing campaign orchestrated by The Slanderer, the Devil. Reproach after reproach came upon him; they hurled insults at Him and maliciously gossiped about him; and everywhere, both in the gate, by the judges and the businessmen, and by the common people, He was jeered at and slandered. Even those engaged in serious business transactions think critically about Jesus and speak out those thoughts.

"I was the song of the drunkards," is, literally, "and the strains of those drinking strong drink (shekar) speak against me." These drunkards, aided by the Prince of darkness, made up foul, offensive, and evil songs about Christ's birth and Mary's seeming immorality and unfaithfulness. Like the Jewish leaders later on, almost everyone at Nazareth, openly sneered at, and taunted Jesus about His birth, and said that He was born of fornication. John 8v41. Others whispered against and slandered Jesus behind His back, and said that Joseph had to marry Mary, because she was pregnant before they were married. The Holy Lamb of God patiently endured these false accusations, and violent speaking against Him by sinners. Heb 12v3. They mocked and derided His wonderful and miraculous birth. Christ's brothers and sisters could not stand this

pressure, and stood with the critics against Jesus, and refused to believe in Him. This was a very severe trial for Joseph, Mary and Jesus.

NB The prohibitions God laid down in Deut 23v2 shed significant light on some of the persecutions against Jesus. The New King James Bible translates Deut 23v2, "One of illegitimate birth shall not enter the congregation of the Lord; even to the tenth generation, none of his descendants shall enter the congregation of the Lord." The Living Bible translates Deut 23v2, "A bastard may not enter the sanctuary, nor any of his descendants for ten generations." Christ's critics surely used this Scripture to attack Jesus, for He had to live all His life with the accusation that Israel's religious leaders hurled at Him in John 8v41, "We be not born of fornication." They pointed the finger at Jesus and accused Him of being the product of fornication, when He said that they were seeking to kill Him, and that the Devil was their father. See John 8v40-44. "Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God." (KJV)

c. When Jesus preached His first sermon at Nazareth, the inhabitants of Nazareth tried to kill Him. We are told in Luke 4v22-30, that the people of Nazareth marvelled at the beautiful and gracious words that Jesus spoke to them, and then after His sermon, they exploded in a frenzy of murderous rage, and tried to throw Him over a cliff and kill Him. Jesus knew that the listeners (including His brothers, Luke 4v28, "all they in the synagogue.") were going to try to kill Him, when He finished His sermon, but He still spoke to them with the utmost kindness, gentleness and grace, (Greek, "charis" (OT:5485)). They were charming, appealing and winsome words, that revealed and conveyed the beautiful, caring, and gentle personality of Jesus, but they rejected both His words and Him, and tried to kill Him. The people of Nazareth said that Jesus was a wonderful carpenter, but they treated Him with contempt and rejected His ministry. Jesus was despised and rejected of men in His own hometown; this broke His heart and caused Jesus considerable mental and emotional suffering. It was an extremely bruising experience.

NB We must "look away to" Jesus, and "consider" Jesus. Heb 12v2,3. In Heb 12v2, "looking away to," is "aphorontes eis." "Aphorontes," is the present active participle of "aphorao" (NT:872), to look away to, to look away from one thing to concentrate on another. "unto" is "eis" (NT:1519), which means "into," as well as, "to," or "unto." We should not just look to Jesus, but also actively and continuously look into all the glorious splendour and majesty of His inner being, His humanity and Godhead, "looking away into Jesus." Fix your eyes into all that Jesus is, He is our goal. Imitate Moses, who "accounted the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt: for he kept on looking away to the recompense of reward." Heb 11v26. "For he kept on looking away to," is "apeblepen gar eis," the imperfect active of "apoblepo" (OT:578). The reward of Moses, and ourselves, is knowing the fullness of Jesus. We should ceaselessly and perpetually look away to Jesus the Author and Pioneer ("archegon" (OT:747), see Heb 2v10) of faith, and the Perfecter, "teleiotes" (OT:5051), one who brings to the goal. Jesus will assuredly bring our faith and our characters to the goal of conformity to His image. Rom 8v29. It is Jesus speaking to our inner being that changes us into His image, the literal translation of Heb 1v2 reads, "God has spoken in Son." A similar thought is expressed by Jesus in John 14v6, "I am the way, the truth and the life, no man comes unto the Father but by me." It is Jesus, and the truth about Jesus, that feeds and changes our inner being into His likeness. Christ's life of suffering, and the sufferings of His atoning death, has made Jesus the complete and perfect Saviour and High Priest. Heb 5v5-10. Jesus has fully earned and merited the position that God the Father has given to Him, and is totally worthy of all the praise that we can give Him.

NB Israel's religious leaders continually and viciously attacked Jesus throughout His ministry. This was very hard to take, and the heart broken weeping of Jesus over their rejection of Him, and the consequences of their rejection are vividly seen in Luke 19v41-44. It was a supreme test of endurance and love.

Consider the astounding steadfast and brave endurance of Jesus in this vicious opposition. In Heb 12v3, The New King James Version reads. "For consider Him who endured such hostility ("antilogian" (NT:485)), "to speak against with hatred) from sinners against Himself, lest you become weary and discouraged in your souls."

In Heb 12v3, The King James Version reads. "For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds." In Heb 12v3, "endured," is the perfect active participle "hupomemenekota," it is used to speak of our Lord's brave endurance of the vicious verbal attacks spoken against Him by His enemies. The KJV "gainsaying," is "antilogia" (NT:485), (from "antilogos," and "antilego" (NT:483)), which means speaking against, controversy, dispute, contradiction, and opposition. In opposing Jesus, Christ's enemies became enemies of their own souls. However, in Heb 6v16 and 7v7, "antilogia" is used in a positive way to state that God's Word and oath end all possibility of strife and contradiction. Christ's superlative example under extreme provocation, slander and persecution, should strengthen us against ever being "weary and faint in our minds," in the temptations, trials and conflicts of life. "Faint," is "ekluomenoi," the present passive participle of "ekluo," (NT:1590), to release, to loosen out; in the passive, to be tired out and enfeebled, to become extremely weary, to faint from exhaustion, here in Heb 12v3, in soul, as in Heb 12v5. See below on Heb 12v2, where "hupemeinen," the aorist active indicative of "hupomeno" (NT:5278), is used to describe our Lord's brave endurance of the Cross.

In Heb 12v3, "consider" is "analogisasthe," "the aorist imperative of "analogizomai" (NT:357), which means to reckon up, to

compare, to weigh, to count up, to compare, to weigh, to consider. It only occurs here in the New Testament. Some scholars say that, "The verb can also include the idea of meditation."

In Heb 3v1, "consider," is "katanoesate," the aorist active imperative of "kataneo," (NT:2657), to put the mind down on a thing, to fix the mind on something, it speaks of a continuous observation and attention. Meditating on, knowing, and understanding Jesus is the key to all our problems, the cure for all our doubts, fears, and uncertainty. We have to consider attentively and fix our eyes and minds upon the Apostle and High Priest of our confession. Considering Jesus and the violent criticism and opposition He overcame for us, is the answer to our problems, and the cure for all our ills. Fix your eyes and minds on Jesus and thoroughly reckon up and weigh all that He is, and all that He has endured for us, and all the ministrations that His High Priestly ministry is now doing for us, and you will be changed from glory to glory, and transfigured into His likeness. Rom 12v1,2, 2Cor 3v18.

We read in Heb 12v2, that Jesus bravely endured the Cross. "He endured," is "hupemeinen," the aorist active indicative of "hupomeno" (NT:5278), to patiently endure, to steadfastly and bravely endure. Jesus despised, ("kataphronesas" the aorist active participle of "kataphroneo" (NT:2706), to think down on something, to despise and treat as contemptible), the shame and disgrace, ("aischunes" (NT:152)), of "the death of the Cross," Phil 2v8, the most shameful and discreditable of all deaths. In Gethsemane He briefly shrank from the sufferings of the Cross and Hades that lay ahead, but love for us drove Him forward, and He submitted to the Father's will, and at immeasurable cost and personal suffering, anguish and grief, brought about our salvation. Christ's glorious sacrificial victory, justly won and made Jesus a co-partner of His Father's throne. "Hath sat down," is "kekathiken," the perfect active indicative of "kathizo" (NT:2523), the perfect tense informs us that He still sits at the right hand of the Father, and has all authority and power. In Heaven and earth. Matt 28v18-20, Eph 1v20-23, Heb 1v3.

NB Consider the horrors Jesus endured which are recorded in Psalm 22. In Psalm 22, we see the amazing prophetic accuracy of the events concerning the crucifixion of Jesus. It gives us a clear insight into how the vicious verbal attacks on Jesus affected Him. In the Psalms and Isaiah, we see the inner pain and conflicts of Jesus. In the Gospels, generally speaking, we see the outward actions and physical cruelty against Jesus. We see how the Roman soldiers savagely beat and mocked Jesus, and how Israel's religious leaders, baited, reviled, and mocked Jesus in the most terrible and blasphemous manner.

We read in The Amplified Bible in Psalm 22v7-20. All who see me laugh at me and mock me; they shoot out the lip, they shake the head, saying, [Matt 27v43] He trusted and rolled himself on the Lord, that He would deliver him. Let Him deliver him, seeing that He delights in him! [Matt27v39,43; Mark 15v29,30; Luke23:35] Yet You are He Who took me out of the womb; You made me hope and trust when I was on my mother's breasts. I was cast upon You from my very birth; from my mother's womb You have been my God. Be not far from me, for trouble is near and there is none to help. Many [foes like] bulls have surrounded me; strong bulls of Bashan have hedged me in. [Ezek 39v18] Against me they opened their mouths wide, like a ravening and roaring lion. I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint. My heart is like wax; it is softened [with anguish] and melted down within me. My strength is dried up like a fragment of clay pottery; [with thirst] my tongue cleaves to my jaws; and You have brought me into the dust of death. [John 19v28] For [like a pack of] dogs they have encompassed me; a company of evildoers has encircled me, they pierced my hands and my feet. [Isaiah 53v7; John 9:37] I can count all my bones; [the evildoers] gaze at me. [Luke 23v27,35] They part my clothing among them and cast lots for my raiment (a long, shirt like garment, a seamless under tunic). [John 19v23,24] But be not far from me, O Lord; O my Help, hasten to aid me! Deliver my life from the sword, my dear life [my only one] from the power of the dog [the agent of execution].

After the precise and accurate description of the awful scenes around the cross, and the inner and outward suffering of our dear Lord Jesus, the Holy Spirit takes us to the scene in Heaven. All the massed angelic choirs sing for joy at our Saviours glorious victory, and Jesus rejoices before the Father with all those dearly loved saints that He has redeemed and brought out of the darkness of Hades into His Father's kingdom. What a day of rejoicing that was, and that rejoicing continues today when sinners repent. Luke 15v7,10.

Psalm 22v22-31: "I will declare Your name to my brethren; in the midst of the congregation will I praise You. [John 20v17; Rom 8v29; Heb 2v12] You who fear (revere and worship) the Lord, praise Him! All you offspring of Jacob, glorify Him. Fear (revere and worship) Him, all you offspring of Israel. For He has not despised or abhorred the affliction of the afflicted; neither has He hidden His face from him, but when he cried to Him, He heard. My praise shall be of You in the great congregation. I will pay to Him my vows [made in the time of trouble] before them who fear (revere and worship) Him. The poor and afflicted shall eat and be satisfied; they shall praise the Lord — they who [diligently] seek for, inquire of and for Him, and require Him [as their greatest need]. May your hearts be quickened now and forever! All the ends of the earth shall remember and turn to the Lord, and all the families of the nations shall bow down and worship before You, For the kingship and the kingdom are the Lord's, and He is the ruler over the nations. All the mighty ones upon earth shall eat [in thanksgiving] and worship; all they that go down to the dust shall bow before Him, even he who cannot keep himself alive. Posterity shall serve Him; they shall tell of the Lord to the next generation. They shall come and shall declare His righteousness to a people yet to be born — that He has done it [that it is finished]! [John 19:30.]" (Amplified Bible)

Jesus has won a glorious victory, and everyone in God's kingdom will give Him the praise that He truly deserves.

NB Consider how Jesus was persecuted and murdered because of the envy in Israel's religious leaders. Pilate knew that Israel's religious leaders had delivered Jesus up out of envy. Matt 27v17,18, Mark 15v9,10. Envy, "phthonos," is even more destructive and malignant than "zelos," jealousy. "Zelos," casts hostile grudging looks; "phthonos," "envy," has arrived at the stage of hostile and even murderous acts. It is grief at another person's good fortune, it is not just the pain that they do not possess the other person's good fortune or blessing, but the bitterness that the other person does. It is not so much the desire for what another person has; it is the desire to take away from them what they have, or prevent them from possessing it. "Zelos," "jealousy," can sometimes speak of noble ambition, and a desire for something good, as well as a covetous evil desire; whereas. "phthonos," "envy," can only speak of a bitter and evil ill will. It is not just grief over an enemy's good fortune; it can even be anger at a friend's good fortune. The Jews went beyond jealousy to the active hatred of the more malignant "phthonos," "envy." Though they were certainly inspired by Satan, we are not told that they were possessed by Satan, like Judas was. The jealousy and envy in their hearts drove them to oppose and murder Jesus, and fulfil Satan's desires. Matt 27v18, Mark 2v5-7,16,23,24, 3v1,2, 15v10.

NB Besides all these pressures Jesus had the burden of total poverty.

Paul declares in 2Cor 8v9, that Jesus experienced the total poverty of a penniless beggar. We read in 2Cor 8v9, "For you know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that you through his poverty might become rich." "He became poor," is "epitocheusen," (only here in the New Testament) it is the aorist active indicative of "ptocheuo" (NT:4433), to be a beggar, (from "ptochos" (NT:4434), the totally destitution of a cowering beggar, as in Luke 14v13). In "through his poverty," poverty is "ptocheia" (NT:4432), "abject" poverty" and "beggary" (In 2Cor 8v2 "deep poverty, is "bathous (NT:899) ptocheia" (NT:4432), "poverty down deep," from "ptocheuo" (NT:4433)), Jesus became totally destitute so that we "might become rich," "ploutesete," (NT:4147), the aorist active subjunctive of "pluteo" (4147)), to be rich. Rich with Heaven's blessings. Those who trust in riches end up empty in their souls. Luke 1v53. Paul warns us in 1Cor 4v8, that we can have a distorted perspective of our true spiritual condition, and Rev 3v17-19, solemnly warns us that we can be spiritually penniless, when we think that we are rich, and be completely deceived by financial prosperity and the possession of riches.

NB Satan's Attacks On Jesus Brought Him Great Suffering.

a) Jesus was suffered badly from Satan's attacks on Him in the wilderness, and throughout His ministry. Satan demanded that Job and Peter should be put into his hands to test them. Job 1v6-22, 2v1-8, Luke 22v31-34. That the very same thing happened to Jesus, is proved by His temptation in the wilderness, and by Heb 4v15, which states that Jesus was tempted in all points like ourselves. Satan demanded the opportunity to make many all out attacks on Jesus, and to tempt and try Him to the very limit. Satan said that if the hedge of protection that was around Job was removed, Job would curse God to His face, and asked for the opportunity to prove it, but His malignant and malicious attacks on Job failed to turn him from the God he loved. God removed the hedge about Jesus, and gave Satan the opportunity to tempt and test Jesus, and Satan set about it with ferocious and evil enthusiasm, and tried to corrupt the pure soul of Jesus, but Jesus was totally victorious over his evil stratagems and vicious temptations. Satan completely failed to corrupt our dear Lord Jesus.

b) There were many other attacks by Satan on Jesus besides the temptation in the wilderness. This is clearly revealed in Luke 4v13, "And when the devil had completed every temptation, he departed from him for a season." KJV "Season," is "Kairos," (NT:2540), it means, "the time when things are brought to crisis, a decisive epoch in time, an opportune, convenient, or seasonable time." Here it is used of the timing of Satan's strategic attacks on Jesus, but it is also used of the timing of God's strategic plans, epochs and events in the world. Matt 11v25, 26v18, Mark 1v15, Luke 19v44, 21v24, Rom 5v6, 1Tim 2v6, Rev 11v18. etc.

The New King James Version of Luke 4v13, reads, "Now when the devil had ended every temptation, he departed from Him until an opportune time." "Had ended," is the verb "suntelesas" (NT:4931), which is derived from "sun," (NT:4862), "together," and "teleo" (NT:5055), to "accomplish, to end, complete, conclude," and means "to bring to one end together;" and so, "concluded completely." When Satan had tried every kind of temptation, he gave up all his attempts at seducing Jesus. "Every temptation," is "panta" (NT:3956), "peirasmon" (NT:3986), Satan's primary attack was on Christ's relationship and standing with God the Father, and the best way to fulfil His mission for God His Father, the desire for food was part of this temptation. Jesus "was in all points tempted like as we are." Heb 4v15. For forty days and nights Satan strove with all his craft and cunning to entrap, seduce, and defeat Jesus, but his evil desires and plans were in all points defeated. This was no mere intellectual dispute, it was a cataclysmic and devastating spiritual confrontation, which was so physically and mentally debilitating, that Jesus needed angelic ministry to sustain and renew His body, soul, mind, and spirit. Mark 1v12,13.

c) We read in Luke 4v2, that Jesus was tempted throughout all of the forty days. There were also the three major temptations at the end of His forty days in the wilderness. This undoubtedly included the terrifying dreams and visions in

the night that Job experienced at the hands of the Devil. Poor Job felt that God was afflicting him and giving him these terrible nightmares and visions in the night, when it was really Satan. We read in Job 7v13-15, "When I say, 'My bed will comfort me, my couch will ease my complaint,' Then You frighten me with dreams and terrify me with visions, So that my soul chooses strangling and death rather than my body and pains." Jesus knew that it was Satan who was putting Him to this fearsome test, but the temptation in the wilderness was so severe that angels had to physically sustain and renew Him, just as an angel had to strengthen Him in the devastating experience He suffered in the garden of Gethsemane. Mark 1v13, Luke 22v43. In the wilderness Satan was trying to seduce and trip Jesus up, and put paid to His ministry before it started. In Gethsemane Satan tried to make Jesus turn back from the agony and horror of the Cross and Hades, and so frustrate God's plans to save mankind. The first man, Adam, failed miserably, the last Adam, Jesus, triumphed gloriously, and against all the odds, won through and purchased our salvation with His own precious shed blood. 1Cor 15v45-49. Blessed be His wonderful Name! Heb 2v14, Col 2v15.

d) Satan made many more crafty and vicious attacks on Jesus through people. Satan even used Peter to try to sidetrack Jesus from His mission. Mark 8v33, Matt 4v10, 16v23, Luke 4v8. On many occasions Satan used Israel's religious leaders to attack Jesus, by malicious slander and crafty schemes to entrap and kill Him. John 5v18, 7v1, 8v39-40, Luke 22v1-6. Jesus said in Luke 22v53. "When I was with you daily in the temple, you did not try to seize Me. But this is your hour, and the power of darkness." "The power of darkness," is "he exousia (NT:1849) tou skotous" (NT:4655). All the massed might of the evil angelic powers attacked Jesus in full force as the time came for Him to make atonement for sin, but He overcame all their malicious and vicious opposition, and conquered and subjugated them. Blessed be His wonderful Name! Heb 2v15.

In Eph 6v12, Paul reveals the hosts of evil that waged war against Jesus, and which we also fight against, "For we are not contending against flesh and blood, but against the principalities, against the powers, against the world rulers of this present darkness, against the spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places." (RSV) There can be no doubt whatever, that Paul is speaking here of the different ranks and orders of evil spirits. Jesus resisted and stood against these hosts of evil that attacked Him, and took up the armour of God and totally defeated them, and through His armour, presence and grace we can do the same.

"Against Principalities," "archas" (NT:746). The chief rulers over the nations, evil angels of the first rank and order in their kingdom. "Against Powers," "exousias" (NT:1849). The evil angels that act with delegated authority from the principalities. "Against the rulers of the darkness of this world." "Tous (NT:3588), kosmokratoras (NT:2888), tou (NT:3588), skotous (NT:4655), tou (NT:3588), aionos (NT:165), toutou (NT:5127)." The rulers and emperors of the darkness of this present age. "Kosmokratoras," the evil lords of this present world, the princes of this age. The Devil and his evil angels, are the real powers behind the world's kingdoms.

"Against spiritual wickedness in heavenly places." "Ta (NT:3588), pneumatika (NT:4152), tees (NT:3588), ponerias (NT:4189), en (NT:1722), tois (NT:3588), epouraniois (NT:2032)." Evil beings in the heavenly places, who are full of corrupting evil, "poneros." These are different orders of evil spirits, angels who kept not their first estate; who fell from the heavenly places, who Satan employs to hinder the spread of the Gospel, and to destroy men's souls, and we strive against them and resist their evil plans.

e) Jesus experienced testing and bruising temptations from the flesh. Satan certainly made use of the human side of Jesus in the wilderness, when Jesus became very hungry after fasting for forty days. Jesus is called "the man Christ Jesus," and we are told that He "was tempted in all points just as we are, yet without sin." 1Tim 2v5, Heb 4v15. Jesus never gave way to temptations from the flesh, He was totally victorious over all temptations. It is impossible to think of a more bruising and trying experience than a face to face all out attack by Satan for forty days and nights in the wilderness. The conflict was so great, and so ruthless, relentless, vicious and destructive, that it physically and mentally totally exhausted Jesus, to such an extent, that angels had to come to Jesus and physically strengthen Him, just as an angel had to strengthen Him in the garden of Gethsemane, when He was under such spiritual and physical pressure that He could well have died without this angelic ministry. Mark 1v12,13, Luke 22v43.

Paul had to beat his body under, restrain it, and keep it under control, we read in 1Cor 9v26,27, "Well, I do not run aimlessly, I do not box as one beating the air; but I pommel my body and subdue it, lest after preaching to others I myself should be disqualified." (RSV) The Living Bible translates 1Cor 9v27., "Like an athlete I punish my body, treating it roughly, training it to do what it should, not what it wants to. Otherwise I fear that after enlisting others for the race, I myself might be declared unfit and ordered to stand aside."

NB Satan Tried To Rob Jesus Of The Power Of God by An Attack On His Faith.

a) Satan aggressively attacked the reality of Christ's most holy and blessed experiences. When John saw the Holy Spirit as a dove rest upon Jesus in unlimited power, he testified that Jesus was God's Lamb, and only begotten Son, and Israel's promised Messiah. John 1v15-19,29-36, 3v27-36. The Father's voice confirmed John's witness, for all to hear, "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." Matt 3v11-17. Yet Satan challenged the witness of the Father and Spirit, and cast doubt on Christ's blessed and holy experiences. What evil affrontery! Satan will try to challenge and cast doubt on our lovely

God-given experiences and gifts, we must resist him and rejoice in what God has given to us, for God's word and promises to us are always true and reliable.

b) Satan tried to undermine and destroy Christ's faith in God's Word. Satan will try to destroy our faith in the promises, power and love of God. "Has God said," still comes from Satan's lips. Gen 3v6 with Rev 12v9. Satan still denies the reliability of God's Word and the reality of His promises to us, including the promise of the baptism and gifts of the Holy Spirit. The Scriptures, which confirm that Christ's experience was from God, confirm that ours is too, and that the gifts of the Holy Spirit are for today, and the heritage of the children of God. Acts 2v38,39.

c) Satan sneered at, disparaged and maligned Christ's thirty years of love and devotion to God at Nazareth. Christ had lived a life of perfect holiness and purity for 30 years, and Satan knew it; yet he dismisses and casts doubt on Christ's beautiful life of perfect love and devotion to His Father, with his lying and sarcastic, "If." Satan tried to bring Jesus to a place of dejection and despair by his evil insinuations, and he will try to give us feelings of guilt and despair by casting aspersions on our character and work for God. Satan will try to dismiss all our acts of love and devotion to God by his evil insinuations; however, the Scriptures assure us that "God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love." Heb 6v10. Nagging, condemning, destructive attacks upon our minds, come from Satan, "The Accuser," not from God. Rev 12v9-12. Don't accept Satan's lies about yourself; only recognise and confess what the Scriptures say you are in Christ. Matt 7v7-11, Luke 11v9-13, John 3v16, 15v9, 17v23, Eph 1v3. Jesus understands and cares, and even His disciplines spring out of His great love for us. Heb 4v14-16. Christ is made unto us all we need, His strengthening grace is more than sufficient for us. 1Cor 1v30,31, Phil 4v13,19. Let praise and worship take the place of your heaviness and despair, draw near to God in praise and prayer, resist Satan and he will flee from you. James 4v7-9. God is love, He appreciates all our love and work for Him.

d) Satan fiercely attacked the Sonship and deity of Jesus. NB Rom 8v14-17, 1John 3v1,2. Jesus created Satan, and named him Lucifer, Son of the morning, Isaiah 14v12. Lucifer (Latin), Hebrew, "heylel," from halal (OT:1984), to shine which most translators translate as "Daystar," that is "Morning-star," (OT:1966), the Septuagint translates this as, "Phosphoros," which means Light-Bearer, and Light-Bringer. Daystar, is one of the titles which belongs to Jesus, "the bright and morning star." Rev 22v16. It is here given by God to Satan before he fell. In Job 38v7 God also calls all the angelic "sons of God," "the morning stars," before Satan and the other angels who fell with him, rebelled and chose evil. It is an astonishing fact that Lucifer and his evil followers, rejected God, goodness and truth, and wilfully exercised their free wills to chose evil, sinful selfishness, in the very Presence of God in Heaven, in the full light of the character, glory and works of God. In doing so Lucifer, "the bringer of light," became Satan, the Devil, the Prince of Darkness, and the Lying Slanderer of God and God's children, and his evil angels, became the powers of darkness. Isaiah 14v12-20, Ezek 28v12-19, Rev 12v10-12. Satan knew that Jesus was his Creator God, yet he tried, by lies and insinuations, to attack Christ's Deity and Sonship, and he will certainly attack our sonship and standing in God. Resist Satan's attack on your position in Christ. James 4v5-7. Do not give place to him for an instant, "Beloved, now are we the sons of God." 1John 3v1,2. We are joint heirs with Jesus, God's own beloved children. Rom.8v17.

e) Satan attempted to undermine Christ's faith in God's provision and love for Him. Satan was in effect saying to Christ, "You say that you acted on the revealed will of God, and look where it got you, into a wilderness with no provision, what a good God you serve." Satan loves to imply that God has failed us, or does not love us, because God has not miraculously intervened in our circumstances; but it is a lie, we are always on our Father's heart. God may allow our faith to be tried by difficult circumstances, temptation, and trials; but He will never leave us or forsake us. (The Amplified Bible reads Heb 13v5 as, "Himself has said, I will not in any way fail you nor give you up nor leave you without support. [I will] not, [I will] not, [I will] not in any degree leave you helpless nor forsake nor let [you] down (relax My hold on you)! [Assuredly not!]," in the Greek there are five negatives strengthening each other, so that it could also be read as, "He Himself has said, I will never, never, never, never, never, fail thee nor forsake thee.") Heb 13v5,6,8, 1Pet 1v3-9. How much more reliable than the closest of earthly ties is the abundant affection, unceasing care, and unfailing love of our heavenly Father. Luke 11v13.

f) Satan viciously attacked the reality of Christ's spiritual gifts. Satan taunted Christ, "You have not had one miracle. What, you God's Son? What an imagination you have. If you are God's Son, and have been filled with the Spirit, where are the miracles? If you have received the Holy Spirit and spiritual gifts, why are you having such a bad time?" Jesus knew that God's power and gifts are manifested under the guidance of God's wisdom and in God's time and will. We cannot demand great manifestations of God's power at our will, it is "severally as He will." 1Cor 12v11. **The lack of great spiritual gifts after our baptism in the Spirit can be a major temptation, however, great gifts of revelation and demonstration, are usually given to mature Christians, and in particular to the leading ministries of Christ's Church.** John 5v19,30. Satan will try us as he tried our Lord, and we must answer him as Jesus did. Jesus quoted from Deut 8v3, which states that God allows His children to be tried and qualified by adversity, and that God is always with us in our temptations and trials. Jesus knew that the God who looked after the Israelites in the wilderness for forty years would look after Him, and God will look after us, **He is ALWAYS with us.** 1Pet 1v4-7, 5v7. Let us answer Satan with, "It is written," God's truth stands forever sure, our God will never fail us, or forsake us. Heb 13v5-8.

NB Satan Tried To Get Jesus To Use His Gifts In The Wrong Way matt 4v5-7.

Satan again makes an all out attack on the faith of Christ and His Sonship. So realise, that he will certainly and persistently try to attack our faith, our position in Christ, and our standing as sons of the living God. Resist him and he will flee from you. James 4v7, 1Pet 5v7-9, Zech 3v1-11.

Satan tried to get Jesus to misinterpret the Scriptures in a self willed, presumptuous and fanatical way. When Satan quoted Psalm 91v11,12, he omitted some important words, as can be seen by a comparison with Luke 4v10,11 and Matt 4v6. Satan omitted the words "in all thy ways," that is, the ways of Christ directed by God. Satan misquotes Psalm 91v11,12, doubtless one of Christ's favourite portions of Scripture, and suggests that He had a Scriptural authority for a daring act of faith.

NB The Vicious Attack On Jesus By Satan And His Evil Angels In Gethsemane.

Satan and his evil angels encompassed Jesus in Gethsemane and ferociously attacked Him with great amounts of evil power, through energy lines of evil intensity, in order to weaken and devastate Jesus, and destroy His resolve to save mankind. The level of conflict was gigantic, horrendous, and totally excruciating. No other human being has come close to suffering what Jesus suffered and endured in Gethsemane. Jesus suffered and endured this onslaught of evil, and conquered it, out of pure love for us. Blessed be His Name!

a) The horrific words used to describe Christ's awful depression, anguish and agony of soul in Gethsemane.

We read in Matt 26v37-39, "And taking with Him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, He began to show grief and distress of mind and was deeply depressed. Then He said to them, My soul is very sad and deeply grieved, so that I am almost dying of sorrow. Stay here and keep awake and keep watch with Me. And going a little farther, He threw Himself upon the ground on His face and prayed saying, My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from Me; nevertheless, not what I will [not what I desire], but as You will and desire." (Amplified Bible)

We read in Luke 22v41-44, "And He was withdrawn from them about a stone's throw, and He knelt down and prayed, saying, "Father, if it is Your will, take this cup away from Me; nevertheless not My will, but Yours, be done." Then an angel appeared to Him from heaven, strengthening Him. And being in agony, He prayed more earnestly. Then His sweat became like great drops of blood falling down to the ground." (NKJV)

In Luke 22v44, "agony," is "agonia" (NT:74), it is used to speak of, an intense struggle for victory, of extreme and prolonged efforts in wrestling, then of severe mental and emotional conflicts, anguish and agony. Vincent states, "Agony occurs only here. It is used by medical writers, and the fact of a sweat accompanying an agony is also mentioned by them." End of quote.

Adam Clark writes, "The word "agonia" (NT:74) (agony) points out the utmost anguish and grief of soul, and is of the same import with "ademonein" (NT:85) in Matthew and Mark." End of quote.

b) Christ's agonising praying was so physically destructive that God sent an angel to strengthen Him. The conflict was so great that it became too much for Christ's physical frame, and an angel had to appear from Heaven to strengthen Jesus. His praying was so intense that it nearly killed Him. In Luke 22v44 "being in an agony," "genomenos" (NT:1096), en agonia" (NT:74), the aorist participle suggests a "growing intensity" in our Lord's spiritual conflict, literally translated, it carries the thought, "having become in an agony." Jesus progressed from His first prayer and severe spiritual conflict recorded in Luke 22v41, where it states that He "began to pray," and entered into an even greater spiritual conflict and overwhelming distress, and even more earnest prayer. "He prayed more earnestly," is "ektenesteron (NT:1617) proseucheto." The adverb "ektenesteron" (NT:1617), means "very fervently," so it means, "He prayed very fervently and even more earnestly." The verb "ekteino," (NT:1614), means literally, "stretched out," from "ek," out, and "teino," to stretch, and literally means extended, stretched out, and then, intense, fervent or earnest. It signifies "intense strain," feeling "on the rack." The pressures in Gethsemane made Jesus feel as if He was on a rack, and resulted in Him praying to the Father with most fervent and earnest "strong cryings and tears." Heb 5v7. The Amplified Bible translates Luke 22v44 as, "And being in an agony [of mind], He prayed [all the] more earnestly and intently, and His sweat became like great clots of blood dropping down upon the ground."

In 1Pet 1v22, Peter uses the adverb "ektenos," (NT:1619), which means intensely, fervently, earnestly, to direct us to love fellow Christians with a fervent love from the heart, "ek kardias ektenos." In 1Pet 4v8, Peter uses the related adjective "ektenes" (NT:1618), to speak of the necessity for fervent love between Christians. The adjective "ektenos" occurs in Acts 12v5, in the Maj. Text and T.R., it is not as in the A.V., "without ceasing," it means earnest, stretched out, and fervent; it literally means, "prayer was arising earnestly," the Christians praying for Peter, prayed well, but they could not believe Rhoda when she insisted that Peter was at the door, they found out that she was correct. They did some great heart felt praying without really believing. God is very generous and kind, and graciously listens to our fumbling efforts at prayer, when we pray in love.

c) Great sorrow was followed by even greater sorrow and heavy depression. Matt 26v37,38, "And he took with him Peter

and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me."

Jesus took with him Peter, James and John; the same disciples that had beheld His glory in the Mount of transfiguration. Now they beheld an even greater glory, the extent to which divine love is prepared to agonise and suffer to redeem sinful mankind. In Matt 26v37, Matthew uses, "lupeisthai" (NT:3076), "kai" "ademonein" (NT:85) for "sorrowful and very heavy." "Lupeisthai" is the present passive infinitive of "lupeo," the passive means to be grieved, distressed and sorrowful. "Lupeo" is used to speak in Matt 19v22, of the sorrow of the rich young ruler, when he felt that he could not leave his riches and follow Jesus, Jesus left all the riches of Heaven for the awful pains of Gethsemane, the Cross, and Hades. See also Matt 26v22, John 21v17. Peter was grieved.

Barnes writes about "very heavy," "ademonein" (NT:85). "The word in the original is much stronger than the one translated "sorrowful." It means, to be pressed down or overwhelmed with great anguish." End of quote.

"Ademonein" (NT:85), is the present active infinitive of "ademoneo" (NT:85), to be full of anguish and sorrow, to be in great distress, to be very heavy, depressed and dejected. It is a much stronger word than the word rendered "sorrowful," "lupeisthai." Scholars tell us that "ademoneo" is the strongest of the three Greek words that are used in the New Testament for depression. (See Strong, NT:85, NT:916, NT:3076.) "Ademoneo" only occurs in Matt 26v37, Mark 14v33 and Phil 2v26. How great is the love of Jesus for us to suffer such great inner pain and depression for us. Do you suffer from depression? Jesus has been there before you, at the very worst possible level. He understands your pain, and He is risen with healing in His wings. He can and will deliver you. Mal 4v2.

d) The great suffering of Jesus, which is seen in the parallel texts in Matt 26v37 and Mark 14v33. As we have seen in Matt 26v37, Matthew uses "lupeisthai" (NT:3076), "kai" "ademonein" (NT:85), for "sorrowful and sore troubled." Whereas, in Mark's parallel text, Mark 14v33, Mark uses, for "greatly amazed and sore troubled," "ekthambeisthai" (NT:1568), "kai" (NT:2532), "ademonein" (NT:85). "Ekthambeisthai," is the present passive infinitive of "ekthambeo" (NT:1568), it means to astonish utterly, to terrify, to throw into terror or amazement, to be thoroughly amazed, to be struck with terror. "Ekthambeo," occurs four times in the New Testament, and only in Mark's Gospel. Mark 9v15, 14v33, 16v5,6.

In Mark 9v15, "ekthambeo" is applied to the amazed reaction of the multitudes who saw Jesus after His transfiguration. We read, "And straightway all the multitude, when they saw him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him." "Were greatly amazed," is the aorist passive, "exethambethesan," (NT:1568). The after glow and glory of the Transfiguration was obviously still resting on Jesus, and the sight of it filled the onlookers with fear and amazement.

In Mark 16v5,6, "ekthambeo," is used to describe the amazed fear of the women at the tomb when they saw the angels. We read in Mark 16v5-6, "And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted." "They were affrighted," is "exethambethesan" (NT:1568), the "ex" (NT:1537), intensifies the verb, and reveals that they were utterly amazed and terrified, Luke 24v5 has "affrighted," "emphobon" (NT:1719), which means, afraid, startled, terrified. "A young man," is "neaniskon," (NT:3495), Matthew says the young man was an angel, and that he effortlessly rolled away the very great stone (Mark 16v4) that sealed the entrance to the tomb, and sat upon it. The angel had a face like lightening, and brilliant white garments, his presence was so awe inspiring, that the soldiers guarding the tomb shook with terror, and became like dead men. Matt 28v1-12. Luke speaks of "two men with shining garments," obviously angels, speaking to the women. The apostles stubbornly refused to believe what the angels and Jesus had said to the women. They thought that the women were having some kind of hallucination, and rejected their genuine visitation by the risen Christ. Luke 24v1-12, Mark 16v5-8.

The Living Bible translates Mark 14v33, "He took Peter, James, and John with him and began to be filled with horror and deepest distress."

The American Standard Version translates Mark 14v33, "And he taketh with him Peter and James and John, and began to be greatly amazed, and sore troubled."

The Amplified Bible's translation, "Struck with terror and amazement and deeply troubled and depressed," are an accurate translation of the Greek words, "ekthambeisthai (NT:1568) kai ademonein" (NT:85). Scholars tell us that the two verbs describe an extreme state of bewilderment, fear, uncertainty and anxiety, which are not seen anywhere else in such a forceful and telling way as here. Rawlinson translates them, "shuddering awe, amazement, deep distress," Swete translates them, "amazed awe... overpowering mental distress." Weymouth, translates them, "full of terror and distress." Dear Lord Jesus, what overwhelming terrors you faced out of love for us! (See Psalm 73v19)

In the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus Himself feels and faces the most distressing and terrible fear and amazement, as He directly confronts Satan and all His massed powers of darkness. The Lord Jesus had almost certainly never personally experienced such an intense level of mental anxiety, terror, depression and pressure during His humanity, as He experienced here. This was a critical time, and both Jesus and the Devil knew it full well, hence the great concerted effort by

the Devil and his evil cohorts to try and force Jesus not to go on! If He did not go on, there would be no Eternal Kingdom and the Creation would end in failure. **It was His limitless Love for us and the terrible thought that the Eternal Kingdom could not come into existence that "drove" Him on. Praise His Name!**

Jesus strives with all of His being to win the battle over the powers of evil, and His humanity, and heroically and resolutely decided to go on, regardless of the cost, to purchase our salvation. Satan did his utmost to turn Jesus from His goal of our salvation, but Jesus conquered Satan and triumphed over him, in spite of all the horrendous physical and emotional suffering, spiritual conflict, and mental pressure and pain. Col 2v15, Heb 2v14, 1John 3v8-10.

We read in Mark 10v 32-34. "And they were on the way, going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus was going before them: and they were amazed; and they that followed were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him, Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles: And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again."

"And they were amazed," is "kai ethambounto," (NT:2284), the imperfect passive indicative of "thambeo," to be astonished, amazed, frightened. The imperfect tense describes the continual disturbed feelings of the disciples as Jesus was walking on in front of them the imperfect active "en proagon autous," as they went on through Perea towards Jerusalem. It caused those who followed to be afraid, "ephobounto," (NT:5399), the imperfect passive indicative of "phobeo" (NT:5399), to put to flight by terrifying, to be struck with fear, to be seized with alarm.

The imperfect tenses of "thambeo" (NT:2284) and "phobeo" (NT:5399), describe the continual amazed fear in the twelve apostles when they saw the look on the face of Jesus as He walked in advance of them towards Jerusalem, with a serious gravity, earnestness, and determination that warned of great danger and disaster ahead. The apostles read correctly the stress and determination on the face of Jesus, and were filled with a sense of foreboding, amazement and fear. The terrors of Gethsemane, His Passion, and Hades, were gripping Jesus, but the grace of God given to Him in the Mount of Transfiguration sustained Jesus and impelled and carried Him forward. **NB** Heb 2v9, "But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man." (KJV). God's great grace carried Jesus forward, as it does us.

We read in Mark 10v32, "And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them the things that were to happen to him." Jesus had already told them three times, Mk 8v31, 9v13 and 9v31, about the terrible sufferings that awaited Him in Jerusalem. Here He tries once more to get them to listen to His warnings. But they again refuse to listen to and accept Christ's warnings of His sufferings and death. We read in Luke 18v34., "They understood none of these things."

Mark and Matthew sadly reveal that the minds of James and John were totally taken up with their own selfish plans and ambitions, even while Jesus was giving the details of his approaching death and resurrection to them. They were totally ignorant of the great pressure on Jesus, and selfishly ask, "Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory." Jesus told them that positions of honour in the kingdom have to be earned, usually by baptisms of suffering. Mark 10v35-45. Jesus was under tremendous pressure from these forthcoming events, He was thinking about His suffering and death in the near future, they were thinking about sitting on thrones, in the near future. They were totally ignorant of the signs of the times and prophecy, like much of the Church today about His Glorious Second Coming. Jesus again took the twelve, and began to tell them about His sufferings and death, but they refused to listen to Him.

e) Adam Clarke's enlightening commentary on Matt 26v37,38 "[Began to be sorrowful] "Lupeisthai" (NT:3076), from "luo" (NT:3089), to dissolve, (intense) sorrow, such as dissolves the natural vigour, and threatens to separate soul and body. [And very heavy.] Overwhelmed with anguish—"ademonein" (NT:85). This word is used by the Greeks to denote the most extreme anguish which the soul can feel-- excruciating anxiety and torture of spirit." End of quote.

On Matt 26v38 Adam Clark writes. "[My soul is exceeding sorrowful (or, is surrounded with exceeding sorrow), even unto death.] This latter word explains the two former: My soul is so dissolved in sorrow, my spirit is filled with such agony and anguish, that, if speedy succour be not given to my body, death must be the speedy consequence."

"...Luke observes, Luke 22v43-44, that there appeared unto him an angel from heaven strengthening him; and that, being in an agony, his sweat was like great drops of blood falling to the ground. How (intense) must this anguish have been, when it forced the very blood through the coats of the veins, and enlarged the pores in such a preternatural manner as to cause them to empty it out in large successive drops! In my opinion, the principal part of the redemption price was paid in this unprecedented and indescribable agony."

"Bloody sweats are mentioned by many authors; but none was ever such as this...where a person in perfect health..., and in the full rigour of life, about thirty-three years of age, suddenly, through mental pressure, without any fear of death, sweat great drops of blood; and these continued, during his wrestling with God to fall to the ground....His agony and distress can

receive no consistent explanation but on this ground...He suffered, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God. O glorious truth! O infinitely meritorious suffering! And O! above all, the eternal love, that caused him to undergo such sufferings for the sake of sinners!" End of Adam Clarke quote.

f) The sorrow, pain and anguish of Gethsemane were so severe that it nearly killed Jesus. In Mark 14v34 (and Matt 26v38) Jesus said to His apostles, "My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even to death; remain here, and watch with me." "Exceeding sorrowful, is a translation of the adjective "perilupos" (NT:4036), which literally means, "encircled and surrounded with exceeding sorrows, deeply grieved all around, intensely sad." Thayer says it can mean, "overcome with sorrow so much as to cause one's death." Swete says, it is "a sorrow which well-nigh kills." "To death," is "heos thanatou," "to the point of dying." Perilupos is used five times in the following places in the New Testament: Matt 26v38, Mark 6v26, 14v34, Luke 8v23,24. "Perilupos" (NT:4036)" is used in Matt 26v38 and Mark 14v34, of Jesus being "exceeding sorrowful" in Gethsemane. Perilupos" is used in Mark 6v26 of wicked king Herod's extreme, but fruitless grief, over the execution of John the Baptist. See Matt 14v9 "Perilupos" is used in Luke 18v23,24 of the great sorrow of the rich young ruler, who was so dependant and emotionally attached to his wealth, that he felt unable to give his riches away and follow Jesus. In Matt 17v23, Perilupos is not used, but the Greek phrase "kai (NT:2532) elupethesan (NT:3076) sphodra (NT:4970)," is translated as "and they were exceeding sorry." The disciples were terribly grieved, when Jesus told them that He was to suffer and die, it appears that at last they believed Him, but the thought of it was too uncomfortable for them to retain, and they soon put it out of their minds again.

Here in Gethsemane Jesus Himself is assaulted by feelings of amazement and fear as He battles with the flesh and the Devil over the sufferings of the Cross, and in particular over His suffering the pains of Hades, when His soul was made an offering for our sins. Isaiah 53v10, Acts 2v23-31, Rom 10v7, Eph 4v8-10, Heb 5v7, 1Pet 3v18-22, 4v6. Jesus triumphed gloriously over the terrible pressures that came against Him and won a total victory over the world, the flesh and the Devil, and despised the shame of the Cross. Let no one be in any doubt, the battle over the Cross and Hades was fought and won in Gethsemane, but there could not have been a more severe test of our Lord's resolve and character. The horror of it all besieged and overwhelmed Him, and He was amazed at the severity of the spiritual assault upon Himself. As Swete states, "Long as He had foreseen the Passion, when it came clearly into view its terror exceeded His anticipations." "He learned obedience from the things that He suffered." Heb 5v8. Peter was an eyewitness of the events in Gethsemane, and Mark's Gospel is, according to Papias 135 A.D., the recollections of the ministry of Jesus that Peter told to Mark. Peter saw the horrific pressures that were on Jesus, and used the strongest possible words to describe the horror of what he saw happening to his dear Lord.

NB In His Passion Jesus Suffered Excruciating Physical Pain And Suffering.

1) The torture that Jesus endured before His crucifixion was absolutely horrific. Mel Gibson's moving film, "The Passion of Christ," gives a graphic description of the sufferings of Jesus, and one has to thank God that a factual account of the sufferings of Jesus has at last been presented to the whole world. However, the sufferings of Jesus were actually worse than His sufferings portrayed in the film. Mel Gibson states that he had to hold back from the full facts because people would not be able bear it. Tender-hearted people have found it difficult to watch, and even non-Christians have been reduced to tears by it. The film gives the shocking and gruesome facts about our Lord's sufferings and death. The physical pain that Jesus suffered through His beating and crucifixion was horrendous. People often died through the beating that Jesus experienced. Crucifixion was also totally agonising, and was a prolonged torture. In addition to the unbearable pain, the person who was being crucified, was all the time fighting off asphyxia because of the position of the arms. However, this was not all the pain that Jesus suffered, He also endured excruciating internal emotional pain and distress, and an horrendous fight of faith.

2) Jesus bravely conquered all these soul-destroying fights with evil men and evil angels. A tremendous insight into the great inner grief and conflict that Jesus experienced is seen in Psalm 22. The opening verse, Psalm 22v1, is quoted in Matt 27v46, "My God, my God, why have You forsaken me? Why are You so far from helping me, and from the words of my groaning?" (Amplified Bible). Jesus had read this psalm many times and knew well that it was describing His future crucifixion, and that when He took upon Him the sins of the world, He would experience being cut off from God the Father. Jesus "prayed with strong cryings and tears," Heb 5v7, in Gethsemane over this forsaking by the Father, and the sufferings of Hades. The soul of Jesus was made an offering for sin, Isaiah 53v10, and this forsaking by His Father was a major part of the price of the atonement for our sin.

3) Dying at any time can be a most soul-trying thing, crucifixion is about the worst way to die. Just before my earthly father died he was in considerable distress, he said, "If this is dying, I only want to do it once." His doctors, kindly eased his suffering with morphine and he died peacefully in sleep. Jesus had no pain relief; He refused the drugged drink, and only had a vinegar drink just before He died, in order to fulfil the Scripture. Psalm 69v21 with John 19v28-30. His suffering was quite appalling. To redeem us Jesus lost both His body and spirit at death. Luke 23v46, Eccles 12v7.

NB Jesus Endured The Agonising And Bruising Birth Pains Of Hades.

The tragic failure of the Church to preach about and meditate upon our Lord's imprisonment in Hades for us. Over fifty

years ago, a young girl of about ten, named Margaret Birch, asked me deep theological questions about Hell, and Jesus going to Hades for us, for between one and two hours, she puts the modern Churches to shame. It is a tragedy that the events of Christ's life, between His Death on the cross and His Resurrection are seldom, and even never, considered, or meditated upon, by the modern Church. It is a seriously neglected area of vital Christian truth. Christ's descent into Hades and His imprisonment there for us, for our sins, reveals to us the astonishing evidence and undeniable proof of the willingness of divine love to sacrifice to the utmost limit for us. When Jesus was suffering the birth pangs of Hades, it was the time of heavens greatest anguish and agony, and the time of greatest admiration, praise and worship. All of Heaven saw that God considered no sacrifice was too great to make for His Creation, and that God would do everything that He could to redeem, save and bless His creation. They are amazed at His immense sacrificial love, which gave, and still gives, to the very uttermost. The Scriptures proclaim that Jesus loves us to the uttermost, and that God the Father loves imperfect Christians like ourselves, with the same great love that He loves His perfect only begotten Son, the Lord Jesus. John 15v9, 17v23, Eph 2v4. How wonderful!

Most Christians have never really thought about, or even know about, the descent of Jesus into Hades. It is a complete mystery to me how almost all Christians have neglected this most marvellous and breathtaking Truth about the life of Christ. The amazing fact that out of pure love for us, and to redeem us, Jesus took our place in Hades, God's prison. When Jesus took our place in Hades, He was cut off from His Father, because He was paying the penalty for our sins. Psalm 22v1, Matt 27v46, Mark 15v34. This act of matchless love, is more significant and important than any of the great miracles our Lord performed, and no less important than His death on the cross. **Our Lord's confinement in Hades was the most important part of His atoning work; this is where He paid the penalty for our sin, when His soul was made an offering for our sins.** Isaiah 53v10.

The fact of our Lord's decent into Hades gives us a remarkable insight into the character of God. It reveals the lengths to which God is prepared to go to save us, and bless us, and His amazing long-suffering and mercy to sinners. The revelation of the amazing longsuffering of God with the unsaved is revealed by Christ's remarkable efforts to influence and win them, by preaching to them even in Hades. This truth of the extent of divine mercy is of critical importance, or a cloud can come between ourselves and God, for we have to be able to say, with total confidence, "True and righteous are thy Judgements." Rev 16v7, 19v2. Total assurance and peace can only come, when we have complete confidence in God's justice and judgements. Satisfaction over God's justice is vital, for failure to see God's longsuffering character and perfect justice, obscures our vision of God, and hinders true fellowship and communion with Him.

The greatest bruising of the soul of Jesus took place in Hades. This was what the conflict in Gethsemane was all about. In Acts 2v24, "the pains of death," is "odinas" (NT:5604) "tou" (NT:3588), "thanatou" (NT:2288). The word translated "pains," "odinas," is used to describe the most excruciating travailing pains of childbirth. The pains in the soul of Jesus were like the worst pains that a woman endures in childbirth. Women who have experienced childbirth will know how painful that can be, and almost certainly understand from the use of this word, far better than any man, the extent of Christ's suffering in Hades. (The pain that women endured during childbirth back in the times of the 1st Century AD, would have been considerably greater than the pain that women today would suffer, due to the fact that today strong analgesics (Epidural injections), Gas (Entonox) and pain killing injections can be administered to women before and during labour, in an attempt to reduce the severity of the pain, and so relieve the stress and anxiety caused by childbirth.) 1Pet 3v18-20, 4v6, Eph 4v8-10, Rom 10v5-9. "Odinas," is also used to describe the intolerable anguish caused by the catastrophic calamities, which just precede the return of Jesus. See Matt 24v8, Mark 13v8, 1Thess 5v3.

The bruising and burden that Jesus endured in Hades for us was even more excruciating, agonising, and unbearable than the pains of the cross. Atonement was not fully completed until Jesus had paid the penalty for our sin, by being imprisoned in Hades in our place, and was raised from the dead for our justification. NB Rom 4v25, "Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification." See also Rom 10v7-9, 1Pet 1v3. We read in Luke 9v30,31, "And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias: Who appeared in glory, and spoke ('and were speaking') of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem." (KJV) To correctly understand the Mount of Transfiguration, Gethsemane, and the Cross, we have to consider Christ's descent into the Abyss in Hades. Rom 10v7, Eph 4v9,10. We need to realise that Jesus experienced the greatest extreme of pain and suffering in Hades, when He was made sin for us, and He also experienced His most exultant and greatest joy in Hades, when He personally proclaimed and brought release to His beloved Old Testament Saints, at the end of His imprisonment in Hades.

The creed states that Jesus did descend into Hell.

The word "hell" with its later meaning of the place of eternal punishment was not in the minds of the makers of the creed. They meant that Christ descended into the unseen world of the departed, into a place where those who had died awaited His coming to release them. Confusion has arisen because the Authorised Version has translated the Hebrew "Sheol" and Greek "Hades" as "Hell." However in early English, "hell" meant, "unseen," or, "covered in." In an old game of English forfeits, "the hell" was the covered place where laughing girls hid themselves to pretend to escape being kissed, when playing a game of forfeits. To them it was heaven not a place of punishment. A Devon thatcher was in time past called a "hellier" because he "covered in" a dwelling.

NB Jesus Suffered The Pains Of Hades To redeem His Dearly Beloved Saints.

a) Christ's descent into Hades was the only way that the Old Testament saints could be released from Hades. Jesus not only taught about Hades and judgement; He took our place in the Abyss to open Heaven to us. This is why Moses and Elijah came to encourage our Lord to press on, and they spoke of His "decease," Greek "exodus," (NT:1841), which He should accomplish at Jerusalem. Luke 9v31. This encouragement caused Him to "set His face LIKE A FLINT." We read in Isaiah 50v6,7, "Therefore have I set my face like a flint." "I give my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to those who plucked out the hair, I hid not my face from shame and spitting." We read in Luke 9v51 that Jesus, "steadfastly set His face to go to Jerusalem."

b) The agonies of Gethsemane were an anticipation and result of the agonies of Hades. The most awful words describe the conflict, emotional turmoil, and horrific internal pain that Jesus experienced in Gethsemane. We read in Matt 26v37, that Jesus "began to be sorrowful and very heavy." Great sorrow and heavy depression. We read in Mark 14v33 that Jesus was, "sore amazed," amazement to the edge of horror. In Matt 26v38 "perilupus," signifies that Jesus was surrounded by sorrows. In Luke 22v44, we read that Jesus was in an "agony," a horrendous conflict with the powers of darkness. Jesus found the pains of Hades more trying than the pains of the Cross. Heb 5v7,8 states, "Who in the days of this flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong cryings and tears unto Him that was able to save Him, "ek," "out of" death, and was heard in that He feared Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things that He suffered." Jesus prayed with fervent prayers and, heavy sobbing, for God to deliver Him, not from death, but out of death, i.e.. Hades."

What were The Birth Pains Of Hades?

1) The soul-agony of being separated from the Father. We read in Mark 15v34, "Jesus cried with a loud voice saying, My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me?" The pain of the Cross; the mocking and abuse, had not caused Jesus to cry out in anguish, but when He was made sin for us, and forsaken by God for us, it brought forth a cry of unutterable soul agony. This was the first time Father and Son had not been in fellowship together, from eternity past. This cry of anguish reveals the great hurt and pain in the soul of Jesus, when He was made sin for us, and the Father forsook Him. Moses and Paul had wished themselves accursed for their people's sake. "I could wish myself accursed from Christ." Rom 9v3. "If thou wilt forgive their sin - and if not, blot me I pray thee out of thy book which thou hast written." Exodus 32v32. But only one person could make atonement for sin, Jesus, the sinless Lamb of God. Rev 13v8.

2) The soul-agony of being made sin for us. Jesus alone could be God's perfect Lamb. Christ alone was wounded for our transgressions and bruised for our iniquities, "Thou shall make His soul an offering for sin." Isaiah 53v5,10. Jesus experienced the soul agonies of bearing the judgement by God, by being treated as a sinner, and by being isolated with the evil angels in Tartaros. The Light of the World endured the chains of darkness for us. 2Pet 2v4,17,18, Jude v13. God forsook Jesus for our sins. The Father put Him in the depths of the Abyss, the place of imprisonment for the wicked fallen angels. Jesus was treated as a sinner, and isolated in Tartaros, with the most evil beings there has ever been, but Jesus overcame this greatest trial of all, and triumphed over this environment of total evil.

3) The soul-anguish of trusting God without His spirit and God's Presence. We see that when our Lord said, "It is finished." He was stating that He had fulfilled every type and prophecy that was written about Him in the Scriptures, and every task that the Father had asked Him to do. Nearly all Christians believe that everything concerning our salvation was completed at this point in time, and that our redemption had been purchased. They are ignorant of the fact that the Father had still to make the soul of Jesus "an offering for sin," and that our salvation was not purchased until His resurrection. **NB** Isaiah 53v10, Rom 4v25, John 19v30. The worst suffering of Jesus had yet to come in Hades, when He was surrounded and imprisoned with evil angels. Psalm 69v20-22.

We read in John 19v28, "After this Jesus, knowing that all things are now finished, that the scripture might be accomplished ("tetelestai" (NT:5055)) said, I thirst." Jesus asked for a drink, because, "They gave me vinegar to drink," in Psalm 69v21, was the last prophecy that Jesus had to fulfil before He died, and then He could say "It is finished." "It is finished," is "tetelestai" (NT:5055), exactly as in John 19v28. It is the perfect passive indicative of "teleo" (NT:5055), to bring perfectly to the intended goal, to carry through completely, to accomplish, to finish perfectly without a fault. Jesus had accomplished and perfectly fulfilled all that the Father had asked and desired Him to do in His life and ministry. What a stupendous achievement! He then "gave up ("paredoken") His spirit," John 19v30. Luke records it in Luke 23v46, as, "Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit," the last of the seven sayings of Jesus on the Cross.

When Jesus said "Father into thy hands I commend my spirit," it was the greatest act of courage there has been, no V.C. can match this for courage. Jesus was without His spirit, the mighty instrument that had channelled the Father's healing power and love to the multitudes, it had gone and He had to trust God without it, and the communion with His Father that it gave Him.

In Heb 13v5, the Greek text contains five negatives to drive home to our minds the promise that God our Father, our dear Lord Jesus, and the Holy Spirit will never, never, never, never, never forsake us, or fail us. Jesus experienced a forsaking that God's children will never know. In this most appalling and devastating of circumstances Jesus manifested perfect faith in the Father. Going as a prisoner to Hades in our place, took a gigantic act of faith, and involved the very worst kind of spiritual trial. What this cost the Father is not difficult to imagine, the great earthquake, the darkness at midday, the rending of the three inch thick solid veil of the Temple, give a revelation of the agonizing and distressing feelings of God the Father. Matt 27v45-55.

4) The soul anguish Jesus endured in Hades was the greatest that He suffered. Jesus endured a pain of soul, which was longer in duration, and was more intense, than his anguish in Gethsemane, and His agonies on the Cross. When the Lord Jesus spoke about the parable of the rich man and Lazarus, and the sufferings of Dives (Latin, rich man) on the other side of the great gulf, in the bad part of Hades; Jesus knew our sins were going to confine Him in the abyss, in the part of Hades where the wicked were imprisoned, with a great gulf between Him and the saints. Luke 16:19-31.

Jesus was forsaken by God, so that we might never be forsaken. As He suffered, He said, "I am the atoning Lamb, I am their sacrifice, I must go through for them." He suffered it all for us. Jesus was also in soul anguish in Hades in order to rescue all the Old Testament saints who rested in hope in Hades awaiting the coming of the Saviour. Acts 2v26, Heb 2v14,15.

"Behold The Man." "Behold The Lamb Of God."

We read in Zech 6v12, "Behold, the Man whose name is the BRANCH!" In John 19v6, Pilate desiring to excite sympathy in the crowd for Jesus, presented the brutalised and mutilated body of Jesus to them, and said "Behold the man," but the envious Jewish religious leaders were ferociously determined that Jesus should die, and demanded that Jesus should be crucified. John the Baptist, directed by the Holy Spirit, urged the first disciples of Jesus to, "Behold the Lamb of God! John 1v29,36. Let us also take heed to His words. The Church has largely failed to obey the command of Heb 3v1 and 12v3, to "Consider Jesus," and dwell on the glory and wonder of His victory over His humanity, and against implacable spiritual and human foes, and against great odds. **Let us obey the command, and truly "consider Jesus," and behold the dreadful bruising of the Lamb of God.**

The Glory And Victory Of Our Lord's Humanity.

The old Docetic Gnostic heresy, that Christ's body was not human but a phantom composed of celestial substance, is very present in the Church today in a new garb. Augustine's doctrine of "Original Sin" is responsible for this! When a person accepts and believes the Devil's lie that they "have been born in sin," and are incapable of living a good life, their minds are darkened and the mindset is created that if they have been born in sin, then the Lord Jesus can't have had a "like humanity," because He was without sin. **The fact is, that He was sinless is simply because He did not yield to the temptations of sin, no matter where they came from, and for no other reason! On the other hand, the rest of mankind have ALL yielded to the temptation of sin, so that Paul could write to the Rom 3v23, "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God".**

Some theologians state that Jesus was never really tempted like we are, in spite of the fact that Heb 4v15, definitely states that Jesus "was in all points tempted like as we are." They feel and teach that all Jesus had to do to solve His problems and do His miracles, was turn on His divine power and deity. This is a travesty of the truth, and completely hides the real Jesus from us. Jesus entered fully into the reality and limitations of our humanity. This is beyond any contradiction, undeniably confirmed by Heb 4v15, "For we have not a high priest who is unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but one who in every respect has been tempted as we are, yet without sin." When people say that Jesus was made differently to us, and His flesh and blood was different from ours, they preach Docetic Gnosticism and contradict the Scriptures, which state that Jesus was made in all points like us. Heb 2v17,18. "Therefore, in all things He had to be made like His brethren, that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, to make propitiation for the sins of the people. For in that He Himself has suffered, being tempted, He is able to aid those who are tempted." (NKJV)

NB The apostle John tells us in 1John 4v2,3, that if we deny Christ's humanity we "are not of God." We are told in 1John 4v2,3, that those who confess that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh are of God, but those who deny the humanity of Christ, and do not confess that Christ is come in the flesh are not of God, and, indeed, goes on to add that "this is the spirit of antichrist." This is much more than someone saying, "I believe that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh." It is a confession that Jesus is the Christ who fulfils the Old Testament prophecies. That is, Christ is Emmanuel, and born of a virgin, He is God with us. Isaiah 7v14. Jesus is "The Mighty God," who has existed from all eternity, and whose reign will be forever. Isaiah 9v6,7, 10v21, Micah 5v2, He is God the Word manifested in human flesh. John 1v14. He is the Yahweh, the Great I Am, who John Baptist prepared the way for. Isaiah 40v3-5. Christ is the Lord of our righteousness, the Saviour of the world. Jer 23v5,6. Christ is the God who is to come again, and His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives. Zech 14v3,4, Mal 3v1-3, Acts 1v11,12.

The person who is a true Christian and, "is of God," accepts what the Scriptures teach concerning the person of Jesus, His humanity and deity, and accept what He taught concerning eternal life, salvation, Heaven and Hell, and love and healing, etc. John tells us that those who deny the vital Scriptural Truths concerning Christ, are "antichrist," and "not of God". There are many false teachers about today, and Christians, particularly those who are young in the faith, need to store in their minds the Truths of the Scriptures about Jesus, so that they can give an answer to the active and ardent servants of the Devil. Those who know the Scriptures will be able to answer these false teachers, and may, with love, tact, and prayer, win them over to the Truth. I pray that this study will not only inform and teach Christians the vital Truths in God's Word about our dear Lord Jesus, but that they also may save many from the snares of false devilish doctrines, which damn and destroy the soul. 2Pet 2v1.

The leading Biblical scholars confirm the Truth of what I say about Christ's true humanity, and verify that the original Greek Scriptures teach that Jesus was tempted in all points exactly like we are, but without ever giving away to temptation and sin. Jesus conquered the flesh that has corrupted and led all mankind into sin, in a body exactly like our own. Rom 8v3, Heb 2v17,18. His victory over sin, not only condemned sin in the flesh, but also enables us to live in victory over sin, through the law of the spirit and life in Christ. Rom 8v1-4. Jesus partook of human flesh, but did not partake of the sins of the flesh; His holy life condemned sin in the flesh and showed that it was possible to live in victory over it. In Heb 2v16-18, we read that Jesus took on Him the seed of Abraham, and that it was a moral duty and obligation ("opheilen," the imperfect active indicative of "opheilo," to be obligated), for Him to be made in all points like to His brethren, and experience the same temptations, so that He could be our sympathetic High Priest. To be tempted in all points as we are, He had to be made in all points as we are. Heb 2v17 with 4v15. From the level of our humanity, Jesus conquered the world, the flesh, and the Devil, and the dreadful bruising of His body, soul, and spirit, and won healing for our bodies, souls and spirits. Blessed be His Name!

The Scriptures could not be more clear, or more emphatic, "by His bruise we are healed," Isaiah 53v5. In 1Pet 2v24, Peter, looking back at the Cross; affirms the prophetic fulfilment and Truth of Isaiah 53v5; he proclaims with tearful and heartfelt joy; "By His bruise you were healed." Peter remembered with great emotion, tears and love, the horrific suffering and bruising of His Lord. He knew from a deep personal experience how Jesus had purchased, forgiveness and healing, for himself and all mankind. Those who deny this great Truth, of the healing for body, soul and spirit, that flows from the Cross and death of Jesus, do so at their own great spiritual peril. Christ's bruised humanity, and His bruised life and death, are the foundation and cornerstone of the creation, and of all our Christian experience. We are healed by the awful bruising of His body, soul and spirit. Claim it, and proclaim it, with all your heart, soul, mind, and strength.

Conclusion.

The Living Bible translates Hos 4v6, "My people are destroyed because they don't know me, and it is all your fault, you priests, for you yourselves refuse to know me; therefore, I refuse to recognize you as my priests. Since you have forgotten my laws, I will 'forget' to bless your children."

In the days of Hosea God refused to recognise the priests who did not know Him, or tell the Truth about Him to the people of God. The same must be true today. God refuses to recognise preachers who do not live in communion with God, or fail to tell the Truth about God. This is no small matter, for God states that He will not bless apostate or backslidden preachers. John warns us in 1John 4v3, that those who deny our Lord's humanity are "not of God," and have the "spirit of antichrist."

Jesus castigated the religious leaders of Israel because they stopped people from having a real experience of God. We read in Luke 11v52, "Woe to you, lawyers (experts in the Mosaic Law)! For you have taken away the key to knowledge; you did not go in yourselves, and you hindered and prevented those who were entering." (Amplified Bible)

Barnes comments on Hos 4v6, "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge." "My people are," not, "is." This accurately represents the Hebrew. They are destroyed for lack of it, for the true knowledge of God is the life of the soul, true life, eternal life, as our Saviour saith, "This is life eternal, that they should know Thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom Thou has sent." (John 17v3) End of quote.

The Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown Commentary comments on Hos 4v6, "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge - literally, 'THE knowledge,' the only true and saving knowledge, the knowledge "of God" (Hos 4:1)." End of quote.

The Keil and Delitzsch Commentary comments on Hos 4v6., "The speaker is Jehovah: my nation, that is to say, the nation of Jehovah. This nation perishes for lack of the knowledge of God and His salvation. Hadda'ath (the knowledge) with the definite article points back to da'ath Elohiim (knowledge of God) in v1." End of quote.

So we can see that God states through the prophet Hosea, in Hos 4v6, "My people are destroyed (perish) for lack of the knowledge (of ME)." That is the lack of the correct knowledge about Jesus and the Father. It is vitally important to have a correct interpretation of the Scriptures about the character and love of God our Father, and the true humanity as well as the absolute Deity of Jesus. It is vitally important to have a true appreciation of the emotional as well as the physical sufferings

of Jesus, or we will fail to have the true and deep relationship with Jesus and the Father that they, and we, desire. If we fail to understand our Lord's humanity, we will not realise the extent of the sufferings of Jesus for us. A correct knowledge about Christ's humanity sets us spiritually free, it enables us to see the truly horrendous nature of His sufferings for us, and His matchless dedicated love for us. It enables us to see His great desire to make us whole in body, soul, and spirit, and to experience healing and wholeness through His great power and love.

Appendix 8: Looking Away Unto Jesus The Author And Perfecter Of Our Faith. (Heb 12v2).

The authorship of Hebrews.

Tertullian, one of the most learned writers of the second and third centuries ascribes Hebrews to Barnabus, however, it must be remembered that Tertullian was prone to being dogmatic, and this was undoubtedly one of His personal opinions; for this viewpoint was never widely accepted in Christendom, **and Hebrews was not received as the work of Barnabus either in Africa, Tertullian's country, or in Cyprus, the country of Barnabus.**

The epistle to the Hebrews was primarily and specially addressed to the Hebrews of the East, particularly those of Jerusalem and Palestine. The Christians there personally knew the author of the epistle, even though he did not append His name to the epistle, for we read in Heb 13v18,23, "Pray for us, for we are persuaded that we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly; but I beseech you the rather to do this, in order that I may be restored to you the sooner.... And again, know ye that our brother Timothy has been set at liberty, with whom, if he come soon, I will visit you."

The churches of Alexandria, Asia, Syria, Jerusalem, and Palestine, the people to whom the epistle to the Hebrews was primarily addressed, say that Paul wrote Hebrews. Cyril of Jerusalem attributes the epistle to Paul. Theodoret also states that Eusebius wrote that Paul was the author of the epistle to the Hebrews, **"and that all the ancients entertained this opinion concerning the authorship of the epistle."** **Jerome also confirmed that Paul was the author of Hebrews, he wrote, "All the Greek writers received it as His."** The Church at Antioch confirms the Pauline authorship of Hebrews, which was the centre from which Paul's missionary journeys originated by Divine commission and command. Chrysostom of Antioch and Constantinople, ascribes Hebrews to Paul, as do Theodore of Mopsuestia in Cilicia, of Paul's own country, and many other important witnesses. The Council of Nicea, 325 AD, and the Synod of Laodicea, 363 AD, received Hebrews as a genuine work of Paul.

The fact that Clement of Rome does not mention that Paul was the author of Hebrews, may simply be due to the fact that He respected Paul's desire and reasons for keeping the work anonymous, and did not desire to betray His personal and intimate friends confidence. Phil 4v3. The name of Paul was not only abhorrent to the Jews, it was anathema to the Judaizing Christians, and so Paul did not want an epistle specifically designed to help people from a Hebrew background, to be hindered from reading it by putting His name to the document.

Hebrews was also written to rouse sleepy Christians to seek the promises of heavenly blessings. (Eph 1v3).

Paul wanted to awake these sleepy Christians and make them realise that they were pilgrims and strangers in this world. As in 1Cor 10, Paul uses the Old Testament experiences of Israel passing from Egypt to Canaan to drive home His lessons. Abraham was an immigrant from Mesopotamia into Canaan, and Hebrews draws attention to the fact that like Him all Christians are pilgrims and strangers in this world. Although probably written primarily to Hebrew Christians familiar with the Old Testament and Temple worship, it is equally applicable to all who have a knowledge of the Old Testament. The epistle should be read in conjunction with the prison epistles of Paul, Ephesians, Philippians, and Colossians, which deal especially with the heavenly places, which the Christian is called to enter by conflict with the powers of darkness.

Christians are called to be a Royal Priesthood. (1Pet 2v9).

We read in Exodus 19v6, that God called Israel to be "a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation," but their sin frustrated this Divine desire. However, in Jesus Christians are made and called to be kings and priest to God. We read in Rev 1v6, "And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen." (KJV) And again, in Rev 5v10, Heaven declares of Christians, "And Thou hast made them {to be} a kingdom and priests to our God; and they will reign upon the earth." (NAS) We are called to be priests after the order of Melchizedek with Jesus our Great High Priest, and operate God's mercy gifts. This is a very great calling indeed.

Paul uses the picture of the games and competitors being encouraged to finish the race. (Heb 12v1).

Paul uses the example of the great saints; prophets and martyrs who had run well and finished their course with honour, praise and glory to inspire us to run well in the Christian race.

Paul's writes Hebrews to show that Jesus is the inspiration and cure for all the ills of our souls.

After considering the Old Testament heroes of faith and their magnificent victories of faith, Paul states that Jesus is not only the source of all faith and justification by faith, but that He is also the incentive of all Christian holiness. "Looking away" is, "aphorontes," the present active participle of "aphorao" to look away and to concentrate on another. If we desire to run well and win the race, we must look away into ("eis") all that Jesus was and is, His majestic life, character and sacrificial love. We must look away even from the greatest of Old Testament saints, and concentrate our gaze on Jesus our Lord. It is good to be inspired by the saints, but the inspiration they give in the up building of the soul, is limited. Jesus is God's Word to speak to the depths of our soul. If we desire victory in the Christian life, we must concentrate our gaze on Jesus.

Paul was also defending the Church from the Docetic Gnostics, who denied Christ's humanity. (Heb 2 all).

Both the apostle John and Paul realised the great danger that the acceptance of Gnostic doctrine would have on the Church, and wrote with the strongest words possible against it. John said that those who deny the humanity of Jesus are "not of God," and have the spirit of Antichrist. 1John 4v2,3, 2v18. This is a very present danger in the Church today, Docetic Gnosticism has invaded the Church again (through Augustine's doctrine of Original Sin); it has always been one of Satan's major weapons against the true knowledge of Christ Jesus.

Looking Away Into Jesus The Pioneer Of Faith. (Greek, "ton-archegon").

"Looking unto Jesus" is "aphorontes eis." "Aphorontes," is the present active participle of "aphorao" a verb meaning "to turn the eyes away from other things and fix them on something," it only occurs here and in Phil 2v23. "Unto," is "eis," into;" so, Paul exhorts us with the present continuous tense, to be actively and always "looking away," "eis" "into," and "unto Jesus."

The Greek word for "author," is "archegon." (NT:747). "Archegon" speaks of a chief, leader, prince, and of anyone who takes the lead in anything, a pioneer, a predecessor and example. "Archegon" occurs four times in the New Testament. In the Authorised Version it is twice translated in Acts, as "Prince;" in Acts 3v15, "And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses;" and Acts 5v31, "Him hath God exalted with His right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins. "Archegon" occurs twice in Hebrews, in the Authorised Version it is translated as "Captain," in Heb 2v10, "For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings." It is translated as "Author" in Heb 12v2, "Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before Him endured the Cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God."

Jesus the Pioneer and greatest Victor of faith.

After considering some of the great heroes of faith, the writer to the Hebrews, asks us to consider the greatest victor of faith, our Lord Jesus Christ; His faith was tried to the greatest extent, and He overcame all the trials and difficulties of His life and ministry with triumphant faith. Jesus is not only our example in holy and loving living; He is our example in believing God. Jesus pioneered the way of faith, He not only inspired the faith of all those great saints of old (even as He is the Inspirer of the Christian's faith), and He is also the most shining example of personal faith in God. The Scriptures state, "The just shall live by faith," Rom 1v17, Gal 3v11, Heb10v38. This was the experience of Jesus, throughout all His life; Jesus lived by faith, just as we should do. Jesus said in John 6v57, "As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me." **When Jesus did His miracles, He turned His faith on, NOT His deity.** In John 14v10, Jesus said the Father did the miracles, "Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works." We read in John 5v19, "Then Jesus answered and said to them, Most assuredly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He sees the Father do; for whatever He does, the Son also does in like manner." In John 5v30, Jesus stated, "I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me." Jesus walked in the Father's will, and His own great personal faith and love was the channel of the Father's power and mercy healing gifts.

Jesus The Pioneer Of Faith In Victorious Daily Living.

The life of Jesus at Nazareth was a triumph of faith, a life of faith in God His Father. Our Lord was not a protected hothouse plant; He conquered the pressures, problems, and temptations of life by sustained communion with God His Father. We read in Heb 2v17,18 and 4v15, that Jesus was "made in all points like unto His brethren," and was "tempted in all points like His brethren." Jesus was victorious, sinless and perfect, in childhood development, teenage temptations, and the temptations and trials of manhood, work and daily living. Luke 2v40-52. His life was continual manifestation of awe-inspiring wonderful faith.

Jesus Pioneered Faith In Victorious Education And Training By God!

The Need For preparation For Ministry.

Isaiah 49v1-3 and 50v3-6, show our Lord's preparation by God the Father. We need to follow His example of victorious preparation for service. In John 1v14 we see our Lord full of grace and truth. A triumphant victorious faith over the circumstances, spiritual darkness, and backslidden people of Nazareth. John 4v6. Nathanael was amazed that anything good could come out of the notoriously spiritually dark town of Nazareth, Nathanael knew well the evil state of Nazareth by personal experience, for he lived about nine miles away in Cana of Galilee. John 21v2. Jesus overcame the evil of Nazareth and lived the same perfect and beautiful life that He had lived in Heaven with the Father. John 1v46-51.

Our Lord's faith and purity triumphed over the spiritual darkness of Nazareth.

We read in Psalm 69v19-21, that Satan stirred up opposition against Jesus and got people, including His family, to criticise and mock Christ's life of prayer and fasting. Reproach broke His heart, He looked for sympathetic companions who would understand, and there was none. The soul loneliness of Jesus was horrific, His heart was broken, but He set His face like a flint and overcame it all through His Father's grace, and a determined faith in His Father's care and love. Isaiah 50v3-9, Luke 9v51, Heb 2v8,9. These awful problems at Nazareth were part of Christ's preparation and training by God His Father, for both His earthly ministry and His High Priestly ministry. The vicious reproach and persecution Jesus endured at Nazareth is revealed in Psalm 69v7-21, there was bitter rejection by His brothers and sisters. Mark 3v21, John 7v5. Town leaders criticised and mocked Jesus, and drunkards sang vile songs about Him. All this brought deep waters into the soul of Jesus. Psalm 69v14. The sinless and prayerful life of Jesus at Nazareth stirred up pitiless continual opposition against Him. We read in Psalm 69v8-12, "I have become a stranger to my brothers, and an alien to my mother's children; Because zeal for Your house has eaten me up, and the reproaches of those who reproach You have fallen on me. When I wept and chastened my soul with fasting, that became my reproach. I also made sackcloth my garment; I became a byword to them. Those who sit in the gate speak against me, and I am the song of the drunkards." Scholars say, "Your House," refers to God's children, not just the Temple.

In Isaiah 53v10-12, we read "He shall," five times, and "shall," three times. Jesus must have repeated these verses in faith and love many times in the dark nights of His soul, when Satan and men attacked Him. He lived on, and claimed, the precious promises of God His Father, just as we do. Jesus, like ourselves, had a sure and steadfast anchor of the soul, in the immutable, counsel and promises of God's Word, and His Father's unbreakable oath of confirmation. Heb 6v13-20.

From Mark 6v1-6, we see that Jesus had four brothers and at least three sisters, and they came to forcibly take Jesus home when Jesus upset Israel's religious leaders, and these leaders started to oppose and persecute Him. We read in Mark 3v21 and John 7v5 that Mary's other children did not believe in Jesus, and thought that He was mad, when He upset Israel's religious leaders. Mark 3v21,31-35. In Mark 3v21, "hoi para autou," "His family," means literally "those from the side of Him," a phrase used commonly in the Greek Septuagint Old Testament, to speak of a persons family and kinsfolk, and the mention of our Lord's family in Mark 3v31-35, confirms that it is referring to His family. They said, "He is beside Himself," "exeste," the aorist active indicative of "existemi," a charge which was made against Paul by Festus in Acts 26v24, he said that Paul's much learning had turned Him insane. Festus uses "maine," the present indicative of "mainomai," to be mad, to be out of one's mind. Paul stated that he was certainly not mad, but spoke words of truth and soberness, ("sophrosune," means a rational control and soundness of mind). It was the minds of Israel's religious leaders and Festus, which were controlled by the delusions of the Devil, and the madness of spiritual insanity.

The attack on Christ's faith and Sonship. (Matt 4v1-4).

When Satan tempted Jesus to turn the stones into bread, our Lord replied from Deut 8v3. The context speaks of discipline and training, and humbling and proving by trial. Our Lord was saying, "My faith is being tested and I believe God My Father." The discipline and testing of the wilderness proved our Lord's victorious faith.

Jesus The Pioneer Of Faith In Victorious Sanctifying Truth.

Jesus had inspired the prophets with Truth; He came down to live it. Jesus lived in worldly, carnal, and unspiritual Nazareth, the life of holiness and love He had lived in heaven. Wonderful Jesus!

Jesus had to believe God's Word when everything and everyone around Him denied it and rejected Him. Even Mary and Joseph had fallen into unbelief over the purpose of our Lord's ministry by the time that Jesus was twelve. We read in Luke 2v42-52, that they did not understand what Jesus meant when He said, "I must be about my Father's business."

We read in John 1v14, that the Lord Jesus came out of Nazareth full of grace and truth, fully equipped by the Father for the task that lay ahead of Him. We read in John 17v19, that our Lord sanctified Himself to do the Father's will, and that doing the will of God was His delight. Psalm 40v6-8, Heb 10v5-10. Jesus prayed in John 17v17, "Sanctify them through Your truth. Your Word is truth." He also states in John 7v17, "He who does the will of God shall know the doctrine." When you walk with God and live a life of love, Truth burns with light. Jesus lived a life of perfect love, and the Truth He perceived burned with life and energy in His heart and mind, and His words and sermons were filled with spirit and life. John 6v63.

Jesus had a faith that was energised by a life of perfect love. Gal 5v6. He lived out the more excellent way. 1Cor 12v31. He perfectly lived out the Word of God, and claimed, experienced, and demonstrated the sure promises of God. Jesus had a victorious conquering faith, which desired to do the Father's will and provide spiritual bread and healing of body and soul for others. Luke 11v9-13.

NB Trials through life's problems, that test our faith in God's Word, impart qualifications for ministry to us. Rom 5v1-5. Our Lord came out of Nazareth not just with an intellectual faith but a living experimental faith through tens of thousands of victories of faith over the problems, trials and temptations of life. Hallelujah.

Moffat accurately translates Isaiah 53v3, "a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief," as, "a man of pain who knew what sickness was." The Hebrew states that Jesus, "knew by personal experience sickness." Jesus experienced, and had personal victories of faith over the sicknesses that afflicted Him. In Isaiah 53v3, "sorrows," "makob," means, grief, pain; and in "acquainted with grief," grief is "choliy," disease. It is translated in the Authorised Version as "sickness," in Isaiah 38v9,12, Deut 7v15, 28v61, 1Kings 17v17, 2Kings 13v14, 2Chron 21v15,19, Psalm 41v3, Deut 28v59; as "disease," in 2Kings 1v2, 8v28,29, 1Chron 16v2, 21v18, Job 30v18, Psalm 38v7, Eccles 6v2; as sick in Isaiah 1v5. To be our perfect High Priest, Jesus had to be tempted in all points like ourselves, and this meant that He had to experience sickness. He really knows what we go through, He has personally experienced all the trials and temptations of life, and we are assured of His sympathetic understanding and merciful love, He has compassion and deals gently with those who are ignorant and are going astray. Heb. 5v2.

Jesus, The Pioneer Of Faith In Victorious Inspiring Grace.

Jesus calls us, and inspires us, to cast away every encumbrance and to run the race of life.

There is a vast cloud of witnesses to God's faithfulness. "Nephos marturon," is in the plural "Nephele" is a single cloud, "nephos," a vast mass of clouds. "Marturon," does not speak of mere spectators, which would be described by "theatai;" "marturon" speaks of witnesses who testify out of their own personal experience. Heb11v2,4,5,33,39.

Laying aside us, like the putting off of old clothes, Col 3v8. Runners ran nearly naked. Every weight that hinders, "ogkon panta." "And the sin which does so easily beset us." "Which doth so easily beset," is "euperistaton," it is derived from "eu," "well," and "peri," "around," and "statos," "standing," and so means easily encompassing, and describes the sinful environment of the world around us, and the difficulty to avoid its defiling influence. God recognises the difficulty of fighting against the defiling sin in our environment, and our personal fleshly and spiritual problems, but there is victory in Jesus. Rom 8v1-4.

Let us run, is, "trechomen," the present active, i.e.. let us keep on running, the race that is set before us. "With patience," is "di hupomones," with brave endurance, **NOT** with doubt, despair, self-criticism and impatience with ourselves.

Jesus experienced sickness and pain and had a great many victories of faith over them. Our Lord was tempted in all points like we are and this included sickness. In Job 2v4-7, Satan said that severe sickness is the greatest test of character, and God did not contradict Satan. It cannot be that Job was tempted more than our Lord, and is a more sympathetic person to those who are sick, because of it. Jesus is our perfect sympathetic High Priest; He was made perfect and complete by experiencing and suffering the problems of life, as well as His suffering and dying on the Cross. Heb 5v8. Our Lord had a victorious triumphant faith over sickness; He personally believed and proved the promises of divine healing.

The Keil & Delitzsch Commentary on the Old Testament, states of Isaiah 53v3, "He was despised and forsaken by men; a man of griefs, and well acquainted with disease; and like one from whom men hide their face: despised, and we esteemed Him not."..."Moreover, He was [mak'obowt (Heb 4341) 'iysh (Heb 376)], a man of sorrow of heart in all its forms, i.e.. a man whose chief distinction was, that His life was one of constant painful endurance."

NB Paul tells us to consider Jesus as the pioneer of faith.

He not only won the victory on the Cross; His whole life demanded constant endurance over painful trials. Jesus experienced a continuous and total victory of faith and love over all the trials that came against Him.

Jesus The Pioneer Of Faith In Ministry, And A Life Of Prayer.

Our Lord's ministry was the result of a life of prayer and communion with God the Father. His love for God and people drove Him to pray through for others. When Jesus began His ministry, He was so busy that daily manual labour was impossible. This was quite different from Paul at Corinth, Ephesus and Thessalonica. Jesus believed God for the material provision, not just for Himself, but also for: The twelve apostles; the faith of Jesus had to provide for them for 3½ years. Luke 22v35. God provided for Jesus and the twelve apostles through women of substance. Luke 8v1-3. And also, "The Seventy", the thirty-five bands of preachers. Luke 10. Jesus believed for them, and gave them authority.

Looking Away Into Jesus The Perfecter Of faith.

In Heb 12v2, Paul coins the word, "teleiotes" (NT:5051) (seemingly from "teleio" (NT:5048)), it means, "Perfecter", one who brings us to the goal, (the Latin Vulgate has "Consummator"). In Heb 12v3, "consider," is "analogisasthe," the aorist imperative of "analogizomai" (NT:357), to reckon up, to compare, to weigh, it only occurs here in the New Testament. In Heb 3v1, "consider" is "katanoesate," the aorist imperative of "katanoeo" (NT:2657), a compound verb, from "kata" (NT:2596) down, and "nous" (NT:3563) mind, and so means, to put the mind down on a thing, as in Matt 7v3 and Luke 12v24. These Hebrew Christians are exhorted to think hard about Jesus as their Apostle and High Priest, and not to give way to the temptation to give Jesus up, and backslide from the grace of God. Jesus can, and will, perfect our faith if we follow Him. This is the only place in the New Testament where Jesus is called an apostle, "apostolos" (NT:652) though the verb "apostello" (NT:649) is often used of God's sending Him forth. See John 17v3. "Profession" is "homologia" (NT:3671) from "homologeo" (NT:3670) which is from "homou" (NT:3674) same and "logos" (NT:3056) say, and so, to say the same thing, to agree, to confess, to profess. Fixing the mind and heart on Jesus, and confessing the Truth about Him is the cure for spiritual weariness, doubt and fear.

Jesus is the example of perfect patient endurance.

Jesus endured the Cross. "Hupemeinen," the aorist active indicative of "hupomeno" (NT:5278) to patiently and bravely endure, a triumphant endurance. "Prokeimenes," the present participle, "the laying before Him joy", this joy was the joy of seeing us saved and blessed. **Jesus endured the Cross for us, not for self glory, or exaltation and praise by others. The motive was pure love for us.**

Jesus endured the shame of the Cross; "stauros." "Shame," is "aischune" (NT:152) shame, disgrace. "Despised it," is "kataphronesas," the aorist active participle of "kataphroneo" (NT:2706) to think down on something, here with the thought of despising, and treating as contemptible the shame and disgrace of the Cross. He treated the shame of the Cross with contempt, but not you; He endured it all for you.

Jesus endured the contradiction of sinners. Heb 12v3. In "endured the contradiction of sinners", "endured, is "hupomemenekota," the perfect active participle of "hupomeno" (NT:5278) the perfect shows the abiding effect of Christ's redemptive sufferings and brave endurance. "Contradiction" is "antilogian" (NT:485) a hostile and vicious speaking against. In "lest you be weary," weary is "kamete," the aorist active subjunctive of "kamno" (NT:2577) to be weary, or as in James 5v15, to be weary and exhausted through sickness. In "fainting in your souls," "fainting" is "ekluomenai," the present passive participle of "ekluo" (NT:1590) which mean to loosen out, to be set free, but in the passive it means to be tired out, or enfeebled.

The Throne of Authority Jesus sits on. In Heb 12v2, "Sat down at the right hand of God", is "kekathiken," the perfect active indicative of, "kathizo" (NT:2523) to take one's seat and sit down. The perfect tense shows that Jesus is still there at the throne of infinite power and authority, to perfect the believer's faith. "Consider," is "analogisasthe," the aorist middle imperative of "analogizomai" (NT:357) to reckon up, count up, to consider, to compare and weigh, it can also speak of meditation. It only occurs here in the New Testament.

Jesus is the perfect Perfecter of faith.

As we have seen, "teleiotes," "Perfecter", is one who brings to the goal. In Heb 5v9 we read, "And being made perfect, He became the Author of eternal salvation to all those that obey Him." "Perfect," is "teleiotheis," the aorist passive participle of "teleio" (NT:5048) to complete, to perfect. Jesus perfected faith in: In the woman at the well; in the dying thief; in Peter; in Paul, etc, etc.

Jesus will perfect our faith, transfigure us, and conform us to His image. We read in 2Cor 3v18, that as we behold the glory and beauty of God our Father and the Lord Jesus, we are transfigured from glory to glory by the Spirit of God. Beholding the glorious Trinity changes us, and perfects our faith and love. The power of the Holy Spirit, Communion with God our Father, and contemplation of Jesus transfigures us.

We read in Rom 8v28-39:

"And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose. For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, and these He also glorified. What then shall we say to these things? If God is for us, who can be against us? He who did not spare His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things? Who shall bring a charge against God's elect? It is God who justifies. Who is he who condemns? It is Christ who died, and furthermore is also risen, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.

Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written: "For Your sake we are killed all day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter." Yet in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." (NKJV)

Before creation God the Father knew who would truly respond to the Gospel call, and He set His mind to conform us to the image of the Lord Jesus. Nothing can separate us from God's love and His eternal purposes for us. Jesus came into the world with a totally unselfish magnificent desire to save us, and share with us the eternal riches and blessings of the kingdom of God. Jesus will perfect our faith and love and bring us to His everlasting kingdom.

Paul Warns Us About Failing Under Discipline And Life's Trials. (Heb 12v3-17).

Jesus is the cure for weariness and fainting under opposition. Heb 12v3-15. Jesus was victorious in His conflict with Satan and evil men. We read in Heb 12v3 that Jesus bravely endured the violent and vicious verbal abuse and opposition of sinful men. "Endured," is "hupomemenekota," the perfect active participle of the same verb "hupomeno" (NT:5278) which is used in Heb 12v2, of our Lord's brave and triumphant endurance of the Cross. A prayerful consideration of Our Lord's determined bravery will keep us from weariness ("kamno" (NT:2577) as in James 5v15), fainting and enfeeblement. The bitter hostility and hatred did not quench His faith in God or zeal for God. Jesus conquered by faith.

Jesus the cure for fainting and weariness under discipline. Heb 12v5-11. We read in Deut 8v5, that God chastens us as sons, for "chastening," in Heb 12v5, is "paideias," from "paideia" (NT:3809) to train a child, instruction, see 2Tim 3v16, "instruction in righteousness." The primary thought is the instruction, training, and development of character, which is given to children. God is conforming His dearly beloved children to the image of Jesus, and this sometimes means, as with a child, that there is the necessity of gentle reprimand, rebuke, and even punishment. Rom 8v28-34. In Col 3v21, Paul warns fathers, that excessive discipline can discourage children and hinder the growth of personality and character. See also Eph 6v4. The thought behind "paideia," is of instructive discipline not punishment. Our Lord personally experienced temptation and "training as a child," in His time of preparation for His ministry at Nazareth, and when Satan tempted Him in the wilderness, and on many other occasions too. The discipline proved His Sonship, and matured His personality, for we read in Heb 5v8, that our Lord was "made perfect through suffering."

Problems and pressure produce character as 1Pet 1v3-7 tells us, "the trial of our faith is much more precious than gold." When Jesus experienced the many trials of His faith at Nazareth, He undoubtedly said to Himself, what He tells us to say, "these trials are more precious than gold." His faith triumphed over them. Jesus was a victorious pioneer of faith.

Feeble knees and faint hands in the body of Christ should be encouraged onward by the loving ministrations of the church, and the direction to look to our sympathetic Saviour, who has been through it all, and conquered. Heb 12v12,13.

Jesus is the cure for a defiling root of bitterness. Heb 12v15. In Deut 29v18, we read of "a root of bitterness," and here it speaks of departure from God. Bitterness is "pikria" (NT:4088). The departure from the living God is here manifested in two ways.

Carnality and impurity; any fornication v16. "Pornos" (NT:4205) immoral.

Worldly-mindedness and despising of sacred and eternal things. "Profane," is "bebelos" (NT:952) a despiser of sacred things, an irreligious person. 1Tim 1v9, 4v7, 6v20, 2Tim 2v16.

Bitterness against God produces a bad life. We are warned that a large number of believers, and even the majority of believers, like the Israelites, can be infected with bitterness, unless great care is taken. Contemplation of Jesus is the cure.

NB The warning of Esau. Esau lost His birthright and blessing through carnality; we can lose our inheritance if we are not careful. Heb 12v16,17. The blessing was gone and had been given to another. We can lose our place in the kingdom by similar carnality and worldliness. Contemplation of Jesus is the cure for the Esau spirit.

Meditating and feeding on Jesus, and His living Truth, is the cure for all the ills of our souls.

"Consider" in Heb 12v3, is "analogisasthe" (NT:357) to reckon up, to count up, to consider, it includes the thought of meditation. In John 6v51-71, Jesus informs us that it is vitally necessary for us to eat His flesh and drink His blood; He means that we must meditate upon His life and words, to grow spiritually strong. Judas never fed his soul with a heart relationship with Jesus. Judas hardened his heart, and refused to turn from his evil ways, even after Jesus had fed the five thousand, walked on the water, stilled the storm, and miraculously transported the boat from the middle of the lake of Galilee to the shore. Judas failed to feed on Jesus and His words, and so his soul shrivelled and died spiritually, and he started to slander Jesus, and then betrayed Him. John 6v1-71, Matt 26v15,16. Meditate upon Christ's words of spirit and

life, and you will have His life in you. The depths of your soul will be inspired, fed, and filled with Jesus, and changed by the living Word of God, and you will be transfigured from glory to glory, by beholding the beauty and splendour of His majestic being. 2Cor 3v18. The gentle humility and loveliness of Jesus invite us to come to Him, and we will find rest and rejuvenation for our souls. Matt 11v28-30.

In Heb 6v1, Paul pleads with us to allow God's gale of the Spirit to propel us along to maturity. We are to walk with God and be diligent in spiritual matters, and seek for God's "enabling" to carry us forward, and not rely on self-effort. We read in Heb 6v1, "Therefore leaving the elementary doctrine of Christ, let us be borne on to maturity. No longer babes on milk, but mature adults, able to eat solid spiritual food, and able to comprehend the deeper truths about Jesus." The translations, "let us go on", or "press on", to perfection, gives the idea that the effort is ours. However, "pherometha," the present subjunctive passive of "phero" (NT:5342) literally means, "let us be borne on to completeness, or maturity". We must rely on God's enabling grace and power, and not on our human efforts. We must put up our sails by communion with God, and let the gale of the Spirit blow us on.

The Scriptures teach that the prophets were impelled and borne along by the mighty energies of the Holy Spirit.

We read in 2Pet 1v20,21, "Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet's own interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin, or came, by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved ("pheromenoi," the present passive participle of "phero" (NT:5342), AMP "borne along, moved and impelled;" Phillips "inspired," NIV "carried along") by the Holy Spirit." "Moved" is the same verb as "came," it literally means, "being borne along." It is a favourite word with Peter, occurring six times in his two epistles. 1Pet 1v13, 2Pet 1v17,18,21, 2Pet 2v11. It speaks of someone being powerfully spoken to, and carried along, by God, and as a result being mightily used by God.

We are to be blown along by God like a sail ship before a mighty wind. The spiritual impetus comes from God.

"Phero" (NT:5342) is used in Acts 27v15,17, to describe the ship in which Paul was on being "borne along" ("epherometha," the imperfect passive of "phero"), and "driven," ("epheronto," the imperfect passive again) before the mighty wind.

In Acts 2v2, "phero" (NT:5342) is used in the present participle, passive voice, to describe the "rushing" sound of a mighty wind, literally, a mighty wind borne along violently, ("hosper pheromenes proes biaias"). We read in Acts 2v2, "And suddenly there came an echoing sound out of heaven as of a mighty wind borne along violently. And it filled ("eplerosen") the whole house where they were sitting." ("Echos" (NT:2279) our echo, is used in Luke 4v37 for "rumour," and Luke 21v25, for the last days "roaring of the sea.") The Pythagorean Schools used "pherometha" in the sense of being carried on to a higher stage of instruction, but this Scripture goes much further than mental instruction, it speaks of a deep experience of the mighty energies of God.

God, through Paul, urges us to put up our sails, and allow ourselves to be borne along in the gale of the Spirit to maturity, to an experience of Jesus as our great High Priest. Heb 5v10-6v1. "Unto perfection," is "epi ten teleiotes," from "teleios" (NT:5049) mature, adults, as in Heb 5v14; it only occurs twice in the New Testament, here in Heb 6v1, and Col 3v14. The writer appeals to us to leave Christian babyhood, and go on to be mature adult Christians, who are able to masticate solid spiritual food, and able to comprehend the deeper Truths about Jesus. Paul assures and promises us that the Divine energisings and powerful transforming and enabling gale of the Holy Spirit will impel and carry us along to Christian maturity and Christ-like character. See 2Cor 3v17,18, "Now the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. And we all, with unveiled face, beholding the glory of the Lord, are being transfigured into his likeness from one degree of glory to another; for this comes from the Lord who is the Spirit." Beholding the glory of Jesus will transfigure our lives, so let us look to and into Jesus, who will inspire and perfect our faith and character.

"That they also might be sanctified through the truth." (John 17v19).

Paul's primary purpose (in Hebrews) was to reveal the Truth about the person of Jesus.

Paul revealed vital Truths about the person of Jesus in order to correct wrong ideas and dangerous error about Him. Paul, when writing to different Churches, to refute error within them, does not give elaborate details about what the error is, but simply states the Truth on that particular issue. So in the first and second chapters of Hebrews, we are greeted with the greatest refutation, within the New Testament, of any error regarding the true deity and real humanity of the Lord Jesus. Even the very important passage in Phil 2v5-11, which deals with the "emptying," (Greek, "ekenosen" the aorist active indicative of "kenoo" (NT:2758)) of the Lord Jesus at His Incarnation, does not have the same amount of detail. **There can be no doubt that Hebrews 1 and 2, contain an outstanding revelation of the deity and humanity of the Lord Jesus, and God intended that they should have a special impact upon the soul, spirit and mind of the believer, and prepare them to enter their Heavenly Canaan and to be priests after the order of Melchizedek.**

The Difficulty Of Feeding The Unwilling. (Heb 5v11-6v20).

A child with normal feeding should leave its milk diet and take to solid food suitable for an adult. The talk that is to follow about Melchizedek is solid food, which demands chewing. Will his hearers be able to follow it? By milk, Paul, means the Foundation Truths or A. B. C. of Christianity, which must first be learned before anything else is attempted.

IMPORTANT NOTE: A pastor's first priority is to make sure that his flock is fully instructed in these fundamental doctrines!

Nothing can be done with those who in the light of full understanding and experience decide to go back and give up their faith. For them, there only waits the fire of judgement. Heb 10v26-39, 2Pet 2 and Jude. Determination, faith and patience are necessary if we are to obtain the promises of God, which He has confirmed by His oath, so that the hope of Heaven is, as it were, the anchor on the shore, to which the ship attaches its rope that it may ride out the storm.

NB1 The Bible Speaks Of Three Assurances. Of hope, Heb 6v11; of faith, Heb 10v22, and of understanding. Col 2v1, worth "a great conflict."

NB2 All Sons of God should expect by right reading of the Word of God to arrive at the stature of being able to instruct others. This, however, demands determined and diligent prayer and Bible study. Eph 4v11, 1Cor 12v28, Psalm 1 all.

NB3 The Seven Foundation Truths Are (Heb 6v1,2):

Repentance from the things, which a man who is dead to God does, and the choice to live in the presence of a Living God.

Faith towards God, which God counts as righteousness. Being justified by faith we have peace with God.

Baptism in Water and:

Baptism in Spirit, which followed the New Birth as soon as possible.

The Laying on of Hands, which a young convert would see in church meetings from their first attendance. In sickness, and in seeking the Baptism and ministries of the gifts.

Resurrection of the Dead, without which life has no meaning.

Eternal Judgement, after which our place in the Kingdom of Heaven is finally settled, if we are saved, or Hell if we are lost.

NB4 Some would teach that Heb 6v4-8 and Heb 10v20-36, are descriptions of an unbeliever, who was never born again. An unprejudiced reading of these verses however will soon convince us that such words could never be applied to an unbeliever, who certainly do not "taste the powers of the age to come," nor are sanctified by the blood of Jesus.

NB5 There is no statement that God ever refuses forgiveness to the repentant, for God will always forgive the repentant (Psalm 136 (all), John 6v37, 1Tim 2v4, 2Pet 3v9); the trouble is that men, like Satan and the powers of darkness, absolutely refuse to repent. The eternal security of John 10, describes the eternal security of those who follow the Good Shepherd, against external foes. The will of men remains eternally "free." Rev 22v11-12,17. A gift can be thrown away. Heb 10v35.

The Order Of Melchizedek. (Heb 7-10).

It is amazing to find that "the order of Melchizedek" of which Christ is High Priest, was instituted long before the Aaronic Priesthood, but so far as we know, was not in operation until Christ Jesus revived it after the resurrection. The Genesis passage (Gen 14v1-24) should be read together with John 8v56, Luke 22v19,20, Psalm 110v1. Hebrews 7 and 8 are taken up with showing the shortcomings of the Aaronic Priesthood, which necessitated a better one being raised up. The Melchizedek priesthood is eternal; the Aaronic priesthood was a temporary part of the Law. We read in Heb 8v13, "In speaking of "a new covenant," he has made the first one obsolete. And what is obsolete and growing old will soon disappear." (NRSV)

Hebrews 9 and 10 point out that, although the old Law and Priesthood were insufficient, yet, as coming events cast their shadows before, so all the details of the old were typical of the good things to come in the new. In asking the Jewish Christians to give up the Temple and its Aaronic God-ordained ministry of Priests and Levites and sacrifices, Paul is careful to point out not only the ineffectiveness of the Old Covenant. Acts 13v39, 15v10, Gal 2v16, Rom 8v4; but also the vast superiority of the Christian Priesthood, which resumed the Melchizedek order, so that they might be willing to exchange the Jewish shadow for the Christian substance. Rev 14v17, 15v5,8.

NB1 It is amazing that the Melchizedek order, like all the Christian Blessings, went back to Pre-Jewish Days. e.g. Circumcision John 7v22, justification by faith. Rom 4v1-3. Here the Christian breaking of bread is seen to date back to the days of Abraham (Gen 14v18). Both Melchizedek and Abraham knew the significance of the bread and wine. Possibly it was at this very meeting when Abraham was tempted to fall as Lot did, into close and profitable fellowship with the king of Sodom (Gen 19v1), that John 8v56 was fulfilled and Abraham had explained to him the coming sacrifice of God's Son at Calvary and His resurrection. If so, then Heb 11v17-19 receives fresh light. The God, who was going to raise His own Son from the dead after he was killed by evil men, could also raise Isaac!

Abraham's meeting with Melchizedek was no chance meeting. Melchizedek came to strengthen Abraham in an hour of trial. The fact that Abraham gave him tithes shows that he recognised his superior authority and dignity. He was received by Abraham as the messenger of the most High God.

NB2 Lot, who had already moved towards Sodom for the sake of earthly prosperity. Lot had been shown that he would be safer with Abraham, now adds this terrible sin of accepting what Abraham had just refused. When we next come across him he is in an official position in Sodom in spite of his dislike for their dreadful ways. So he ruined his wife and family and ended up in abject fear in a cave! Gen 19, 2Pet 2v7. The admonition and exposition of Melchizedek found no lodging place in his heart. How deep and grievous was the breach between uncle and nephew is seen by the fact that Abraham, when praying for Sodom, never took his appeal below ten souls, and never mentioned Lot's name to the Lord. So far as we know the breach was final and irremediable. If Abraham is a type of the overcomer, Lot certainly reminds us of those who suffer loss and are saved through fire. 1Cor 3.

NB3 Theologians have found it difficult to decide who Melchizedek was or what the description of Heb 7v2,3 means.

Three main theories are held:

That it was Christ Himself: but it is difficult to believe that he lived on earth as king of Salem.

That it was an angelic being who was sent upon earth by God as a kind of counter blast to Satan's wicked angels.

That he was a man, about whom the Scriptures left out all details, and made him in this way a type of Christ. We see that Heb 7v3 could then mean that Melchizedek was a mere nobody of whose birth and death no one was sufficiently interested to leave any record. We can imagine a godly king being as despised in those days as he might be now.

Salem means "peaceful." It is the name of a place linked with Melchizedek as its king. Gen 14v18, Heb 7v1,2. See Psalm 76v2. The main identification of Salem according to Jewish commentators, from Onkelos (Targum) and Josephus (War, 6, 10; Ant. 1, 10, 2; 7; is that Salem is Jerusalem, on the ground that in Psalm 76v2, Jerusalem is so called. However, the Samaritans have always identified Salem with Salim, East of Nablus. Jerome states without hesitation, though he was apparently alone in his belief, that the Salem of Melchizedek was not Jerusalem, but a town near Scythopolis, which in his day was still called Salem, and where the vast ruins of the palace of Melchizedek were still to be seen. There can be no doubt that a Salem existed where Jerome places it, for a Salem is mentioned in Judith 4v4, among the places which were seized and fortified by the Jews on the approach of "The valley of Salem," as it appears in the Apocrypha, this Salem must surely be that mentioned by Jerome.

"Without father, without mother, without genealogy "apator, ameter, agenealogetos." There is no record concerning his parentage, or his genealogy. This indicates a totally different type of priesthood from the Levitical, in which genealogy was most important. No one could exercise priestly functions who was not of the lineage of Aaron. The phrase, "Having neither beginning of days nor end of life," does not mean that he was a miraculous being, without birth or death; it in all probability means that history is silent concerning his birth and death. This could mean that the pedigree of Melchizedek was of no consequence, and his parentage did not count in any way, and so they never troubled to keep a genealogy. In this way he would be like our Melchizedek, the Lord Jesus, whose parents were nobodies and whose occupation was despised. All priests of this Melchizedek Order seem to be despised and rejected by worldly people. **When Jesus became High Priest of this order by being raised by God His Father from the dead, He created a heavenly Brotherhood of the Kings and Priests of the Most High God.**

NB4 The faulty nature of the Aaronic Priesthood was shown:

By the inability of law to perfect man. Rom 8v4.

By the faulty character of the Priests. Luke 3v2, Heb 2v27.

By the death of the Priests who could not continue to do their good work.

By God's mention of a new covenant, which should supersede the old.

NB Christian tithing is not authorised by Abraham's tithes to Melchisedec.

Systematic tithing is certainly not authorised or justified by appealing to the tithe that Abraham gave to Melchizedek about 430 years before the Law. Gen 14v18-20, Heb 7v1-11. NB v4. This tithe was almost certainly given to Melchizedek to give him some financial security; however, it was a voluntary once only gift. We also need to remember that Abraham's tithe was not a tenth of his wealth; it was a single gift of "the tenth of the spoils" of victory in war. In Heb 7v4, "the spoils," is "akrothinion" (from "akrothinion" (NT:205)) which means, "the top of the heap of spoils." Melchizedek had the first choice of a tenth of the best of the spoils. Abraham obtained these spoils through a miraculous military defeat of the four kings who attacked Sodom and captured Lot. One king was Amraphel king of Shinar (Babylon), who has been identified as the great king and renowned law-maker Hammurabi, whose "Hammurabi Code" was a landmark in history, for it not only stated legal rights and responsibilities, it also fixed the rates of wages. There was also the great and famous Chedorlaomer king of Elam, and Arioch king of Ellasar (Larsa), and Tidal king of Goiim, usually rendered as "nations." Abraham won a miraculous victory over the vastly superior forces of these four kings and successfully rescued Lot out of their hands. Gen 14v5-20. Those who use Abraham's tithe to Melchizedek to demand tithes, must realise that this would mean that we would only have to give tithes of the spoils of victory in war, and then only once!

(See Appendix 6 "The Evil Seed Of A Perverted And Unscriptural Emphasis On Tithing," in the study "The Epistle To The Hebrews" at www.truthforthelastdays.com)

NB Christian tithing is not authorised by the tithes that Jacob gave to God.

Jacob promised to give God tithes of all that God had promised to give him after the wonderful vision of the ladder to Heaven at Bethel. Gen 28v11-22. This again was a voluntary gift, and not demanded by God. Jacob obviously used this tithe to minister to the poor and needy people that he came across in his travels, for there was no Levitical priesthood to support; Jacob himself was the spiritual head of his family. There is no record that Jacob gave tithes to the successors of Melchizedek, indeed, according to Heb 7v1-3, Melchizedek had no genealogy, and his priesthood was confined to himself.

NB5 The Old Testament shadow of the New Testament Substance.

Each part of the Tabernacle spoke of some part of the work of Christ for us:

Brazen altar - Christ's atoning death.

Laver - Christ's sanctification of us.

Shewbread - Christ's teaching of us.

Lamp stand - Christ's gifts of the Spirit for us.

Table of Incense - Christ's intercessions and interventions for us.

The Golden Pot - Christ's decent from Heaven.

The Tables of Law - Christ's sermon on the Mount.

Aaron's Rod - Christ's resurrection.

The veil Rent - Christ's Human Body Torn Apart.

The blood of Bulls - The Blood of God's Son.

The Contrast: An Unsatisfied Conscience After Many Sacrifices; A Satisfied Conscience By Christ's ONE Sacrifice.

Psalms 40v6-8 had foretold the passing away of the old sacrifices and the bringing in of the real will of God, "mine ear hast thou opened," Isaiah 50v4-6 this looked forward to the time when the Son of God would possess an earthly ear, which needed to hear and accept obediently, tidings, which might well have been rejected. Matt 26v39. So great is the penalty that has been paid for our sins that we are able to believe that God will allow us to enter even the Holy Places of Heaven trusting in its efficacy, which is pleaded by our High Priest at the Father's side. Rom 8v32. It was in the faith of His resurrection that Christ sanctified Himself for this Heavenly Priesthood in John 17 (esp. v19), and explained His ascension "for us" in John 16v7.

Appendix 9: Looking For And Hastening The Coming Of The Day Of God.

It has been the consensus amongst Christians for many centuries that they individually or collectively can do absolutely nothing to hasten the coming of the day of God. However, it is the complete opposite that is true, 2Peter 3v12 states:

"Looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be dissolved, being on fire, and the elements will melt with fervent heat?" (NKJV)

"Hastening" is in Greek, "speúdontas," the present active participle (accusative also) of "speúdo" (NT:4692), which means "to speed" i.e.. urge on (diligently or earnestly); by implication, to await eagerly, (make, with) haste unto, to cause something to happen soon, to hurry up. Archbishop Trench, in his work "The Authorized Version of the New Testament" makes the following comment:

"...Hastening on;" i.e.. "causing the day of the Lord to come more quickly by helping to fulfill those conditions without which it cannot come; that day being no day inexorably fixed, but one the arrival of which it is free to the church to hasten on by faith and by prayer."

Both "looking for" and "hastening" in the Greek are in the present continuous tense (active voice), which shows that each individual believer **MUST** keep praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793), both of which have the meaning, "to make "interventions" (with power) so as to affect a change in the circumstances.") and watching for the signs of the Lord's Second Coming to appear and to keep it up until He actually comes in great power and glory to destroy the wicked and to take His people home. Luke v17v20-18v8 (esp. 18v1), Luke 21v36 (RSV), Rev 5v1-14 (esp. v8), 8v2-6 (esp. v3,4).

With this in mind, each individual believer can by praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "enteuxis" (NT:1783), which mean, "to make "interventions" (with power) so as to affect a change in the circumstances.") hasten the coming the day of God. The following seven **NBs** contain the thoughts and great desires that are upon God's heart at this present time that He is seeking His Church to pray ("proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793)) into being and so to quicken the coming of the day of God.

NB1: As the last seven years (the 70th week of Daniel's 70 week prophecy, Daniel 9v20-27) of this Age (the Age of Grace) rapidly approaches, especially the last three and a half years of this Age (the period known as The Great Tribulation, Dan 9v27, Matt 24v15-28, Rev 7v9-17), the Devil is busy endeavouring to put his evil servants into positions of power and authority; wicked people who will put the Devil's and Antichrist's evil plans into operation (which is to kill as many people (both believers and non-believers) and destroy as much as possible, before they themselves are destroyed at Christ's Second Coming by being consumed by the breath of His mouth, 2Thess 2v8). It is during the last three and a half years of this Age, that the Mystery of Lawlessness (the Devil's evil plan) will work fully; which will be the result of the Devil and his evil Angels being expelled from the Heavenly places by Michael and his Angels into the Earth, and God's restraint upon the Devil and the powers of darkness being completely removed, hence The Great Tribulation will begin, which should be pointed out is due to the "great wrath of the Devil, because he knows that he has a short time," and **NOT** the wrath of God. Rev 12v7-17 (esp. v 12), 2Thess 2v1-12.

The Devil will then proceed to put his evil plan (the Mystery of Lawlessness) into operation through Antichrist and other evil persons, whom he has put into positions of power and authority (Matt 4v8-10, Rev 13v1-10, 16v12-16), so it is **NOW** most vital, that we, the believers, are obedient to this most important injunction made by Paul in 1Timothy 2v1-8 (with Rom 13v1-7), to make "interventions" (with power) ("proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793), 1Tim 2v1), (for and against) "for all men, for kings and all who are in authority," that God will put honest, upright, wise, godly and compassionate persons into places of power and authority, and thwart the Devil's attempts to put his own evil servants into these places; for it is the Most High Who rules in the kingdom of men and gives it to whomsoever He wishes, and sets over it the lowest of men. Daniel 4v17.

NB2: Rev 12v6,14 states:

"And the woman fled into the wilderness, where **she hath a place prepared of God**, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days...And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that **she might fly into the wilderness, into her place**, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent."

This group of specially prepared Christians (that flee from Antichrist in Jerusalem and the surrounding area) is definitely said to have a place prepared by God for them to escape to at the beginning of the Great Tribulation; it is **MOST** important that Christians should pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) **NOW**, for God to prepare the areas of Edom, Moab and Ammon ("the wilderness" that is referred to in Rev 12v14 and which are situated in the eastern part of modern day Jordan) to be ready to receive this "glorious woman" at the beginning of the Great Tribulation. Christians firstly should invoke the following covenant names in the heavenly places over these three areas (and modern day Jordan), Yahweh Tsabaoth, the Lord of Hosts (1Sam 17v45, Psalm 46v7,11), and Yahweh Jireh, the Lord Who See and Provides (Gen 22v14), that these areas will know continuous angelic protection from this time forth, right up until the second coming of the Lord Jesus, but especially during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, and that **ALL** things will be **FULLY** "prepared" by "the Lord Who Sees and Provides" for His people. Secondly, Christians should also impart the divine benediction by using the priestly blessing of Numbers 6v22-27 upon Edom, Moab, Ammon and modern day Jordan. If Christians pray like this **NOW**, these areas of Edom, Moab and Ammon, will most certainly be **FULLY** prepared and protected by God, to receive His people at the beginning off the Great Tribulation, so that they are fed, kept, guarded and protected right up until the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus. **NOTE:** Rev 5v8, "...which are the prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335), "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") of saints." 2Pet 3v12. (We see in Rev 4 and 5, the preliminaries in Heaven just before the seals are opened, that is, before the events of the last seven years of this Age start to come to pass (Daniel's Seventieth prophetic week, Dan 9v27). The seven seals reveal Satan's evil plans for the world during the last seven years of this age. Paul calls Satan's plans "the mystery of iniquity." 2Thess 2v7. The seals reveal

the major catastrophic stages of the career of Antichrist from the time when he makes the covenant, until the great day of the wrath of the Lamb brings his evil career to a close. It is the "prayers of the saints" (Rev 5v7,8) that precipitates God the Father to invite the Lord Jesus to take the Book out of His right hand so as to loose the seven seals thereof to bring to pass the last seven years of this age. Dan 9v27, 6v1-17, 8v1)

NB3: We read in Matt 9v37,38:

"Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, **but the labourers are few**; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, **that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.**"

It is also most essential for Christians (especially those Christians in Israel) to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") **NOW** for God to raise up the Two Witnesses, and other Christians whom He will set in the Body of Christ with the same level of power and authority as the Two Witnesses. We **MUST** also pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) for God to give these "labourers" the same kind of power and authority that He gave unto the prophet Elijah (1Kings 17v1-21v29, 2Kings 1v1-2v11 Dan 11v32, Rev 11v3-6), and then to "send them forth into His harvest." It is also a necessity for us to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) for God to fulfil such prophecies and promises, as those stated in Rev 11v3-6 and Zech chapter 4, but especially the wonderful promise and prophecy that He spoke through His servant Malachi in Mal 4v5,6 (with Luke 1v17 and Matt 17v11):

"Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to the fathers, the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord."

Christians **MUST** pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) **NOW** for "last day Elijah ministries" to be set in the Body of Christ by God! Rev 5v8.

The number of "last day Elijah ministries" that God will be able to set in the Church will be directly proportional to the amount of praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) performed by the Church for God to set such ministries in it; i.e.. the more the Body of Christ prays (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) for God to set such ministries in the church, the **MORE** "last day Elijah ministries" will **actually be set in it by God!**

Behind every great prophet and prophetess, there has **ALWAYS** been someone behind the scenes, who has earnestly sought the Lord and prayed (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) them into their ministry. Very often this is the result of the prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of a godly loving mother or aunt; as in the case of Jeremiah, when his aunt, the great Old Testament prophetess, Huldah, was the person responsible for praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) him into his prophetic ministry as a young man. We can gauge the depth of her spirituality and prophetic ministry from the incident when King Josiah asked Hilkiah, the high priest, to inquire of the Lord as what should be done at that time, Hilkiah promptly went and sought out Huldah, and as soon as he had asked for the word of the Lord, Huldah was able to give it too him straight away. However, when the remnant of those left in the southern kingdom came and asked Jeremiah to seek the word of the Lord for them, it was ten days before the reply came from the Lord for them (which they didn't heed anyway); and so from this, we can see just how in touch with the Lord Huldah was and the depth of her spirituality and prophetic ministry! 2Kings 22v3-20 (esp. v14), Jer 1v1-19 (esp. v6), 32v7, Jer 42v1-22 (esp. v7).

NB4: Rev 12v1 (with Rev 12v2-17) states:

"And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars."

The vision of this glorious woman reveals to us one of God's major purposes for the last days. She represents a group of people, who are foreknown, designed, specially created and empowered by God for the Great Tribulation. It is a group of praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) people, with prepared hearts and special ministries for the last days, who will operate with awesome power as a prayer-warrior group behind the scenes. God also gives a definite promise that He will protect, provide and empower the seeking hearts in His Church in a new and special way in the last days, and will not leave His Church defenceless in the Great Tribulation. This glorious woman reveals that part of the Church will be clothed with the fullness of God's power, and will be transported, protected and fed by God. **This group is a major part of God's answer to the mystery of iniquity, and it is one of many such groups, who operate in Israel and other parts of the world.**

Another of the desires upon the great loving Heart of our Heavenly Father, is the necessity for His people to get ready and prepared for the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation; however at the present moment in time, very few, if any, Teachers or Preachers in the Church are talking about these vital Truths, and when they do mention it, it is nearly always to state that the Christian does not need to be concerned about the Great Tribulation, because they will miss it, having been raptured before it starts. **I wish to state here and now, that those (so called) preachers and teachers who**

propagate such lies, the Lord Jesus plainly states are amongst the false prophets and teachers of the last days, and a severe judgement awaits them! The Lord Jesus clearly states that His Second Coming will be visible to every eye, and will be with great power and glory, the elements melting with fervent heat, which will be accompanied by the greatest earthquake that the earth has ever known! It is **NOW** vital for **EVERY** Christian (especially those Christians in Israel) to get close to the Lord Jesus, and pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) that He will prepare His people into such groups (as represented by the glorious woman in Rev 12v1) in every country around the world, but **ESPECIALLY** in Israel! Dan 11v32, Joel 2v28-32, Zech 12v8, Matt 24v21-30,48-51, 28v20, Luke 18v1-8, 2Pet 3v10, James 3v1, Rev 1v7, 12v1-17, 16v18.

NB5: Psalm 2v8 and Rev 5v7 reads:

"Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession...**And he came and took the book** out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne."

The "He came and took the book," is the fulfilment of the "ask of me" of Psalm 2v8, it is when God brings to pass the prophetic events that will close the Age, and bring in Christ's kingdom. Psalm 2v8, Dan 2v44,45, 7v13.

It is most important for **ALL** believers to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") **NOW** that God will invite the Lord Jesus to come and ask Him for His inheritance and possession, so that He takes the Book out of His Father's right hand, so as to open the seven seals thereof to bring to pass the last seven years of this Age, so that the Father can then, at the end of these seven years, send the Lord Jesus to come and deal with the wicked once and for all, to take His people home and bring in everlasting righteousness by sealing up vision and prophecy and setting up the Millennium Kingdom. **NOTE:** Rev 5v8, "...which are the prayers (Greek "proseuche" (NT:4335)) of the saints..." with Matt 6v9,10, "After this manner therefore pray (Greek "proseuchomai" (NT4336)) ye...**Thy kingdom come.**" (It is the "prayers of the saints" (Rev 5v7,8) that precipitates God the Father to invite the Lord Jesus to take the Book out of His right hand so as to loose the seven seals thereof to bring to pass the last seven years of this age. Dan 9v27, 6v1-17, 8v1) Dan 9v27, Matt 6v5-15, Luke 11v1-13 (esp. 11v2), 2Pet 3v12, Rev 11v15-19.

(The seven seals show the major stages in the career of Antichrist, from the covenant, to seven years later, when he and his evil system is destroyed on the great day of the Lamb's wrath. An angel asks who is worthy to rule the world after Antichrist has brought the world to almost complete ruin; the answer is only Christ and His faithful brethren. Rev 5v5,9,10, Rom 8v19. This age will close when Jesus has enough brethren to rule the Millennial kingdom with Him. Rev 14v1-5, 17v14, 2Pet 3v12. John's vision in Rev 4 and 5, was not a revelation of events in Heaven in the time of John, it was a vision of events in Heaven just prior to the last seven years of this age. When Jesus opens the seven seals, it starts the last 7 years of this age, and the mystery of iniquity. Dan 9v20-27.

Satan's plans are restrained by God, and even when the mystery of iniquity is allowed to have its final fling, God reigns and His kingdom will surely come quickly. All of Heaven's inhabitants are perfectly satisfied at Christ's worthiness to open the seals and receive the kingdom, and they rejoice that divine love will rule the nations, after the evil rule of men. John was heartbroken and wept because no one could open the book and loose the seals, but one of the elders comforted John and said, "Weep not; behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book, and loose the seals thereof." As God, Jesus was the source of David's family and the means of its sustenance, anchorage and strength; as a man He was the offspring of David. Isaiah 11v1,10, Rom 1v3,4, Rev 22v16. John looks for this Lion of Judah, but sees a Lamb as it had been slain. The most courageous act of the Lion of Judah was His death as the Lamb of God, this shows His courage and love more than all else. The title "Lamb" occurs 29 times in Revelation, but it is only applied to Jesus 4 times in the rest of the New Testament. John 1v29,36, Acts 8v32, 1Pet 1v19. Men often use mighty beasts and birds of prey as symbols of power, but God uses a Lamb to show the greatest act of courage, strength and love the world has even known; Calvary is the ultimate act of power and love. The Lamb of God is worthy to reign because of the sacrificial love revealed in His death upon Calvary.

The Lamb of God has not only redeemed sinners, but has made them kings and priests unto God as well, and the faithful saints will reign with Christ in the Millennium and eternity. Rev 5v10, 20v4-6, 22v3-5. Christ has won the right to reign, the Father has no favourites, He has "no jobs for the boys," those who rule will have to prove their worthiness to rule, even as Jesus has proved His worthiness to reign. Rev 3v21, 5v5, Phil 2v6-11, Rom 2v11, Acts 10v34, Heb 5v5-10, Dan 7v13,14. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus!

NB6: On the day of Pentecost, Peter stood up and said in Acts 2v16-21 (with Joel 2v28-32):

"...This is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; **And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh:** and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke: The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, **before that great and notable day of the Lord come: And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be**

saved."

The Lord Jesus, during the His Post-Resurrection ministry to the Apostles, had told them "I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high," when He (the Holy Spirit) that was with them, would then enter them, which was the Baptism in the Holy Spirit that they would receive. Luke 24v49, John 7v39, 14v17, Acts 2v4,38. It was during the Post-Resurrection ministry that the Lord Jesus had instructed them regarding Joel's prophecy, that this was the glorious prophecy which referred to the "Promise of the Father" (i.e.. power from on high), and that it was **vital** for them to tarry in the Upper Room, and pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336), "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances.") this great prophecy and promise into reality. The Lord Jesus did not tell them the precise timing of when they would receive the Promise of the Father (this was because that if they had known, some of them might have just sat back and said, "well I don't need to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)), God is going to do it anyway"), but simply said, "ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence." Acts 1v5. The Apostles were obedient to His command, and with other disciples (one hundred and twenty of them in all), they prayed (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) Joel's wonderful great prophecy and promise into reality. Acts 1v14,15, 2v1-4. The great outpouring of the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost was only a partial fulfilment of Joel's prophecy, which also had a fulfilment throughout the whole of the Age of Grace to encourage the Church to pray for revival, blessing, spiritual gifts and ministries from their risen Lord. 1Cor 12v7-11, Eph 4v7-16. Joel's great prophecy and promise has a final and complete fulfilment at the end of the Age of Grace, for it specifically says, "**it shall come to pass in the last days...I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh...before that great and notable day of the Lord come.**" Even as the one hundred and twenty disciples in the Upper Room prayed (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) Joel's wonderful prophecy and promise into reality on the Day of Pentecost, it is also **VITAL** for the Church to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) **NOW** for God to pour out of His Spirit upon the Church and the world...i.e.. "**upon ALL flesh.**" God's people need to claim the complete fulfilment of Joel's great prophecy and promise **NOW**, and **MUST** continue to claim the complete fulfilment of it right up until the Lord's Second Coming. There will certainly be a great outpouring of the Holy Spirit when Daniel's Seventieth week starts, when Antichrist "confirms a covenant with many (including Israel) for one week," which also refers to the opening of the First Seal. Dan 9v27, Rev 6v1,2. Another and even greater outpouring will occur, when Antichrist breaks the covenant, and sets up his image in the Temple in Jerusalem (at the beginning of the Great Tribulation). During the last seven years of the Age of Grace, the Church and the world will know a time of the greatest worldwide revival that has ever been experienced, and **NOW** is the time for the Body of Christ to pray (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) so that this great outpouring becomes a reality very soon, and also is **FULLY** experienced during the last seven years of this Age. Acts 2v16-21, Rev 5v8, 11v3-6, 12v1.

NB7: With the Devil and his evil angels being cast out of the heavenlies into the earth, and God's restraining hand being removed from them, the Great Tribulation then ensues. The responsibility for the restraint upon the powers of darkness and the wicked upon the earth, during the Great Tribulation, will be the Church's, and it will be through each individual believer's prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) and "interventions" (with power), (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783), both of which mean, "to make interventions with power so as to affect a change in circumstances."), that this restraint will occur. The amount of evil and wickedness that will be found in any society around the world during the Great Tribulation, will be inversely proportional to the amount of prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) and "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) that the believers of that society will make, in other words, the more prayer and "interventions" (with power) that the believers make for their society in which they live, the less evil and wickedness will be manifested in it. Hence, as soon as Antichrist sets up his image in the Temple in Jerusalem and breaks the peace treaty with Israel, the Great Tribulation then ensues and these are the signs that the Christian should be earnestly watching for, so that as soon as they appear, the responsibility for restraint upon the powers of darkness, wicked persons and wickedness in the world will lie solely with the Church. It is at this time that each individual believer **MUST** start making prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) and "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) against the evil angels and wicked people upon earth to restrain their activities. When the wicked see Divine judgement falling upon other evil persons (which will be via the believer's prayers (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) and "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783))), many (although not all) will think twice before putting their evil desires into practice to hurt, harm or kill God's dear children, hence, the believer's prayers and "interventions" (with power) will actively restrain the wicked. It will be during the Great Tribulation that the last World War will occur (before the 2nd coming of Christ), and the desire of the Devil (through Antichrist) will be to smash the world completely, which Antichrist will do with vast conventional armies and limited exchanges of nuclear weapons. So, it is vital for Christians to exercise prayer (Greek, "proseuche" (NT:4335)) and "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) **NOW**, so that they will be spiritually prepared for those terrible dark evil days, and can act as an effective restraint upon the powers of darkness and the wicked during the last three and half years of this Age, so that the country and society in which they live is not completely destroyed by Antichrist's armies and followers. Isaiah 26v9, Dan 9v27, 11v32,41, Zech 12v8, Luke 18v1-8, 2Thess 2v1-12, 1Tim2v1-8, Rev 6v7,8, 9v13-21, 11v3-6,18, 12v13-17.

(Also NOTE: Another reason why God cannot let the last seven years of this Age (of Grace) begin to come to pass is that the required number of overcoming Sons, who will replace the present world rulers (the Devil and the evil angels) in the heavenly places during the Millennium, must first be begotten, educated and tested; and so when God knows that this number is at hand, He will then invite the Lord Jesus to take the Book out of His right hand, so that He might loose the

Seven Seals thereof; which will then bring to pass Daniel's 70th (prophetic) week, which will end with the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus when He comes in great power and glory (so that **EVERY** eye will see Him), to deal with the wicked once and for all, to take His people home and bring in everlasting righteousness by sealing up vision and prophecy. It will be when the six and seventh seals are opened and the seventh Trumpet sounds (these all occur on the last day of this age (the Age of Grace) at the Second Coming of Christ) that the "mystery of God" will be completed. (The "mystery of God" is God's plan to put both Heaven and Earth under the rule of His Son Jesus and His bride (i.e.. the Church), and to fulfil upon the earth the promise made to Abraham and his seed, Israel, that they should inherit the earth. The inhabited earth to come is not again to be put under angels, but under Christ and His brethren who overcame.) The believer who accepts the call of their Lord, to rise up with Him into the heavenly places, to conquer and defeat the Devil and powers of darkness, so as to enter into and inhabit their Heavenly Canaan, will be exercising a priestly ministry of the Melchizedek Priesthood (by manifesting God's great power and love to the worlding and Church through the Gifts of the Holy Spirit, upon earth and the heavenly places), with Jesus as their Great High Priest (after the Order of Melchizedek). It is the Christians who are exercising a priestly ministry of the Melchizedek Priesthood who will be praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793), which mean "to make interventions with power so as to effect a change in circumstances.") for the Lord Jesus to take the Book out of the Father's Right Hand and so bring to pass the last seven years of this age. These Christians will also be praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336) and "entunchano" (NT:1793)) for God to bring judgement upon the wicked who are persecuting and killing Christians during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation. These Christians are a group of people, who are foreknown, designed, specially created and empowered by God for the Great Tribulation; a group of praying people, with prepared hearts and special ministries for the last days, who will operate with awesome power as a prayer-warrior group behind the scenes. God also gives a definite promise that He will protect, provide and empower the seeking hearts in His Church in a new and special way in the last days, and will not leave His Church defenceless in the Great Tribulation. Some of these Christians will belong to a group of believers in Israel during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation, who are represented by the glorious woman of Rev 12v1 (already mentioned in **NB2** and **NB4**), which reveals that part of the Church will be clothed with the fullness of God's power, and will be transported, protected and fed by God. This group is a major part of God's answer to the "mystery of iniquity," and it is one of many such groups, who operate in other parts of the world. It is these Christians who will be exercising a priestly ministry of the Melchizedek Priesthood during the last seven years of this age (and even more so during the dark evil days of the Great Tribulation) and who will be amongst those who will rule with Christ during the Millennium. (Rev 5v10, "...and hast made them kings and priests to our God, and they shall reign on the earth.") Dan 9v20-27 (esp. v27), 10v13-21, 11v32, Matt 25v41, Mark 16v15-18, Luke 17v20-18v8, 19v11-27, 24v46-49, John 3v13, 7v37-39, 12v40, 17v24, Acts 1v4-8, 2v16-21, Rom 1v17, 4v1-25, 8v12-39, 1Cor 9v24-27, 12v1-14v40, 12v31, 15v50-54, Eph 6v12, Col 3v1,2, 1Thess 4v13-18, 2Thess 2v1-12 (esp. v8), 1Tim 2v1-8, 2Tim 4v8, Heb 2v4,5-13, 3v1-4v16, 7v25, James 1v12, 1Pet 2v1-9, 5v1-4, Rev 1v7, 4v1-5v14, 6v12-17, 7v1-8, 8v1,2-6, 10v1-11 (esp. v7), 11v15-19, 12v1,6,7-9,14-16, 14v1-5, 21v7.)

The believer, by praying (Greek, "proseuchomai" (NT:4336)) and making "interventions" (with power) (Greek, "enteuxis" (NT:1783)) as indicated in these seven NBs ("nota benes"), will surely "hasten the coming of the Day of God." 2Pet 3v12.

Also see the "Introduction" of "Jesus Prays For His Own" at: www.truthforthelastdays.com for a full study on the Greek words for the making of prayer.

Appendix 10: Behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill...with the beasts of the earth. Rev 6v7,8.

With the Devil and the evil angels being cast out of the heavenlies by Michael and his angels into the earth and God's restraint being removed completely from them; because the Devil knows that his time upon earth is short (three and a half years) before he is cast into the Abyss for the duration of the Millennium, he comes down with great wrath, which results in the Great Tribulation. (It should be noted that the Great Tribulation is the result of the Devil's great wrath and **NOT** God's. Rev 12v12) The Devil and the evil angels as soon as they are cast into the earth and God's restraint is removed from them start implementing fully "the mystery of iniquity" (for up to this time God has restrained the Devil from implementing his evil plan), their first evil creative act is that of creating giant human-like beings who are not inhabited by human souls but by other evil spirits, just as they did during the Pre-Adamic ages and also before and after the Flood in the days of Noah. After this they will then proceed to create all types of dinosaurs, hominids and many other types of fierce creatures, birds and insects, even as they also did during the Pre-Adamic ages for the purpose of killing and destroying mankind and the animals, creatures and insects upon earth created by God because of their great hatred of God, man and the creation. The kingdom of darkness is one where the evil angel with the greatest power rules down and dominates the lesser powers, it is a kingdom of ruthless holding down, where the only thing that bands the Devil and the evil angels together is a common hatred of God and good. These fierce evil creations of the Devil and the evil angels will also be possessed by demons (even as they were during the Pre-Adamic ages) for the sole purpose of manifesting evil on a great scale like never before seen or experienced upon the earth or in Creation. This kind of possession will also add greatly to the ferocity of these evil creations, with the result that the death and carnage upon earth carried out by them is infinitely greater than without such a possession. It will also mean that these evil creations of the Devil will be able to be controlled even more easily by the Devil and Antichrist, with them also being used by the armies of the Kings of East and Antichrist to devastating effect in wholesale

mass slaughter upon the earth. Rev 6v8 states, **“behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill...with the beasts of the earth.”** “Power” in Greek is “exousía” (NT:1849), which means “freedom of action, right to act,” then authority, jurisdiction, liberty, power, right, strength. “The beasts” in Greek is, “toón theeríoon” which is from “therion” (NT:2342) and which means “(venomous, wild) beast, a wild animal, it is the same Greek word that is used of Antichrist. Rev 11v7. The “wild beasts” that are referred to here (in Rev 6v8) are the dinosaurs, hominids and other fierce creatures that the Devil and the evil angels will make during the Great Tribulation. The Devil is the one who gives Antichrist his throne, authority and power to rule and act, God’s restraint having been completely removed from the Devil and the evil angels so that the “mystery of iniquity” works fully. Gen 6v1-12, Dan 2v43, 8v24, 12v1, 2Thess 2v1-12, Rev 12v7-17, 13v2.

Appendix 11: Radiometric Dating. A Christian Perspective by Dr. Roger C. Wiens.

Radiometric Dating

A Christian Perspective

Dr. Roger C. Wiens

Dr. Wiens has a PhD in Physics, with a minor in Geology. His PhD thesis was on isotope ratios in meteorites, including surface exposure dating. He was employed at Caltech's Division of Geological & Planetary Sciences at the time of writing the first edition. He is presently employed in the Space & Atmospheric Sciences Group at the Los Alamos National Laboratory.

First edition 1994; revised version 2002.

Radiometric dating--the process of determining the age of rocks from the decay of their radioactive elements--has been in widespread use for over half a century. There are over forty such techniques, each using a different radioactive element or a different way of measuring them. It has become increasingly clear that these radiometric dating techniques agree with each other and as a whole, present a coherent picture in which the Earth was created a very long time ago. Further evidence comes from the complete agreement between radiometric dates and other dating methods such as counting tree rings or glacier ice core layers. Many Christians have been led to distrust radiometric dating and are completely unaware of the great number of laboratory measurements that have shown these methods to be consistent. Many are also unaware that Bible-believing Christians are among those actively involved in radiometric dating.

This paper describes in relatively simple terms how a number of the dating techniques work, how accurately the half-lives of the radioactive elements and the rock dates themselves are known, and how dates are checked with one another. In the process the paper refutes a number of misconceptions prevalent among Christians today. This paper is available on the web via the American Scientific Affiliation and related sites to promote greater understanding and wisdom on this issue, particularly within the Christian community.

Radiometric Dating
A Christian Perspective

Dr. Roger C. Wiens

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction.....162

Overview.....162

The Radiometric Clocks.....164

Examples of Dating Methods for Igneous Rocks165

Potassium-Argon165

Argon-Argon..... 166

Rubidium-Strontium.....168

Samarium-Neodymium, Lutetium-Hafnium, and Rhenium-Osmium.....170

Uranium-Lead.....170

The Age of the Earth171

Extinct Radionuclides: The Hourglasses that Ran Out172

Cosmogenic Radionuclides: Carbon-14, Beryllium-10, Chlorine-36174

Radiometric Dating of Geologically Young Samples176

Non-Radiogenic Dating Methods for the Past 100,000 Years.....177

Ice Cores.....177

Varves178

Other Annual-Layering Methods.....178

Thermoluminescence.....178

Electron Spin Resonance.....179

Cosmic Ray Exposure Dating.....179

Can We Really Believe the Dating Systems?179

Doubters Still Try.....180

Apparent Age?.....181

Rightly Handling the Word of Truth.....181

Appendix: Common Misconceptions Regarding Radiometric Dating Techniques.....181

Resources on the Web.....184

Further Reading: Books186

Acknowledgements187

More About the Author.....187

Glossary187

Introduction

Arguments over the age of the Earth have sometimes been divisive for people who regard the Bible as God's word. Even though the Earth's age is never mentioned in the Bible, it is an issue because those who take a strictly literal view of the early chapters of Genesis can calculate an approximate date for the creation by adding up the life-spans of the people mentioned in the genealogies. Assuming a strictly literal interpretation of the week of creation, even if some of the generations were left out of the genealogies, the Earth would be less than ten thousand years old. Radiometric dating techniques indicate that the Earth is thousands of times older than that--approximately four and a half billion years old. Many Christians accept this and interpret the Genesis account in less scientifically literal ways. However, some Christians suggest that the geologic dating techniques are unreliable, that they are wrongly interpreted, or that they are confusing at best. Unfortunately, much of the literature available to Christians has been either inaccurate or difficult to understand, so that confusion over dating techniques continues.

The next few pages cover a broad overview of radiometric dating techniques, show a few examples, and discuss the degree to which the various dating systems agree with each other. The goal is to promote greater understanding on this issue, particularly for the Christian community. Many people have been led to be skeptical of dating without knowing much about it. For example, most people don't realize that carbon dating is only rarely used on rocks. God has called us to be "wise as serpents" (Matt. 10:16) even in this scientific age. In spite of this, differences still occur within the church. A disagreement over the age of the Earth is relatively minor in the whole scope of Christianity; it is more important to agree on the Rock of Ages than on the age of rocks. But because God has also called us to wisdom, this issue is worthy of study.



Overview

Rocks are made up of many individual crystals, and each crystal is usually made up of at least several different chemical elements such as iron, magnesium, silicon, etc. Most of the elements in nature are stable and do not change. However, some elements are not completely stable in their natural state. Some of the atoms eventually change from one element to another by a process called radioactive decay. If there are a lot of atoms of the original element, called the parent element, the atoms decay to another element, called the daughter element, at a predictable rate. The passage of time can be charted by the reduction in the number of parent atoms, and the increase in the number of daughter atoms.

Radiometric dating can be compared to an hourglass. When the glass is turned over, sand runs from the top to the bottom. Radioactive atoms are like individual grains of sand--radioactive decays are like the falling of grains from the top to the bottom of the glass. You cannot predict exactly when any one particular grain will get to the bottom, but you can predict from one time to the next how long the whole pile of sand takes to fall. Once all of the sand has fallen out of the top, the hourglass will no longer keep time unless it is turned over again. Similarly, when

all the atoms of the radioactive element are gone, the rock will no longer keep time (unless it receives a new batch of radioactive atoms).

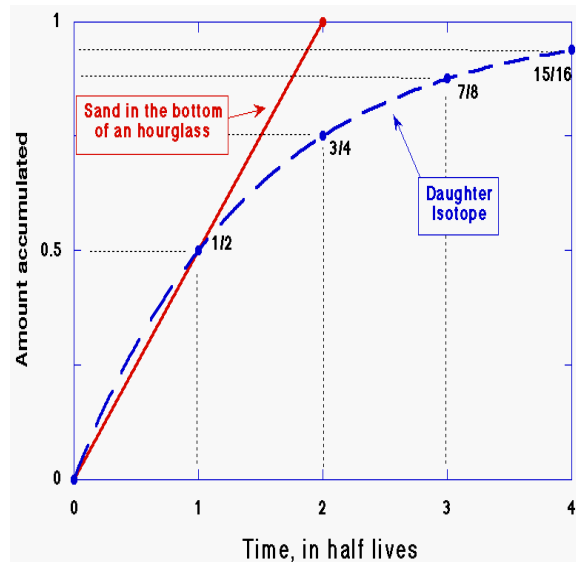
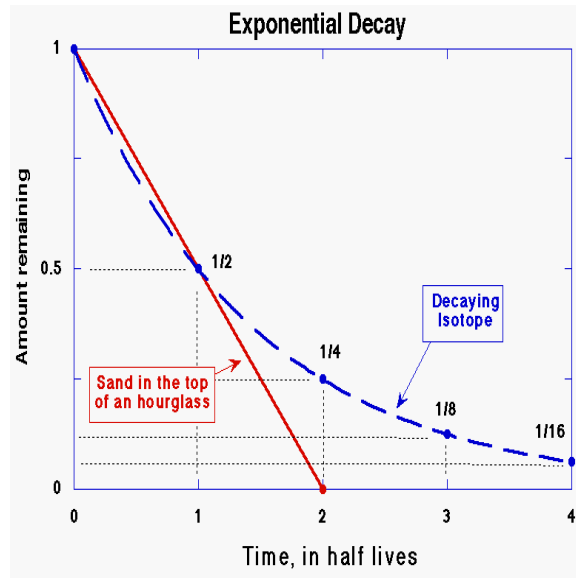


Figure 1. The rate of loss of sand from the top of an hourglass compared to exponential type of decay of radioactive elements. Most processes that we are familiar with are like sand in an hourglass. In exponential decay the amount of material decreases by half during each half-life. After two half-lives one-fourth remains, after three half-lives, one-eighth, etc. As shown in the bottom panel, the daughter element or isotope amount increases rapidly at first and more slowly with each succeeding half life.

Unlike the hourglass, where the amount of sand falling is constant right up until the end, the number of decays from a fixed number of radioactive atoms decreases as there are fewer atoms left to decay (see Figure 1). If it takes a certain length of time for half of the atoms to decay, it will take the same amount of time for half of the remaining atoms, or a fourth of the original total, to decay. In the next interval, with only a fourth remaining, only one eighth of the original total will decay. By the time ten of these intervals, or half-lives, has passed, less than one thousandth of the original number of radioactive atoms is left. The equation for the fraction of parent atoms left is very simple. The type of equation is exponential, and is related to equations describing other well-known phenomena such as population growth. No deviations have yet been found from this equation for radioactive decay.

Also unlike the hourglass, there is no way to change the rate at which radioactive atoms decay in rocks. If you shake the hourglass, twirl it, or put it in a rapidly accelerating vehicle, the time it takes the sand to fall will change. But the radioactive atoms used in dating techniques have been subjected to heat, cold, pressure, vacuum, acceleration, and strong chemical reactions to the extent that would be experienced by rocks or magma in the mantle, crust, or surface of the Earth or other

planets without any significant change in their decay rate.

In only a couple of special cases have any decay rates been observed to vary, and none of these special cases apply to the dating of rocks as discussed here. These exceptions are discussed later.

An hourglass will tell time correctly only if it is completely sealed. If it has a hole allowing the sand grains to escape out the side instead of going through the neck, it will give the wrong time interval. Similarly, a rock that is to be dated must be sealed against loss or addition of either the radioactive daughter or parent. If it has lost some of the daughter element, it will give an inaccurately young age. As will be discussed later, most dating techniques have very good ways of telling if such a loss has occurred, in which case the date is thrown out (and so is the rock!).

An hourglass measures how much time has passed since it was turned over. (Actually it tells when a specific amount of time, e.g., 2 minutes, an hour, etc., has passed, so the analogy is not quite perfect.) Radiometric dating of rocks also tells how much time has passed since some event occurred. For igneous rocks the event is usually its cooling and hardening from magma or lava. For some other materials, the event is the end of a metamorphic heating event (in which the rock gets baked underground at generally over a thousand degrees Fahrenheit), the uncovering of a surface by the scraping action of a glacier, the chipping of a meteorite off of an asteroid, or the length of time a plant or animal has been dead.

The Radiometric Clocks

There are now well over forty different radiometric dating techniques, each based on a different radioactive isotope.

The term isotope subdivides elements into groups of atoms that have the same atomic weight. For example carbon has isotopes of weight 12, 13, and 14 times the mass of a nucleon, referred to as carbon-12, carbon-13, or carbon-14 (abbreviated as ¹²C, ¹³C, ¹⁴C). It is only the carbon-14 isotope that is radioactive. This will be discussed further in a later section.

A partial list of the parent and daughter isotopes and the decay half-lives is given in Table I. Notice the large range in the half-lives. Isotopes with long half-lives decay very slowly, and so are useful for dating

Table 1. Some Naturally Occurring Radioactive Isotopes and their half-lives

Radioactive Isotope (Parent)	Product (Daughter)	Half-Life (Years)
Samarium-147	Neodymium-143	106 billion
Rubidium-87	Strontium-87	48.8 billion
Rhenium-187	Osmium-187	42 billion
Lutetium-176	Hafnium-176	38 billion
Thorium-232	Lead-208	14 billion
Uranium-238	Lead-206	4.5 billion
Potassium-40	Argon-40	1.26 billion
Uranium-235	Lead-207	0.7 billion
Beryllium-10	Boron-10	1.52 million
Chlorine-36	Argon-36	300,000

Carbon-14	Nitrogen-14	5715
Uranium-234	Thorium-230	248,000
Thorium-230	Radium-226	75,400

*Most half-lives taken from Holden, N.E. (1990)
Pure Appl. Chem. 62, 941-958.*

correspondingly ancient events. Isotopes with shorter half-lives cannot date very ancient events because all of the atoms of the parent isotope would have already decayed away, like an hourglass left sitting with all the sand at the bottom. Isotopes with relatively short half-lives are useful for dating correspondingly shorter intervals, and can usually do so with greater accuracy, just as you would use a stopwatch rather than a grandfather clock to time a 100 meter dash. On the other hand, you would use a calendar, not a clock, to record time intervals of several weeks or more.

The half-lives have all been measured directly either by using a radiation detector to count the number of atoms decaying in a given amount of time from a known amount of the parent material, or by measuring the ratio of daughter to parent atoms in a sample that originally consisted completely of parent atoms. Work on radiometric dating first started shortly after the turn of the 20th century, but progress was relatively slow before the late forties. However, by now we have had over fifty years to measure and re-measure the half-lives for many of the dating techniques. Very precise counting of the decay events or the daughter atoms can be done, so while the number of, say, rhenium-187 atoms decaying in 50 years is a very small fraction of the total, the resulting osmium-187 atoms can be very precisely counted. For example, recall that only one gram of material contains over 10^{21} (1 with 21 zeros behind) atoms. Even if only one trillionth of the atoms decay in one year, this is still millions of decays, each of which can be counted by a radiation detector!

The uncertainties on the half-lives given in the table are all very small. All of the half-lives are known to better than about two percent except for rhenium (5%), lutetium (3%), and beryllium (3%). There is no evidence of any of the half-lives changing over time. In fact, as discussed below, they have been observed to *not* change at all over hundreds of thousands of years.

Examples of Dating Methods for Igneous Rocks

Now let's look at how the actual dating methods work. Igneous rocks are good candidates for dating. Recall that for igneous rocks the event being dated is when the rock was formed from magma or lava. When the molten material cools and hardens, the atoms are no longer free to move about. Daughter atoms that result from radioactive decays occurring after the rock cools are frozen in the place where they were made within the rock. These atoms are like the sand grains accumulating in the bottom of the hourglass. Determining the age of a rock is a two-step process. First one needs to measure the number of daughter atoms and the number of remaining parent atoms and calculate the ratio between them. Then the half-life is used to calculate the time it took to produce that ratio of parent atoms to daughter atoms.

However, there is one complication. One cannot always assume that there were no daughter atoms to begin with. It turns out that there are some cases where one can make that assumption quite reliably. But in most cases the initial amount of the daughter product must be accurately determined. Most of the time one can use the different amounts of parent and daughter present in different minerals within the rock to tell how much daughter was originally present. Each dating mechanism deals with this problem in its own way. Some types of dating work better in some rocks; others are better in other rocks, depending on the rock composition and its age. Let's examine some of the different dating mechanisms now.

Potassium-Argon. Potassium is an abundant element in the Earth's crust. One isotope, potassium-40, is radioactive and decays to two different daughter products, calcium-40 and argon-40, by two different decay methods. This is not a problem because the production ratio of these two daughter products is precisely known, and is always constant: 11.2% becomes argon-40 and 88.8% becomes calcium-40. It is possible to date some rocks by the potassium-calcium method, but this is not often done because it is hard to determine how much calcium was initially present. Argon, on the other hand, is a gas. Whenever rock is melted to become magma or lava, the argon tends to escape. Once the molten material hardens, it begins to trap the new argon produced since the hardening took place. In this way the potassium-argon clock is clearly reset when an igneous rock is formed.

In its simplest form, the geologist simply needs to measure the relative amounts of potassium-40 and argon-40 to date the rock. The age is given by a relatively simple equation:

$$t = h \times \ln[1 + (\text{argon-40}) / (0.112 \times (\text{potassium-40}))] / \ln(2)$$

where t is the time in years, h is the half-life, also in years, and \ln is the natural logarithm.

However, in reality there is often a small amount of argon remaining in a rock when it hardens. This is usually trapped in the form of very tiny air bubbles in the rock. One percent of the air we breathe is argon. Any extra argon from air bubbles may need to be taken into account if it is significant relative to the amount of radiogenic argon (that is, argon produced by radioactive decays). This would most likely be the case in either young rocks that have not had time to produce much radiogenic argon, or in rocks that are low in the parent potassium. One must have a way to determine how much air-argon is in the rock. This is rather easily done because air-argon has a couple of other isotopes, the most abundant of which is argon-36. The ratio of argon-40 to argon-36 in air is well known, at 295. Thus, if one measures argon-36 as well as argon-40, one can calculate and subtract off the air-argon-40 to get an accurate age.

Some young-Earth proponents recently reported that rocks were dated by the potassium-argon method to be a several million years old when they are really only a few years old. But the potassium-argon method, with its long half-life, was never intended to date rocks only 25 years old. These people have only succeeded in correctly showing that one can fool a single radiometric dating method when one uses it improperly. The false radiometric ages of several million years are due to parentless argon, as described here, and first reported in the literature some fifty years ago. Note that it would be extremely unlikely for another dating method to agree on these bogus ages. Getting agreement between more than one dating method is a recommended practice.

One of the best ways of showing that an age-date is correct is to confirm it with one or more different dating method(s). Although potassium-argon is one of the simplest dating methods, there are still *some* cases where it does not agree with other methods. When this does happen, it is usually because the gas within bubbles in the rock is from deep underground rather than from the air. This gas can have a higher concentration of argon-40 escaping from the melting of older rocks. This is called *parentless* argon-40 because its parent potassium is not in the rock being dated, and is also not from the air. In these slightly unusual cases, the date given by the normal potassium-argon method is too old. However, scientists in the mid-1960s came up with a way around this problem, the argon-argon method, discussed in the next section.

Argon-Argon. Even though it has been around for nearly half a century, the argon-argon method is seldom discussed by groups critical of dating methods. This method uses exactly the same parent and daughter isotopes as the potassium-argon method. In effect, it is a different way of telling time from the same clock. Instead of simply comparing the total potassium with the non-air argon in the rock, this method has a way of telling exactly what and how much argon is directly related to the potassium in the rock.

In the argon-argon method the rock is placed near the center of a nuclear reactor for a period of hours. A nuclear reactor emits a very large number of neutrons, which are capable of changing a small amount of the potassium-39 into argon-39. Argon-39 is not found in nature because it has only a 269-year half-life. (This half-life doesn't affect the argon-argon dating method as long as the measurements are made within about five years of the neutron dose). The rock is then heated in a furnace to release both the argon-40 and the argon-39 (representing the potassium) for analysis. The heating is done at incrementally higher temperatures and at each step the ratio of argon-40 to argon-39 is measured. If the argon-40 is from decay of potassium within the rock, it will come out at the same temperatures as the potassium-derived argon-39 and *in a constant proportion*. On the other hand, if there is some excess argon-40 in the rock it will cause a different ratio of argon-40 to argon-39 for some or many of the heating steps, so the different heating steps will not agree with each other.

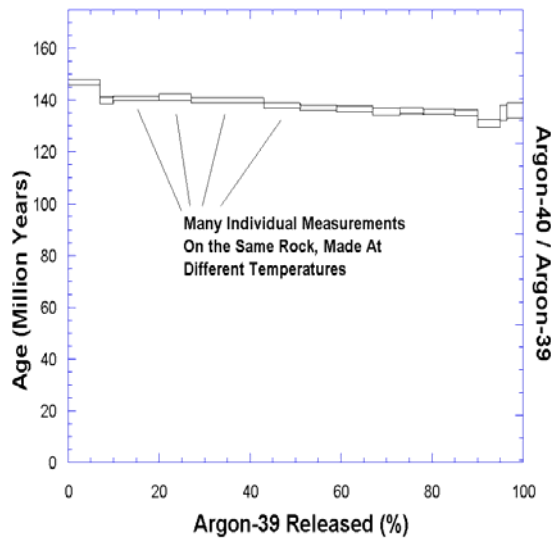


Figure 2. A typical argon-argon dating plot. Each small rectangle represents the apparent age given at one particular heating-step temperature. The top and bottom parts of the rectangles represent upper and lower limits for that particular determination. The age is based on the measured argon-40 / argon-39 ratio and the number of neutrons encountered in the reactor. The horizontal axis gives the amount of the total argon-39 released from the sample. A good argon-argon age determination will have a lot of heating steps which all agree with each other. The "plateau age" is the age given by the average of most of the steps, in this case nearly 140 million years. After S. Turner *et al.* (1994) *Earth and Planetary Science Letters*, 121, pp. 333-348.

Figure 2 is an example of a good argon-argon date. The fact that this plot is flat shows that essentially all of the argon-40 is from decay of potassium within the rock. The potassium-40 content of the sample is found by multiplying the argon-39 by a factor based on the neutron exposure in the reactor. When this is done, the plateau in the figure represents an age date based on the decay of potassium-40 to argon-40.

There are occasions when the argon-argon dating method does not give an age even if there is sufficient potassium in the sample and the rock was old enough to date. This most often occurs if the rock experienced a high temperature (usually a thousand degrees Fahrenheit or more) at some point since its formation. If that occurs, some of the argon gas moves around, and the analysis does not give a smooth plateau across the extraction temperature steps. An example of an argon-argon analysis that did not yield an age date is shown in Figure 3. Notice that there is no good plateau in this plot. In some instances there will actually be two plateaus, one representing the formation age, and another representing the time at which the heating episode occurred. But in most cases where the system has been disturbed, there simply is no date given. The important point to note is that, rather than giving wrong age dates, *this method simply does not give a date if the system has been disturbed*. This is also true of a number of other igneous rock dating methods, as we will describe below.

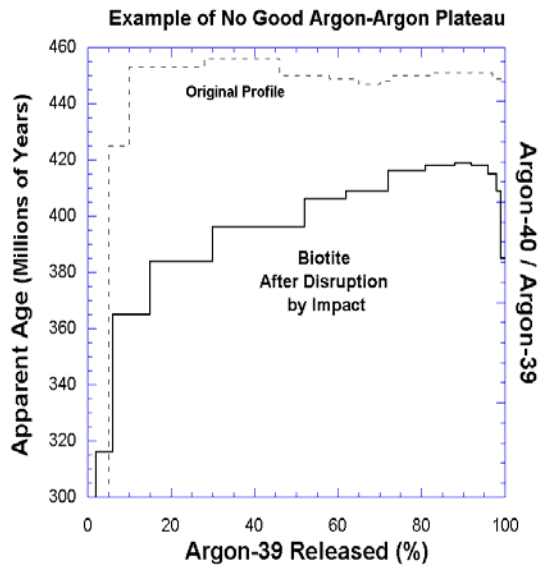


Figure 3.

Rubidium-Strontium. In nearly all of the dating methods, except potassium-argon and the associated argon-argon method, there is always some amount of the daughter product already in the rock when it cools. Using these methods is a little like trying to tell time from an hourglass that was turned over before all of the sand had fallen to the bottom. One can think of ways to correct for this in an hourglass: One could make a mark on the outside of the glass where the sand level started from and then repeat the interval with a stopwatch in the other hand to calibrate it. Or if one is clever she or he could examine the hourglass' shape and determine what fraction of all the sand was at the top to start with. By knowing how long it takes all of the sand to fall, one could determine how long the time interval was. Similarly, there are good ways to tell quite precisely how much of the daughter product was already in the rock when it cooled and hardened.

In the rubidium-strontium method, rubidium-87 decays with a half-life of 48.8 billion years to strontium-87. Strontium has several other isotopes that are stable and do not decay. The ratio of strontium-87 to one of the other stable isotopes, say strontium-86, increases over time as more rubidium-87 turns to strontium-87. But when the rock first cools, all parts of the rock have the same strontium-87/strontium-86 ratio because the isotopes were mixed in the magma. At the same time, some of the minerals in the rock have a higher rubidium/strontium ratio than others. Rubidium has a larger atomic diameter than strontium, so rubidium does not fit into the crystal structure of some minerals as well as others.

Figure 4 is an important type of plot used in rubidium-strontium dating. It shows the strontium-87/strontium-86 ratio on the vertical axis and the rubidium-87/strontium-86 ratio on the horizontal axis, that is, it plots a ratio of the daughter isotope against a ratio of the parent isotope. At first, all the minerals lie along a horizontal line of constant strontium-87/strontium-86 ratio but with varying rubidium/strontium. As the rock starts to age, rubidium gets converted to strontium. The amount of strontium added to each mineral is proportional to the amount of rubidium present. This change is shown by the dashed arrows, the lengths of which are proportional to the rubidium/strontium ratio. The dashed arrows are slanted because the rubidium/strontium ratio is decreasing in proportion to the increase in strontium-87/strontium-86. The solid line drawn through the samples will thus progressively rotate from the horizontal to steeper and steeper slopes.

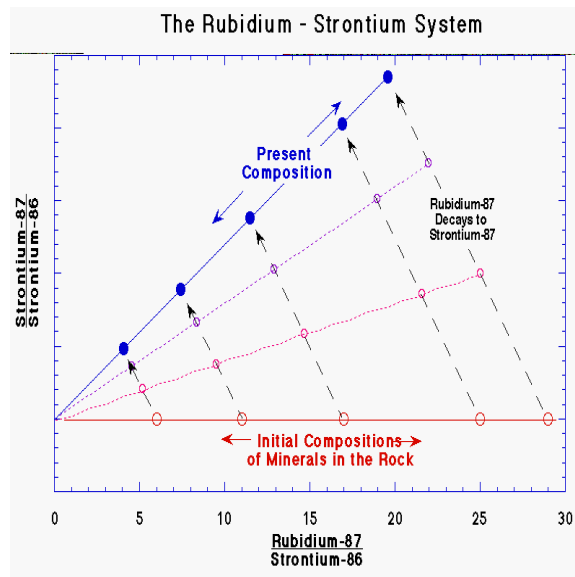


Figure 4. A rubidium-strontium three-isotope plot. When a rock cools, all its minerals have the same ratio of strontium-87 to strontium-86, though they have varying amounts of rubidium. As the rock ages, the rubidium decreases by changing to strontium-87, as shown by the dotted arrows. Minerals with more rubidium gain more strontium-87, while those with less rubidium do not change as much. Notice that at any given time, the minerals all line up--a check to ensure that the system has not been disturbed.

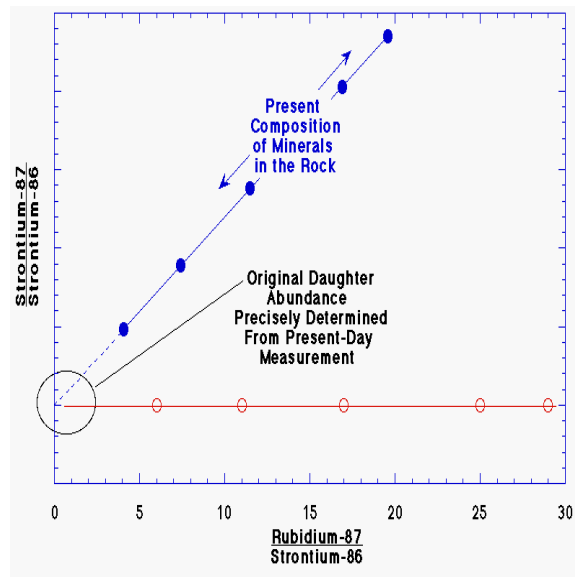


Figure 5. The original amount of the daughter strontium-87 can be precisely determined from the present-day composition by extending the line through the data points back to rubidium-87 = 0. This works because if there were no rubidium-87 in the sample, the strontium composition would not change. The slope of the line is used to determine the age of the sample.

All lines drawn through the data points at any later time will intersect the horizontal line (constant strontium-87/strontium-86 ratio) at the same point in the lower left-hand corner. This point, where rubidium-87/strontium-86 = 0 tells the original strontium-87/strontium-86 ratio. From that we can determine the original daughter strontium-87 in each mineral, which is just what we need to know to determine the correct age.

It also turns out that the slope of the line is proportional to the age of the rock. The older the rock, the steeper the line will be. If the slope of the line is m and the half-life is h , the age t (in years) is given by the equation

$$t = h \times \ln(m+1)/\ln(2)$$

For a system with a very long half-life like rubidium-strontium, the actual numerical value of the slope will always be quite small. To give an example for the above equation, if the slope of a line in a plot similar to Fig. 4 is $m = 0.05110$ (strontium

isotope ratios are usually measured very accurately--to about one part in ten thousand), we can substitute in the half-life (48.8 billion years) and solve as follows:

$$t = (48.8) \times \ln(1.05110)/\ln(2)$$

so $t = 3.51$ billion years.

Several things can on rare occasions cause problems for the rubidium-strontium dating method. One possible source of problems is if a rock contains some minerals that are older than the main part of the rock. This can happen when magma inside the Earth picks up unmelted minerals from the surrounding rock as the magma moves through a magma chamber. Usually a good geologist can distinguish these "xenoliths" from the younger minerals around them. If he or she does happen to use them for dating the rock, the points represented by these minerals will lie off the line made by the rest of the points. Another difficulty can arise if a rock has undergone metamorphism, that is, if the rock got very hot, but not hot enough to completely re-melt the rock. In these cases, the dates look confused, and do not lie along a line. Some of the minerals may have completely melted, while others did not melt at all, so some minerals try to give the igneous age while other minerals try to give the metamorphic age. In these cases there will not be a straight line, and *no date is determined*.

In a few very rare instances the rubidium-strontium method has given straight lines that give wrong ages. This can happen when the rock being dated was formed from magma that was not well mixed, and which had two distinct batches of rubidium and strontium. One magma batch had rubidium and strontium compositions near the upper end of a line (such as in Fig. 4), and one batch had compositions near the lower end of the line. In this case, the

minerals all got a mixture of these two batches, and their resulting composition ended up near a line between the two batches. This is called a two-component mixing line. It is a very rare occurrence in these dating mechanisms, but at least thirty cases have been documented among the tens of thousands of rubidium-strontium dates made. If a two-component mixture is suspected, a second dating method must be used to confirm or disprove the rubidium-strontium date. The agreement of several dating methods is the best fail-safe way of dating rocks.

The Samarium-Neodymium, Lutetium-Hafnium, and Rhenium-Osmium Methods. All of these methods work very similarly to the rubidium-strontium method. They all use three-isotope diagrams similar to Figure 4 to determine the age. The samarium-neodymium method is the most-often used of these three. It uses the decay of samarium-147 to neodymium-143, which has a half-life of 105 billion years. The ratio of the daughter isotope, neodymium-143, to another neodymium isotope, neodymium-144, is plotted against the ratio of the parent, samarium-147, to neodymium-144. If different minerals from the same rock plot along a line, the slope is determined, and the age is given by the same equation as above. The samarium-neodymium method may be preferred for rocks that have very little potassium and rubidium, for which the potassium-argon, argon-argon, and rubidium-strontium methods might be difficult. The samarium-neodymium method has also been shown to be more resistant to being disturbed or re-set by metamorphic heating events, so for some metamorphosed rocks the samarium-neodymium method is preferred. For a rock of the same age, the slope on the neodymium-samarium plots will be less than on a rubidium-strontium plot because the half-life is longer. However, these isotope ratios are usually measured to extreme accuracy--several parts in ten thousand--so accurate dates can be obtained even for ages less than one fiftieth of a half-life, and with correspondingly small slopes.

The lutetium-hafnium method uses the 38 billion year half-life of lutetium-176 decaying to hafnium-176. This dating system is similar in many ways to samarium-neodymium, as the elements tend to be concentrated in the same types of minerals. Since samarium-neodymium dating is somewhat easier, the lutetium-hafnium method is used less often.

The rhenium-osmium method takes advantage of the fact that the osmium concentration in most rocks and minerals is very low, so a small amount of the parent rhenium-187 can produce a significant change in the osmium isotope ratio. The half-life for this radioactive decay is 42 billion years. The non-radiogenic stable isotopes, osmium-186 or -188, are used as the denominator in the ratios on the three-isotope plots. This method has been useful for dating iron meteorites, and is now enjoying greater use for dating Earth rocks due to development of easier rhenium and osmium isotope measurement techniques.

Uranium-Lead and related techniques. The uranium-lead method is the longest-used dating method. It was first used in 1907, about a century ago. The uranium-lead system is more complicated than other parent-daughter systems; it is actually several dating methods put together. Natural uranium consists primarily of two isotopes, U-235 and U-238, and these isotopes decay with different half-lives to produce lead-207 and lead-206, respectively. In addition, lead-208 is produced by thorium-232. Only one isotope of lead, lead-204, is not radiogenic. The uranium-lead system has an interesting complication: none of the lead isotopes is produced directly from the uranium and thorium. Each decays through a series of relatively short-lived radioactive elements that each decay to a lighter element, finally ending up at lead. Since these half-lives are so short compared to U-238, U-235, and thorium-232, they generally do not affect the overall dating scheme. The

result is that one can obtain three independent estimates of the age of a rock by measuring the lead isotopes and their parent isotopes. Long-term dating based on the U-238, U-235, and thorium-232 will be discussed briefly here; dating based on some of the shorter-lived intermediate isotopes is discussed later.

The uranium-lead system in its simpler forms, using U-238, U-235, and thorium-232, has proved to be less reliable than many of the other dating systems. This is because both uranium and lead are less easily retained in many of the minerals in which they are found. Yet the fact that there are three dating systems all in one allows scientists to easily determine whether the system has been disturbed or not. Using slightly more complicated mathematics, different combinations of the lead isotopes and parent isotopes can be plotted in such a way as to minimize the effects of lead loss. One of these techniques is called the lead-lead technique because it determines the ages from the lead isotopes alone. Some of these techniques allow scientists to chart at what points in time metamorphic heating events have occurred, which is also of significant interest to geologists.

Some of the oldest rocks on earth are found in Western Greenland. Because of their great age, they have been especially well studied. The table below gives the ages, in billions of years, from twelve different studies using five different techniques on one particular rock formation in Western Greenland, the Amitsoq gneisses.

Technique	Age Range (billion years)
uranium-lead	3.60±0.05
lead-lead	3.56±0.10
lead-lead	3.74±0.12
lead-lead	3.62±0.13
rubidium-strontium	3.64±0.06
rubidium-strontium	3.62±0.14
rubidium-strontium	3.67±0.09
rubidium-strontium	3.66±0.10
rubidium-strontium	3.61±0.22
rubidium-strontium	3.56±0.14
lutetium-hafnium	3.55±0.22
samarium-neodymium	3.56±0.20
(compiled from Dalrymple, 1991)	

Note that scientists give their results with a stated uncertainty. They take into account all the possible errors and give a range within which they are 95% sure that the actual value lies. The top number, 3.60±0.05, refers to the range 3.60+0.05 to 3.60-0.05. The size of this range is every bit as important as the actual number. A number with a small uncertainty range is more accurate than a number with a larger range. For the numbers given above, one can see that *all of the ranges overlap and agree between 3.62 and 3.65 billion years* as the age of the rock. Several studies also showed that, because of the great ages of these rocks, they have been through several mild metamorphic heating events that disturbed the ages given by potassium-bearing minerals (not listed here). As pointed out earlier, different radiometric dating methods agree with each other most of the time, over many thousands of measurements. Other examples of agreement between a number of different measurements of the same rocks are given in the references below..

The Age of the Earth

We now turn our attention to what the dating systems tell us about the age of the Earth. The most obvious constraint is the age of the oldest rocks. These have been dated at up to about four billion years. But actually only a very small portion of the Earth's rocks are that old. From satellite data and other measurements we know that the Earth's surface is constantly rearranging itself little by little as Earthquakes occur. Such rearranging cannot occur without some of the Earth's surface disappearing under other parts of the Earth's surface, re-melting some of the rock. So it appears that none of the rocks have survived from the creation of the Earth without undergoing remelting, metamorphism, or erosion, and all we can say--from this line of evidence--is that the Earth appears to be at least as old as the four billion year old rocks.

When scientists began systematically dating meteorites they learned a very interesting thing: nearly all of the meteorites had practically identical ages, at 4.56 billion years. These meteorites are chips off the asteroids. When the asteroids were

formed in space, they cooled relatively quickly (some of them may never have gotten very warm), so all of their rocks were formed within a few million years. The asteroids' rocks have not been remelted ever since, so the ages have generally not been disturbed. Meteorites that show evidence of being from the largest asteroids have slightly younger ages. The moon is larger than the largest asteroid. Most of the rocks we have from the moon do not exceed 4.1 billion years. The samples thought to be the oldest are highly pulverized and difficult to date, though there are a few dates extending all the way to 4.4 to 4.5 billion years. Most scientists think that all the bodies in the solar system were created at about the same time. Evidence from the uranium, thorium, and lead isotopes links the Earth's age with that of the meteorites. This would make the Earth 4.5-4.6 billion years old.

Extinct Radionuclides: The Hourglasses That Ran Out

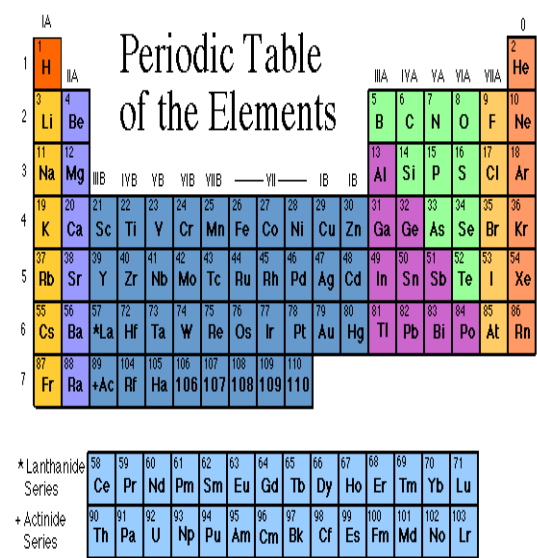


Figure 6.

There is another way to determine the age of the Earth. If we see an hourglass whose sand has run out, we know that it was turned over longer ago than the time interval it measures. Similarly, if we find that a radioactive parent was once abundant but has since run out, we know that it too was set longer ago than the time interval it measures. There are in fact many, many more parent isotopes than those listed in Table 1. However, most of them are no longer found naturally on Earth--they have run out. Their half-lives range down to times shorter than we can measure. *Every single element has radioisotopes that no longer exist on Earth!*

Many people are familiar with a chart of the elements (Fig. 6). Nuclear chemists and geologists use a different kind of figure to show all of the isotopes. It is called a chart of the nuclides. Figure 7 shows a portion of this chart. It is basically a plot of the number of protons vs. the number of neutrons for various isotopes. Recall that an element is defined by how many protons it has. Each element can have a number of different isotopes, that is, atoms with different numbers of neutrons. So each element occupies a single row, while different isotopes of that element lie in different columns. For potassium found in nature, the total neutrons plus protons can add up to 39, 40, or 41. Potassium-39 and -41 are stable, but potassium-40 is unstable, giving us the dating methods discussed above. Besides the stable potassium isotopes and potassium-40, it is possible to produce a number of other potassium isotopes, but, as shown by the half-lives of these isotopes off to the side, they decay away rather quickly.

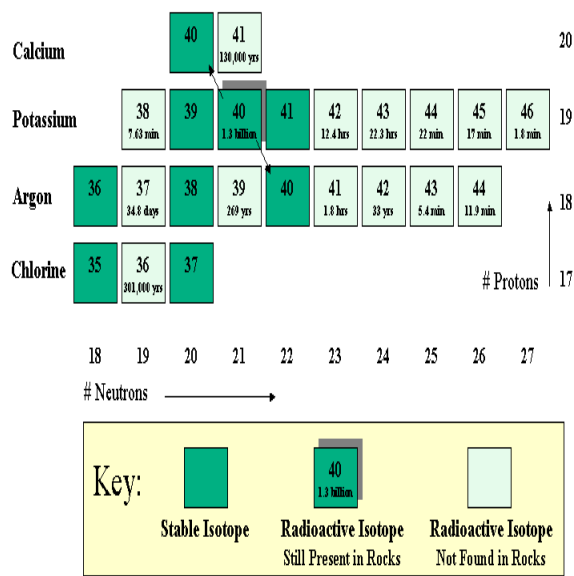


Figure 7. A portion of the chart of the nuclides showing isotopes of argon and potassium, and some of the isotopes of chlorine and calcium. Isotopes shown in dark green are found in rocks. Isotopes shown in light green have short half-lives, and thus are no longer found in rocks. Short-lived isotopes can be made for nearly every element in the periodic table, but unless replenished by cosmic rays or other radioactive isotopes, they no longer exist in nature.

Now, if we look at which radioisotopes still exist and which do not, we find a very interesting fact. Nearly all isotopes with half-lives shorter than half a billion years are no longer in existence. For example, although most rocks contain significant amounts of Calcium, the isotope Calcium-41 (half-life 130,000 years) does not exist just as potassium-38, -42, -43, etc. do not (Fig. 7). Just about the only radioisotopes found naturally are those with very long half-lives of close to a billion years or longer, as illustrated in the time line in Fig. 8. The only isotopes present with shorter half-lives are those that have a source constantly replenishing them. Chlorine-36 (shown in Fig. 7) is one such "cosmogenic" isotope, as we are about to discuss below. In a number of cases there is evidence, particularly in meteorites, that shorter-lived isotopes existed at some point in the past, but have since become extinct. Some of these isotopes and their half-lives are given in Table II. This is conclusive evidence that the solar system was created longer ago than the span of these half-lives! On the other hand, the existence in nature of parent isotopes with half-lives around a billion years and longer is strong evidence that the Earth was created not longer ago than several billion years. The Earth is old enough that radioactive isotopes with half-lives less than half a billion years decayed away, but not so old that radioactive isotopes with longer half-lives are gone. This is just like finding hourglasses measuring a long time interval still going, while hourglasses measuring shorter intervals have run out.

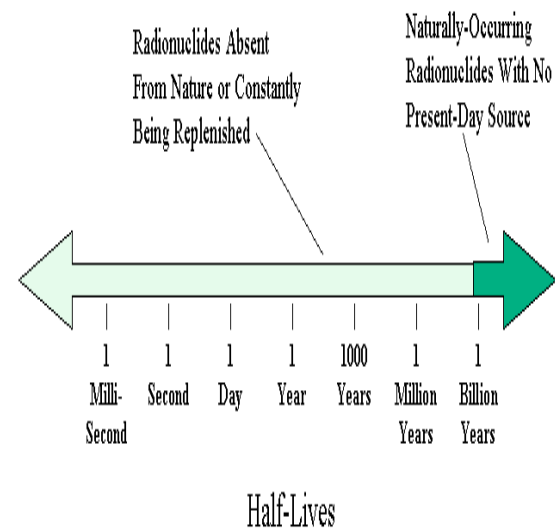


Figure 8. The only naturally-occurring radionuclides that exist with no present-day source have half-lives close

to 1 billion years or longer, which still exist from the creation of the Earth. Isotopes with half-lives shorter than that no longer exist in rocks unless they are being replenished by some source.

Cosmogenic Radionuclides: Carbon-14, Beryllium-10, Chlorine-36

Table 2. Extinct parent isotopes for which there is strong evidence that these once existed in substantial amounts in meteorites, but have since completely decayed away.	
Extinct Isotope	Half-Life (Years)
Plutonium-244	82 million
Iodine-129	16 million
Palladium-107	6.5 million
Manganese-53	3.7 million
Iron-60	1.5 million
Aluminum-26	700,000
Calcium-41	130,000

The last 5 radiometric systems listed up in Table I have far shorter half-lives than all the rest. Unlike the radioactive isotopes discussed above, these isotopes are constantly being replenished in small amounts in one of two ways. The bottom two entries, uranium-234 and thorium-230, are replenished as the long-lived uranium-238 atoms decay. These will be discussed in the next section. The other three, Carbon-14, beryllium-10, and chlorine-36 are produced by cosmic rays--high energy particles and photons in space--as they hit the Earth's upper atmosphere. Very small amounts of each of these isotopes are present in the air we breathe and the water we drink. As a result, living things, both plants and animals, ingest very small amounts of carbon-14, and lake and sea sediments take up small amounts of beryllium-10 and chlorine-36.

The cosmogenic dating clocks work somewhat differently than the others. Carbon-14 in particular is used to date material such as bones, wood, cloth, paper, and other dead tissue from either plants or animals. To a rough approximation, the ratio of carbon-14 to the stable isotopes, carbon-12 and carbon-13, is relatively constant in the atmosphere and living organisms, and has been well calibrated. Once a living thing dies, it no longer takes in carbon from food or air, and the amount of carbon-14 starts to drop with time. How far the carbon-14/carbon-12 ratio has dropped indicates how old the sample is. Since the half-life of carbon-14 is less than 6,000 years, it can only be used for dating material less than about 45,000 years old. Dinosaur bones do not have carbon-14 (unless contaminated), as the dinosaurs became extinct over 60 million years ago. But some other animals that are now extinct, such as North American mammoths, can be dated by carbon-14. Also, some materials from prehistoric times, as well as Biblical events, can be dated by carbon-14.



The carbon-14 dates have been carefully cross-checked with non-radiometric age indicators. For example growth rings in trees, if counted carefully, are a reliable way to determine the age of a tree. Each growth ring only collects carbon from the air and nutrients during the year it is made. To calibrate carbon-14, one can analyze carbon from the center several rings of a tree, and then count the rings inward from the living portion to determine the actual age. This has been done for the "Methuselah of trees", the bristlecone pine trees, which grow very slowly and live up to 6,000 years. Scientists have extended this calibration even further. These trees grow in a very dry region near the California-Nevada border. Dead trees in this dry climate take many thousands of years to decay. Growth ring patterns based on wet and dry years can be

correlated between living and long dead trees, extending the continuous ring count back to 11,800 years ago. "Floating" records, which are not tied to the present time, exist farther back than this, but their ages are not known with absolute certainty. An effort is presently underway to bridge the gaps so as to have a reliable, continuous record significantly farther back in time. The study of tree rings and the ages they give is called "dendrochronology".

Tree rings do not provide continuous chronologies beyond 11,800 years ago because a rather abrupt change in climate took place at that time, which was the end of the last ice age. During the ice age, long-lived trees grew in different areas than they do now. There are many indicators, some to be mentioned below, that show exactly how the climate changed at the end of the last ice age. It is difficult to find continuous tree ring records through this period of rapid climate change. Dendrochronology will probably eventually find reliable tree records that bridge this time period, but in the meantime, the carbon-14 ages have been calibrated farther back in time by other means.

Calibration of carbon-14 back to almost 50,000 years ago has been done in several ways. One way is to find yearly layers that are produced over longer periods of time than tree rings. In some lakes or bays where underwater sedimentation occurs at a relatively rapid rate, the sediments have seasonal patterns, so each year produces a distinct layer. Such sediment layers are called "varves", and are described in more detail below. Varve layers can be counted just like tree rings. If layers contain dead plant material, they can be used to calibrate the carbon-14 ages.

Another way to calibrate carbon-14 farther back in time is to find recently-formed carbonate deposits and cross-calibrate the carbon-14 in them with another short-lived radioactive isotope. Where do we find recently-formed carbonate deposits? If you have ever taken a tour of a cave and seen water dripping from stalactites on the ceiling to stalagmites on the floor of the cave, you have seen carbonate deposits being formed. Since most cave formations have formed relatively recently, formations such as stalactites and stalagmites have been quite useful in cross-calibrating the carbon-14 record.

What does one find in the calibration of carbon-14 against actual ages? If one predicts a carbon-14 age assuming that the ratio of carbon-14 to carbon-12 in the air has stayed constant, there is a slight error because this ratio has changed slightly. Figure 9 shows that the carbon-14 fraction in the air has decreased over the last 40,000 years by about a factor of two. This is attributed to a strengthening of the Earth's magnetic field during this time. A stronger magnetic field shields the upper atmosphere better from charged cosmic rays, resulting in less carbon-14 production now than in the past. (Changes in the Earth's magnetic field are well documented. Complete reversals of the north and south magnetic poles have occurred many times over geologic history.) A small amount of data beyond 40,000 years (not shown in Fig. 9) suggests that this trend reversed between 40,000 and 50,000 years, with lower carbon-14 to carbon-12 ratios farther back in time, but these data need to be confirmed.

What change does this have on uncalibrated carbon-14 ages? The bottom panel of Figure 9 shows the amount of offset in the uncalibrated ages. The offset is generally less than 1500 years over the last 10,000 years, but grows to about 6,000 years at 40,000 years before present. Uncalibrated radiocarbon ages *underestimate* the actual ages. Note that a factor of two difference in the atmospheric carbon-14 ratio, as shown in the top panel of Figure 9, does not translate to a factor of two offset in the age. Rather, the offset is equal to one half-life, or 5,700 years for carbon-14. This is only about 15% of the age of samples at 40,000 years. The initial portion of the calibration curve in Figure 9 has been widely available and well accepted for some time, so reported radiocarbon dates for ages up to 11,800 years generally give the calibrated ages unless otherwise stated. The calibration curve over the portions extending to 40,000 years is relatively recent, but should become widely adopted as well.

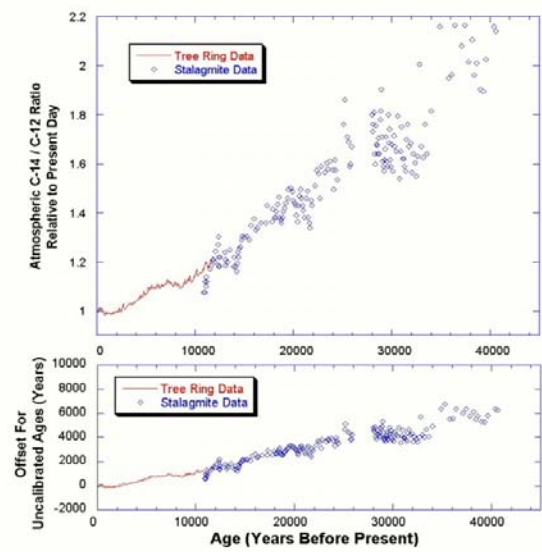


Figure 9. Ratio of atmospheric carbon-14 to carbon-12, relative to the present-day value (top panel). Unlike long-term radiometric dating methods, radiocarbon relies on knowing the fraction of radioactive carbon-14 in the atmosphere at the time the object being dated was alive. The production of carbon-14 by cosmic rays was up to a factor of about two higher than at present in the timescales over which radiocarbon can be used. Data for the last 11,800 years comes from tree-ring counting, while the data beyond that age comes from other sources, such as from a carbonate stalagmite for the data shown here. The bottom panel shows the offset in uncalibrated ages caused by this change in atmospheric composition. Tree-ring data are from Stuiver et al., *Radiocarbon* 40, 1041-1083, 1998; stalactite data are from Beck et al., *Science* 292, 2453-2458, 2001.

Radiometric Dating of Geologically Young Samples (<100,000 Years)

It is sometimes possible to date geologically young samples using some of the long-lived methods described above. These methods may work on young samples, for example, if there is a relatively high concentration of the parent isotope in the sample. In that case, sufficient daughter isotope amounts are produced in a relatively short time. As an example, an article in *Science* magazine (vol. 277, pp. 1279-1280, 1997) reports the agreement between the argon-argon method and the actual known age of lava from the famous eruption of Vesuvius in Italy in 79 A.D.

There are other ways to date some geologically young samples. Besides the cosmogenic radionuclides discussed above, there is one other class of short-lived radionuclides on Earth. These are ones produced by decay of the long-lived radionuclides given in the upper part of Table 1. As mentioned in the Uranium-Lead section, uranium does not decay immediately to a stable isotope, but decays through a number of shorter-lived radioisotopes until it ends up as lead. While the uranium-lead system can measure intervals in the millions of years generally without problems from the intermediate isotopes, those intermediate isotopes with the longest half-lives span long enough time intervals for dating events less than several hundred thousand years ago. (Note that these intervals are well under a tenth of a percent of the half-lives of the long-lived parent uranium and thorium isotopes discussed earlier.) Two of the most frequently-used of these "uranium-series" systems are uranium-234 and thorium-230. These are listed as the last two entries in Table 1, and are illustrated in Figure 10.

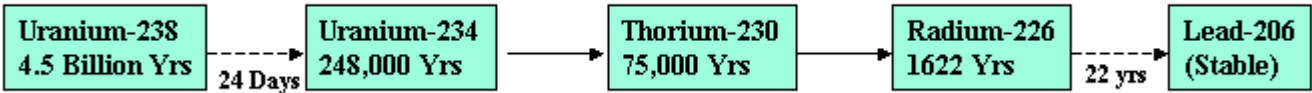


Figure 10. A schematic representation of the uranium-238 decay chain, showing the longest-lived nuclides. Half-lives are given in each box. Solid arrows represent direct decay, while dashed arrows indicate that there are one or more intermediate decays, with the longest intervening half-life given below the arrow.

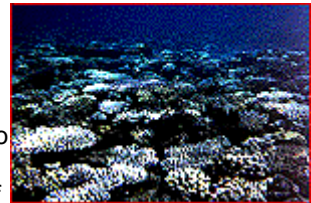
Like carbon-14, the shorter-lived uranium-series isotopes are constantly being replenished, in this case, by decaying uranium-238 supplied to the Earth during its original creation. Following the example of carbon-14, you may guess that one

way to use these isotopes for dating is to remove them from their source of replenishment. This starts the dating clock. In carbon-14 this happens when a living thing (like a tree) dies and no longer takes in carbon-14-laden CO₂. For the shorter-lived uranium-series radionuclides, there needs to be a physical removal from uranium. The chemistry of uranium and thorium are such that they are in fact easily removed from each other. Uranium tends to stay dissolved in water, but thorium is insoluble in water. So a number of applications of the thorium-230 method are based on this chemical partition between uranium and thorium.

Sediments at the bottom of the ocean have very little uranium relative to the thorium. Because of this, the uranium, and its contribution to the thorium abundance, can in many cases be ignored in sediments. Thorium-230 then behaves similarly to the long-lived parent isotopes we discussed earlier. It acts like a simple parent-daughter system, and it can be used to date sediments.

On the other hand, calcium carbonates produced biologically (such as in corals, shells, teeth, and bones) take in small amounts of uranium, but essentially no thorium (because of its much lower concentrations in the water). This allows the dating of these materials by their *lack* of thorium. A brand-new coral reef will have essentially no thorium-230. As it ages, some of its uranium decays to thorium-230. While the thorium-230 itself is radioactive, this can be corrected for. The equations are more complex than for the simple systems described earlier, but the uranium-234 / thorium-230 method has been used to date corals now for several decades. Comparison of uranium-234 ages with ages obtained by counting annual growth bands of corals proves that the technique is highly accurate when properly used (Edwards *et al.*, *Earth Planet. Sci. Lett.* 90, 371, 1988). The method has also been used to date stalactites and stalagmites from caves, already mentioned in connection with long-term calibration of the radiocarbon method. In fact, tens of thousands of uranium-series dates have been performed on cave formations around the world.

The uranium-234 / thorium-230 method is now being used to date animal and human bones and teeth. Previously, dating of anthropology sites had to rely on dating of geologic layers above and below the artifacts. But with improvements in this method, it is becoming possible to date the human and animal remains themselves. Work to date shows that dating of tooth enamel can be quite reliable. However, dating of bones can be more problematic, as bones are more susceptible to contamination by the surrounding soils. As with all dating, the agreement of two or more methods is highly recommended for confirmation of a measurement. If the samples are beyond the range of radiocarbon (e.g., > 40,000 years), a second method for confirmation of thorium-230 ages may need to be a non-radiometric method such as ESR or TL, mentioned below.



Non-Radiometric Dating Methods for the Past 100,000 Years

We will digress briefly from radiometric dating to talk about other dating techniques. It is important to understand that a very large number of accurate dates covering the past 100,000 years has been obtained from many other methods besides radiometric dating. We have already mentioned dendrochronology (tree ring dating) above. Dendrochronology is only the tip of the iceberg in terms of non-radiometric dating methods. Here we will look briefly at some other non-radiometric dating techniques.

Ice Cores. One of the best ways to measure farther back in time than tree rings is by using the seasonal variations in polar ice from Greenland and Antarctica. There are a number of differences between snow layers made in winter and those made in spring, summer, and fall. These seasonal layers can be counted just like tree rings. The seasonal differences consist of a) visual differences caused by increased bubbles and larger crystal size from summer ice compared to winter ice, b) dust layers deposited each summer, c) nitric acid concentrations, measured by electrical conductivity of the ice, d) chemistry of contaminants in the ice, and e) seasonal variations in the relative amounts of heavy hydrogen (deuterium) and heavy oxygen (oxygen-18) in the ice. These isotope ratios are sensitive to the temperature at the time they fell as snow from the clouds. The heavy isotope is lower in abundance during the colder winter snows than it is in snow falling in spring and summer. So the yearly layers of ice can be tracked by each of these five different indicators, similar to growth rings on trees. The different types of layers are summarized in Table III.

Ice cores are obtained by drilling very deep holes in the ice caps on Greenland and Antarctica with specialized drilling rigs. As the rigs drill down, the drill bits cut around a portion of the ice, capturing a long undisturbed "core" in the process. These cores are carefully brought back to the surface in sections, where they are catalogued, and taken to research laboratories under refrigeration. A very large amount of work has been done on several deep ice cores up to 9,000 feet in depth. Several hundred thousand measurements are sometimes made for a single technique on a single ice core.

A continuous count of layers exists back as far as 160,000 years. In addition to yearly layering, individual strong events (such as large-scale volcanic eruptions) can be observed and correlated between ice cores. A number of historical eruptions as far back as Vesuvius nearly 2,000 years ago serve as benchmarks with which to determine the accuracy of the yearly

layers as far down as around 500 meters. As one goes further down in the ice core, the ice becomes more compacted than near the surface, and individual yearly layers are slightly more difficult to observe. For this reason, there is some uncertainty as one goes back towards 100,000 years. Ages of 40,000 years or less are estimated to be off by 2% at most. Ages of 60,000 years may be off by up to 10%, and the uncertainty rises to 20% for ages of 110,000 years based on direct counting of layers (D. Meese et al., *J. Geophys. Res.* 102, 26,411, 1997). Recently, absolute ages have been determined to 75,000 years for at least one location using cosmogenic radionuclides chlorine-36 and beryllium-10 (G. Wagner et al., *Earth Planet. Sci. Lett.* 193, 515, 2001). These agree with the ice flow models and the yearly layer counts. Note that there is no indication anywhere that these ice caps were ever covered by a large body of water, as some people with young-Earth views would expect.

Table III. Polar ice core layers, counting back yearly layers, consist of the following:

Visual Layers	Summer ice has more bubbles and larger crystal sizes	Observed to 60,000 years ago
Dust Layers	Measured by laser light scattering; most dust is deposited during spring and summer	Observed to 160,000 years ago
Layering of Electrical Conductivity	Nitric acid from the stratosphere is deposited in the springtime, and causes a yearly layer in electrical conductivity measurement	Observed through 60,000 years ago
Contaminant Chemistry Layers	Soot from summer forest fires, chemistry of dust, occasional volcanic ash	Observed through 2,000 years; some older eruptions noted
Hydrogen and Oxygen Isotope Layering	Indicates temperature of precipitation. Heavy isotopes (oxygen-18 and deuterium) are depleted more in winter.	Yearly layers observed through 1,100 years; Trends observed much farther back in time

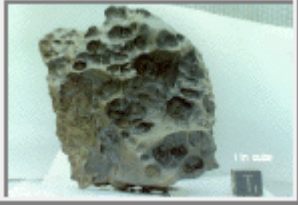
Varves. Another layering technique uses seasonal variations in sedimentary layers deposited underwater. The two requirements for varves to be useful in dating are 1) that sediments vary in character through the seasons to produce a visible yearly pattern, and 2) that the lake bottom not be disturbed after the layers are deposited. These conditions are most often met in small, relatively deep lakes at mid to high latitudes. Shallower lakes typically experience an overturn in which the warmer water sinks to the bottom as winter approaches, but deeper lakes can have persistently thermally stratified (temperature-layered) water masses, leading to less turbulence, and better conditions for varve layers. Varves can be harvested by coring drills, somewhat similar to the harvesting of ice cores discussed above. Overall, many hundreds of lakes have been studied for their varve patterns. Each yearly varve layer consists of a) mineral matter brought in by swollen streams in the spring. b) This gradually gives way to organic particulate matter such as plant fibers, algae, and pollen with fine-grained mineral matter, consistent with summer and fall deposition. c) With winter ice covering the lake, fine-grained organic matter provides the final part of the yearly layer. Regular sequences of varves have been measured going back to about 35,000 years. The thicknesses of the layers and the types of material in them tells a lot about the climate of the time when the layers were deposited. For example, pollens entrained in the layers can tell what types of plants were growing nearby at a particular time.

Other annual layering methods. Besides tree rings, ice cores, and sediment varves, there are other processes that result in yearly layers that can be counted to determine an age. Annual layering in coral reefs can be used to date sections of coral. Coral generally grows at rates of around 1 cm per year, and these layers are easily visible. As was mentioned in the uranium-series section, the counting of annual coral layers was used to verify the accuracy of the thorium-230 method.

Thermoluminescence. There is a way of dating minerals and pottery that does not rely directly on half-lives. Thermoluminescence dating, or TL dating, uses the fact that radioactive decays cause some electrons in a material to end up stuck in higher-energy orbits. The number of electrons in higher-energy orbits accumulates as a material experiences more natural radioactivity over time. If the material is heated, these electrons can fall back to their original orbits, emitting a very tiny amount of light. If the heating occurs in a laboratory furnace equipped with a very sensitive light detector, this light can be recorded. (The term comes from putting together *thermo*, meaning heat, and *luminescence*, meaning to emit light). By comparison of the amount of light emitted with the natural radioactivity rate the sample experienced, the age of the sample can be determined. TL dating can generally be used on samples less than half a million years old. Related

techniques include optically stimulated luminescence (OSL), and infrared stimulated luminescence (IRSL). TL dating and its related techniques have been cross calibrated with samples of known historical age and with radiocarbon and thorium dating. While TL dating does not usually pinpoint the age with as great an accuracy as these other conventional radiometric dating, it is most useful for applications such as pottery or fine-grained volcanic dust, where other dating methods do not work as well.

Electron spin resonance (ESR). Also called electron paramagnetic resonance, ESR dating also relies on the changes in electron orbits and spins caused by radioactivity over time. However, ESR dating can be used over longer time periods, up to two million years, and works best on carbonates, such as in coral reefs and cave deposits. It has also seen extensive use in dating tooth enamel.



Cosmic-ray exposure dating. This dating method relies on measuring certain isotopes produced by cosmic ray impacts on exposed rock surfaces. Because cosmic rays constantly bombard meteorites flying through space, this method has long been used to date the 'flight time' of meteorites--that is the time from when they were chipped off a larger body (like an asteroid) to the time they land on Earth. The cosmic rays produce small amounts of naturally-rare isotopes such as neon-21 and helium-3, which can be measured in the laboratory. The cosmic-ray exposure ages of meteorites are usually around 10 million years, but can be up to a billion years for some iron meteorites. In the last fifteen years, people have also used cosmic ray exposure ages to date rock surfaces on the Earth. This is much more complicated because the Earth's magnetic field and atmosphere shield us from most of the cosmic rays. Cosmic ray exposure calibrations must take into account the elevation above sea level because the atmospheric shielding varies with elevation, and must also take into account latitude, as the magnetic shielding varies from the equator to the poles. Nevertheless, terrestrial cosmic-ray exposure dating has been shown to be useful in many cases.

Can We Really Believe the Dating Systems?

We have covered a lot of convincing evidence that the Earth was created a very long time ago. The agreement of many different dating methods, both radiometric and non-radiometric, over hundreds of thousands of samples, is very convincing. Yet, some Christians question whether we can believe something so far back in the past. My answer is that it is similar to believing in other things of the past. It only differs in degree. Why do you believe Abraham Lincoln ever lived? Because it would take an extremely elaborate scheme to make up his existence, including forgeries, fake photos, and many other things, and besides, there is no good reason to simply have made him up. Well, the situation is very similar for the dating of rocks, only we have rock records rather than historical records. Consider the following:

- There are well over forty different radiometric dating methods, and scores of other methods such as tree rings and ice cores.
- *All of the different dating methods agree*--they agree a great majority of the time over millions of years of time. Some Christians make it sound like there is a lot of disagreement, but this is not the case. The disagreement in values needed to support the position of young-Earth proponents would require differences in age measured by orders of magnitude (e.g., factors of 10,000, 100,000, a million, or more). The differences actually found in the scientific literature are usually close to the margin of error, usually a few percent, not orders of magnitude!
- Vast amounts of data overwhelmingly favor an old Earth. Several hundred laboratories around the world are active in radiometric dating. Their results consistently agree with an old Earth. Over a thousand papers on radiometric dating were published in scientifically recognized journals in the last year, and hundreds of thousands of dates have been published in the last 50 years. Essentially all of these strongly favor an old Earth.
- Radioactive decay rates have been measured for over sixty years now for many of the decay clocks without any observed changes. And it has been close to a hundred years since the uranium-238 decay rate was first determined.
- Both long-range and short-range dating methods have been successfully verified by dating lavas of historically known ages over a range of several thousand years.
- The mathematics for determining the ages from the observations is relatively simple.

The last three points deserve more attention. Some Christians have argued that something may be slowly changing with time so all the ages look older than they really are. The only two quantities in the exponent of a decay rate equation are the half-life and the time. So for ages to appear longer than actual, all the half-lives would have to be changing in sync with each other. One could consider that time itself was changing if that happened (remember that our clocks are now standardized to atomic clocks!). And such a thing would have to have occurred without our detection in the last hundred years, which is already 5% of the way back to the time of Christ.

Beyond this, scientists have now used a "time machine" to prove that the half-lives of radioactive species were the same millions of years ago. This time machine does not allow people to actually go back in time, but it does allow scientists to observe ancient events from a long way away. The time machine is called the telescope. Because God's universe is so large,

images from distant events take a long time to get to us. Telescopes allow us to see supernovae (exploding stars) at distances so vast that the pictures take hundreds of thousands to millions of years to arrive at the Earth. So the events we see today actually occurred hundreds of thousands to millions of years ago. And what do we see when we look back in time? Much of the light following a supernova blast is powered by newly created radioactive parents. So we observe radiometric decay in the supernova light. The half-lives of decays occurring hundreds of thousands of years ago are thus carefully recorded! These half-lives completely agree with the half-lives measured from decays occurring today. We must conclude that all evidence points towards unchanging radioactive half-lives.

Some individuals have suggested that the speed of light must have been different in the past, and that the starlight has not really taken so long to reach us. However, the astronomical evidence mentioned above also suggests that the speed of light has *not* changed, or else we would see a significant apparent change in the half-lives of these ancient radioactive decays.

Doubters Still Try

Some doubters have tried to dismiss geologic dating with a sleight of hand by saying that no rocks are completely closed systems (that is, that no rocks are so isolated from their surroundings that they have not lost or gained some of the isotopes used for dating). Speaking from an extreme technical viewpoint this might be true--perhaps 1 atom out of 1,000,000,000,000 of a certain isotope has leaked out of nearly all rocks, but such a change would make an immeasurably small change in the result. The real question to ask is, "is the rock sufficiently close to a closed system that the results will be same as a really closed system?" Since the early 1960s many books have been written on this subject. These books detail experiments showing, for a given dating system, which minerals work all of the time, which minerals work under some certain conditions, and which minerals are likely to lose atoms and give incorrect results. Understanding these conditions is part of the science of geology. Geologists are careful to use the most reliable methods whenever possible, and as discussed above, to test for agreement between different methods.

Some people have tried to defend a young Earth position by saying that the half-lives of radionuclides can in fact be changed, and that this can be done by certain little-understood particles such as neutrinos, muons, or cosmic rays. This is stretching it. While certain particles can cause nuclear changes, they do not change the half-lives. The nuclear changes are well understood and are nearly always very minor in rocks. In fact the main nuclear changes in rocks are the very radioactive decays we are talking about.

There are only three quite technical instances where a half-life changes, and these do not affect the dating methods we have discussed.

1. Only one technical exception occurs under terrestrial conditions, and this is not for an isotope used for dating. According to theory, electron-capture is the most likely type of decay to show changes with pressure or chemical combination, and this should be most pronounced for very light elements. The artificially-produced isotope, beryllium-7 has been shown to change by up to 1.5%, depending on its chemical environment (*Earth Planet. Sci. Lett.* 171, 325-328, 1999; see also *Earth Planet. Sci. Lett.* 195, 131-139, 2002). In another experiment, a half-life change of a small fraction of a percent was detected when beryllium-7 was subjected to 270,000 atmospheres of pressure, equivalent to depths greater than 450 miles inside the Earth (*Science* 181, 1163-1164, 1973). All known rocks, with the possible exception of diamonds, are from much shallower depths. In fact, beryllium-7 is not used for dating rocks, as it has a half-life of only 54 days, and heavier atoms are even less subject to these minute changes, so the dates of rocks made by electron-capture decays would only be off by at most a few hundredths of a percent.

2. Physical conditions at the center of stars or for cosmic rays differ very greatly from anything experienced in rocks on or in the Earth. Yet, self-proclaimed "experts" often confuse these conditions. Cosmic rays are very, very high-energy atomic nuclei flying through space. The electron-capture decay mentioned above does not take place in cosmic rays until they slow down. This is because the fast-moving cosmic ray nuclei do not have electrons surrounding them, which are necessary for this form of decay. Another case is material inside of stars, which is in a plasma state where electrons are not bound to atoms. In the extremely hot stellar environment, a completely different kind of decay can occur. 'Bound-state beta decay' occurs when the nucleus emits an electron into a bound electronic state close to the nucleus. This has been observed for dysprosium-163 and rhenium-187 under very specialized conditions simulating the interior of stars (*Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 69, 2164-2167; *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 77, 5190-5193, 1996). All normal matter, such as everything on Earth, the Moon, meteorites, etc. has electrons in normal positions, so these instances never apply to rocks, or anything colder than several hundred thousand degrees.

As an example of incorrect application of these conditions to dating, one young-Earth proponent suggested that God used plasma conditions when He created the Earth a few thousand years ago. This writer suggested that the rapid decay rate of rhenium under extreme plasma conditions might explain why rocks give very old ages instead of a young-Earth age. This writer neglected a number of things, including: a) plasmas only affect a few of the dating methods. More importantly, b)

rocks and hot gaseous plasmas are completely incompatible forms of matter! The material would have to revert back from the plasma state before it could form rocks. In such a scenario, as the rocks cooled and hardened, their ages would be completely reset to zero as described in previous sections. If this person's scenario were correct, instead of showing old ages, all the rocks should show a uniform ~4,000 year age of creation. That is obviously not what is observed.

3. The last case also involves very fast-moving matter. It has been demonstrated by atomic clocks in very fast spacecraft. These atomic clocks slow down very slightly (only a second or so per year) as predicted by Einstein's theory of relativity. No rocks in our solar system are going fast enough to make a noticeable change in their dates.

These cases are very specialized, and all are well understood. None of these cases alter the dates of rocks either on Earth or other planets in the solar system. The conclusion once again is that half-lives are completely reliable in every context for the dating of rocks on Earth and even on other planets. The Earth and all creation appears to be very ancient.

Apparent Age?

It would not be inconsistent with the scientific evidence to conclude that God made everything relatively recently, but with the appearance of great age, just as Genesis 1 and 2 tell of God making Adam as a fully grown human (which implies the appearance of age). This idea was captured by Phillip Henry Gosse in the book, "*Omphalos: An Attempt to Untie the Geological Knot*", written just two years before Darwin's "*Origin of Species*". The idea of a false appearance of great age is a philosophical and theological matter that we won't go into here. The main drawback--and it is a strong one--is that this makes God appear to be a deceiver. However, some people have no problem with this. Certainly whole civilizations have been incorrect (deceived?) in their scientific and theological ideas in the past. Whatever the philosophical conclusions, it is important to note that an *apparent* old Earth is consistent with the great amount of scientific evidence.

Rightly Handling the Word of Truth

As Christians it is of great importance that we understand God's word correctly. Yet from the middle ages up until the 1700s people insisted that the Bible taught that the Earth, not the Sun, was the center of the solar system. It wasn't that people just thought it had to be that way; they actually quoted scriptures: "The Earth is firmly fixed; it shall not be moved" (Psalm 104:5), or "the sun stood still" (Joshua 10:13; why should it say the sun stood still if it is the Earth's rotation that causes day and night?), and many other passages. I am afraid the debate over the age of the Earth has many similarities. But I am optimistic. Today there are many Christians who accept the reliability of geologic dating, but do not compromise the spiritual and historical inerrancy of God's word. While a full discussion of Genesis 1 is not given here, references are given below to a few books that deal with that issue.

As scientists, we deal daily with what God has revealed about Himself through the created universe. The psalmist marveled at how God, Creator of the universe, could care about humans: "*When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, the moon and the stars, which You have set in place, what is man that You are mindful of him, the son of man that You care for him?*" (Psalm 8:3-4). Near the beginning of the twenty-first century we can marvel all the more, knowing how vast the universe is, how ancient are the rocks and hills, and how carefully our environment has been designed. Truly God is more awesome than we can imagine!

APPENDIX: Common Misconceptions Regarding Radiometric Dating Methods

There are a number of misconceptions that seem especially prevalent among Christians. Most of these topics are covered in the above discussion, but they are reviewed briefly here for clarity.

1. *Radiometric dating is based on index fossils whose dates were assigned long before radioactivity was discovered.*

This is not at all true, though it is implied by some young-Earth literature. Radiometric dating is based on the half-lives of the radioactive isotopes. These half-lives have been measured over the last 40-90 years. They are not calibrated by fossils.

2. *No one has measured the decay rates directly; we only know them from inference.*



NASA

Decay rates have been directly measured over the last 40-100 years. In some cases a batch of the pure parent material is weighed and then set aside for a long time and then the resulting daughter material is weighed. In many cases it is easier to detect radioactive decays by the energy burst that each decay gives off. For this a batch of the pure parent material is carefully weighed and then put in front of a Geiger counter or gamma-ray detector. These instruments count the number of decays over a long time.

3. If the half-lives are billions of years, it is impossible to determine them from measuring over just a few years or decades.

The example given in the section titled, "The Radiometric Clocks" shows that an accurate determination of the half-life is easily achieved by direct counting of decays over a decade or shorter. This is because a) all decay curves have exactly the same shape (Fig. 1), differing only in the half-life, and b) trillions of decays can be counted in one year even using only a fraction of a gram of material with a half-life of a billion years. Additionally, lavas of historically known ages have been correctly dated even using methods with long half-lives.

4. The decay rates are poorly known, so the dates are inaccurate.

Most of the decay rates used for dating rocks are known to within two percent. Uncertainties are only slightly higher for rhenium (5%), lutetium (3%), and beryllium (3%), discussed in connection with Table 1. Such small uncertainties are no reason to dismiss radiometric dating. Whether a rock is 100 million years or 102 million years old does not make a great deal of difference.

5. A small error in the half-lives leads to a very large error in the date.

Since exponents are used in the dating equations, it is possible for people to think this might be true, but it is not. If a half-life is off by 2%, it will only lead to a 2% error in the date.

6. Decay rates can be affected by the physical surroundings.

This is not true in the context of dating rocks. Radioactive atoms used for dating have been subjected to extremes of heat, cold, pressure, vacuum, acceleration, and strong chemical reactions far beyond anything experienced by rocks, without any significant change. The only exceptions, which are not relevant to dating rocks, are discussed under the section, "Doubters Still Try", above.

7. A small change in the nuclear forces probably accelerated nuclear clocks during the first day of creation a few thousand years ago, causing the spuriously old radiometric dates of rocks.

Rocks are dated from the time of their formation. For it to have any bearing on the radiometric dates of rocks, such a change of nuclear forces must have occurred after the Earth (and the rocks) were formed. To make the kind of difference suggested by young-Earth proponents, the half-lives must be shortened from several billion years down to several thousand years--a factor of at least a million. But to shorten half-lives by factors of a million would cause large physical changes. As one small example, recall that the Earth is heated substantially by radioactive decay. If that decay is speeded up by a factor of a million or so, the tremendous heat pulse would easily melt the whole Earth, including the rocks in question! No radiometric ages would appear old if this happened.

8. The decay rates might be slowing down over time, leading to incorrect old dates.

There are two ways we know this didn't happen: a) we have checked them out with "time machines", and b) it doesn't make sense mathematically. Both of these points are explained in the section titled, "Can We Really Believe the Dating Systems?"

9. We should measure the "full-life" (the time at which all of the parent is gone) rather than the half-life (the time when half of it is gone).

Unlike sand in an hourglass, which drops at a constant rate independent of how much remains in the top half of the glass, the number of radioactive decays is proportional to the amount of parent remaining. Figure 1 shows how after 2 half-lives, $1/2 \times 1/2 = 1/4$ is left, and so on. After 10 half-lives there is $2^{-10} = 0.098\%$ remaining. A half-life is more easy to define than some point at which almost all of the parent is gone. Scientists sometimes instead use the term "mean life", that is, the average life of a parent atom. The mean life is always $1/\ln(2) = 1.44$ times the half-life. For most of us half-life is easier to understand.

10. *To date a rock one must know the original amount of the parent element. But there is no way to measure how much parent element was originally there.*

It is very easy to calculate the original parent abundance, but that information is not needed to date the rock. All of the dating schemes work from knowing the *present* abundances of the parent and daughter isotopes. The original abundance N_0 , of the parent is simply $N_0 = N e^{kt}$, where N is the present abundance, t is time, and k is a constant related to the half life.

11. *There is little or no way to tell how much of the decay product, that is, the daughter isotope, was originally in the rock, leading to anomalously old ages.*

A good part of this article is devoted to explaining how one can tell how much of a given element or isotope was originally present. Usually it involves using more than one sample from a given rock. It is done by comparing the ratios of parent and daughter isotopes relative to a stable isotope for samples with different relative amounts of the parent isotope. For example, in the rubidium-strontium method one compares rubidium-87/strontium-86 to strontium-87/strontium-86 for different minerals. From this one can determine how much of the daughter isotope would be present if there had been no parent isotope. This is the same as the initial amount (it would not change if there were no parent isotope to decay). Figures 4 and 5, and the accompanying explanation, tell how this is done most of the time. While this is not absolutely 100% foolproof, comparison of several dating methods will always show whether the given date is reliable.

12. *There are only a few different dating methods.*

This article has listed and discussed a number of different radiometric dating methods and has also briefly described a number of non-radiometric dating methods. There are actually many more methods out there. Well over forty different radiometric dating methods are in use, and a number of non-radiogenic methods not even mentioned here.

13. *"Radiation halos" in rocks prove that the Earth was young.*

This refers to tiny halos of crystal damage surrounding spots where radioactive elements are concentrated in certain rocks. Halos thought to be from polonium, a short-lived element produced from the decay of uranium, have been found in some rocks. A plausible explanation for a halo from such a short-lived element is that these were not produced by an initial concentration of the radioactive element. Rather, as water seeped through cracks in the minerals, a chemical change caused newly-formed polonium to drop out of solution at a certain place and almost immediately decay there. A halo would build up over a long period of time even though the center of the halo never contained more than a few atoms of polonium at one time. "Hydrothermal" effects can act in ways that at first seem strange, such as the well-known fact that gold--a chemically un-reactive metal with very low solubilities--is concentrated along quartz veins by the action of water over long periods of time. Other researchers have found halos produced by an indirect radioactive decay effect called hole diffusion, which is an electrical effect in a crystal. These results suggest that the halos in question are not from short-lived isotopes after all.

At any rate, halos from uranium inclusions are far more common. Because of uranium's long half-lives, these halos take at least several hundred million years to form. Because of this, most people agree that halos provide compelling evidence for a very old *Earth*.

14. *A young-Earth research group reported that they sent a rock erupted in 1980 from Mount Saint Helens volcano to a dating lab and got back a potassium-argon age of several million years. This shows we should not trust radiometric dating.*

There are indeed ways to "trick" radiometric dating if a single dating method is improperly used on a sample. Anyone can move the hands on a clock and get the wrong time. Likewise, people actively looking for incorrect radiometric dates can in fact get them. Geologists have known for over forty years that the potassium-argon method cannot be used on rocks only twenty to thirty years old. Publicizing this incorrect age as a completely new finding was inappropriate. The reasons are discussed in the Potassium-Argon Dating section above. Be assured that multiple dating methods used together on igneous rocks are almost always correct unless the sample is too difficult to date due to factors such as metamorphism or a large fraction of xenoliths.

15. *Low abundances of helium in zircon grains show that these minerals are much younger than radiometric dating suggests.*

Zircon grains are important for uranium-thorium-lead dating because they contain abundant uranium and thorium parent isotopes. Helium is also produced from the decay of uranium and thorium. However, as a gas of very small atomic size, helium tends to escape rather easily. Researchers have studied the rates of diffusion of helium from zircons, with the

prediction from one study by a young-*Earth* creationist suggesting that it should be quantitatively retained despite its atomic size. The assumptions of the temperature conditions of the rock over time are most likely unrealistic in this case.

16. *The fact that radiogenic helium and argon are still degassing from the Earth's interior prove that the Earth must be young.*

The radioactive parent isotopes, uranium and potassium, have very long half-lives, as shown in Table 1. These parents still exist in abundance in the Earth's interior, and are still producing helium and argon. There is also a time lag between the production of the daughter products and their degassing. If the Earth were geologically very young, very little helium and argon would have been produced. One can compare the amount of argon in the atmosphere to what would be expected from decay of potassium over 4.6 billion years, and in fact it is consistent.

17. *The waters of Noah's flood could have leached radioactive isotopes out of rocks, disturbing their ages.*

This is actually suggested on one website! While water can affect the ability to date rock surfaces or other weathered areas, there is generally no trouble dating interior portions of most rocks from the bottom of lakes, rivers, and oceans. Additionally, if ages were disturbed by leaching, the leaching would affect different isotopes at vastly different rates. Ages determined by different methods would be in violent disagreement. If the flood were global in scope, why then would we have *any* rocks for which a number of different methods all agree with each other? In fact, close agreement between methods for most samples is a hallmark of radiometric dating.

18. *We know the Earth is much younger because of non-radiogenic indicators such as the sedimentation rate of the oceans.*

There are a number of parameters which, if extrapolated from the present without taking into account the changes in the *Earth* over time, would seem to suggest a somewhat younger *Earth*. These arguments can sound good on a very simple level, but do not hold water when all the factors are considered. Some examples of these categories are the decaying magnetic field (not mentioning the widespread evidence for magnetic reversals), the saltiness of the oceans (not counting sedimentation!), the sedimentation rate of the oceans (not counting Earthquakes and crustal movement, that is, plate tectonics), the relative paucity of meteorites on the Earth's surface (not counting weathering or plate tectonics), the thickness of dust on the moon (without taking into account brecciation over time), the Earth-Moon separation rate (not counting changes in tides and internal forces), etc. While these arguments do not stand up when the complete picture is considered, the case for a very old creation of the Earth fits well in all areas considered.

19. *Only atheists and liberals are involved in radiometric dating.*

The fact is that there are a number of Bible-believing Christians who are involved in radiometric dating, and who can see its validity firsthand. A great number of other Christians are firmly convinced that radiometric dating shows evidence that God created the Earth billions, not thousands, of years ago.

20. *Different dating techniques usually give conflicting results.*

This is not true at all. The fact that dating techniques most often agree with each other is why scientists tend to trust them in the first place. Nearly every college and university library in the country has periodicals such as *Science*, *Nature*, and specific geology journals that give the results of dating studies. The public is usually welcome to (and should!) browse in these libraries. So the results are not hidden; people can go look at the results for themselves. Over a thousand research papers are published a year on radiometric dating, essentially all in agreement. Besides the scientific periodicals that carry up-to-date research reports, specific suggestions are given below for further reading, both for textbooks, non-classroom books, and web resources.

Resources On the Web:

Virtual Dating--a very helpful educational course on half-lives and radioactive decay was put together by Gary Novak at California State University in Los Angeles. This site has several interactive web "workbooks" to help the reader understand various concepts involved with radiometric dating.

<http://vcourseware5.calstatela.edu/VirtualDating>

Reasons to Believe--a Christian ministry supporting the old-Earth viewpoint. Dr. Hugh Ross, the founder and head of the ministry, holds a PhD in Astronomy. The ministry supports an accurate interpretation of the Bible while also supportive of science as a tool to study God's creation.

www.reasons.org

American Scientific Affiliation (ASA)--an umbrella organization of Christians in many different areas of the sciences. Most of the members hold an old-Earth view, though membership is open to anyone supporting their positional statement. This website has numerous resources on theology and Bible-science issues.

www.asa3.org

Affiliation of Christian Geologists (ACG)--an organization of Geologists who are Christians. The ACG is affiliated with the ASA (above).

www.wheaton.edu/acg

Lord I Believe--a site maintained by Hill Roberts, a self-professed conservative Christian and a Physicist. There is a wealth of information, including presentations on the interpretation of Genesis chapters 1-3, a resource list of apologetics ministries, etc.

<http://LordIBelieve.org>

A review of Phillip Henry Gosse's *Omphalos: An Attempt to Untie the Geological Knot*, in which fiat creation with the appearance of age is suggested. Reviewed by Rev. John W. Burgeson.

<http://www.burgy.50megs.com/omphalos.htm>

Origins--this site is devoted mainly to evidences for intelligent design in nature.

www.origins.com

Talk Origins--an archive dedicated to creation-evolution issues. Originally created by Chris Stassen, this site is supported by the National Center For Science Education.

www.talkorigins.org

A Radiometric Dating Resource List--a very comprehensive resource list for radiometric dating, maintained by Tim Thompson of the NASA Jet Propulsion Laboratory. It includes separate resource sections on the reliability of radiometric dating, introductory articles, advanced articles, radiocarbon dating, etc.

www.geocities.com/CapeCanaveral/8851/radiometric.html

C-14 Dating--The radiocarbon laboratories at Oxford (England) and Waikato (New Zealand) Universities jointly operate this website which gives very comprehensive information on radiocarbon dating. Portions of it were written specifically for use by K-12 students, so it is easy to understand. The site contains explanations on measurements, applications, calibration, publications, and other areas.

<http://www.c14dating.com>

Cornell University Geology 656 Lecture Notes--A large number of pdf files of geology lecture notes are available on the web. These are university-level lecture notes describing radiometric dating and related topics.

<http://www.geo.cornell.edu/geology/classes/Geo656/656notes98.html>

<http://www.geo.cornell.edu/geology/classes/Geo656/656notes00.html>

Further Reading: Books

Radiometric dating textbooks: The following books are popular college-level Geology texts that deal in depth with various dating techniques. *Geologic Time* is very easy to read and has been around for quite some time. The text by Dalrymple is meant to be relatively easy to read, but is also very comprehensive. The Faure and Dickin texts are regular textbooks for Geology, including more mathematics and more details.

Dickin, Alan P. (1995) *Radiogenic Isotope Geology*. Cambridge University Press, 490 pp.

Dalrymple, G. Brent (1991) *The Age of the Earth*. Stanford University Press, 474 pp.

Faure, Gunter (1991) *Principles and Applications of Inorganic Geochemistry: A Comprehensive Textbook for Geology Students*. MacMillan Pub. Co., New York, 626 pp.

Faure, Gunter (1986) *Principles of Isotope Geology*, 2nd edition. Wiley, New York, 464 pp.

Eicher, Don L. (1976) *Geologic Time*, 2nd edition. Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, NJ, 150 pp.

Other books on dating:

Jespersen, James, and Jane Fitz-Randolph (1996) *Mummies, Dinosaurs, Moon Rocks: How We Know How Old Things Are*. Atheneum Books, New York, 92 pp.

This is a book designed for easy reading on the general subject of dating. This short book covers topics from archeology to tree ring dating to radiocarbon dating of the dead sea scrolls, to dating of meteorites and moon rocks. The book is out of print, but slightly used copies can be obtained from online dealers like Amazon.

Wagner, G?nther A. (1998) *Age Determination of Young Rocks and Artifacts*. Springer-Verlag, New York, 466 pp. [Translated from the original *Altersbestimmung von jungen Gesteinen und Artefakten*, Ferdinand Enke Verlag, Stuttgart, 1995]

This book is a quite comprehensive reference on all methods for determining dates less than about a million years old. It includes a large amount of information on archeological dating, and describes more methods than are discussed here, including TL, ESR, racemization, fluorine/uranium/nitrogen uptake, cosmic-ray exposure-age, fission track, radiocarbon, and others.

Strahler, Arthur N. (1987) *Science and Earth History--The Evolution/Creation Controversy*. Prometheus Books, Buffalo, 552 pp.

This book is a very thorough and comprehensive refutation of young-Earth ideas, written by a non-Christian. The only negative aspect is that at one point Strahler throws in a bit of his own theology--his arguments against the need for a God. This book is long and in small print; it covers a wealth of information.

For ice core studies, the Journal of Geophysical Research, volume 102, (1997) starting with page 26,315, has 47 papers on two deep ice cores drilled in central Greenland.

Books on scripture, theology, and science:

Snoke, David (1998) *A Biblical Case for an Old Earth*. Interdisciplinary Biblical Research Institute (IBRI), Hatfield, PA, 76 pp.

Dr. Snoke, an elder in the Presbyterian Church (PCA) and a Physics professor, presents a strong case for a geologically old Earth. He addresses typical objections brought up by young-Earth adherents, including the death of animals before Adam and Eve's sin, entropy (or decay) before the fall, the six days of creation, and the flood.

Sailhamer, John (1996) *Genesis Unbound*. Multnomah Books, Sisters, OR, 257 pp.

This is a very readable theological book about Genesis. Dr. Sailhamer has served on the translation committees for two versions of the book of Genesis. He has taught at Bethel Seminary, Philadelphia College of the Bible, Trinity Evangelical Divinity School, Northwestern College, and Western Seminary.

Ross, Hugh (1994) *Creation and Time: A Biblical and Scientific Perspective on the Creation-Date Controversy*. NavPress, Colorado Springs, CO.

Hugh Ross has a PhD in Astronomy. In this book Dr. Ross defends modern science and an old age for the universe, and refutes common young-Earth arguments. He firmly believes in the inerrancy of the Bible.

Stoner, Don (1992) *A New Look at an Old Earth*. Schroeder, Paramount, CA, 191 pp.

A persuasive book written for the Christian layman. Stoner uses arguments both from the theological and the scientific side. He talks somewhat philosophically about whether God deceives us with the Genesis account if the Earth is really old. Stoner also tries to discuss the meaning of the Genesis 1 text.

Van Till Howard J., Young Davis A., and Menninga Clarence (1988) *Science Held Hostage*. InterVarsity, Downers Grove, IL, 189 pp.

This book talks about the misuse of science by both hard-line atheists and by young-Earth creationists. A good deal of the book is devoted to refuting young-Earth arguments, including a substantial section on the Grand Canyon geology. Its authors are well-known Christians in Geology and Physics.

Wiester, John (1983) *The Genesis Connection*. Interdisciplinary Biblical Research Institute, Hatfield, PA, 254 pp.

John Wiester has taught Geology at Westmont and Biola University, and is active in the American Scientific Affiliation, an organization of scientists who are Christians. This book discusses many scientific discoveries relating to the age of the Earth and how these fit into the context of Genesis 1.

Young, Davis A. (1982) *Christianity and the Age of the Earth*. Zondervan, Grand Rapids, MI (now available through Artisan Sales, Thousand Oaks, CA).

Davis Young has a PhD in Geology and teaches at Calvin College. He argues for an old Earth and refutes many of the common young-Earth claims (including their objections to radiometric dating).

Acknowledgements: A number of members of the American Scientific Affiliation and other Christians involved in the sciences reviewed this paper and/or made contributions. The following people are sincerely thanked for their contributions to the first edition: Drs. Jeffery Greenberg and Stephen Moshier (Wheaton College), John Wiester (Westmont College), Dr. Davis Young (Calvin College), Dr. Elaine Kennedy (Loma Linda University), Steven Schimrich (U. of Illinois), Dr. Kenneth VanDellen (Macomb Community College), Dr. Guillermo Gonzalez (U. Texas, Austin), Ronald Kneusel, and James Gruetzner (U. New Mexico). The second edition, likewise, was significantly improved through reviews by Carol Ann Hill, Hill Roberts, Professor Jeffrey Greenberg (Wheaton College), Ken Wohlgemuth, and Dr. Kenneth Van Dellen. I thank my wife Gwen, and children, Carson and Isaac, for supporting me in this work, and I thank God for giving us the intelligence to understand little bits and pieces of His amazing creation.

More about the author: Dr. Wiens received a bachelor's degree in Physics from Wheaton College and a PhD from the University of Minnesota, doing research on meteorites and moon rocks. He spent two years at Scripps Institution of Oceanography (La Jolla, CA) where he studied isotopes of helium, neon, argon, and nitrogen in terrestrial rocks. He worked seven years in the Geological and Planetary Sciences Division at Caltech, where he continued the study of meteorites and worked for NASA on the feasibility of a space mission to return solar wind samples to Earth for study. Dr. Wiens wrote the first edition of this paper while in Pasadena. In 1997 he joined the Space and Atmospheric Sciences group at Los Alamos National Laboratory, where he has been in charge of building and flying the payload for the solar-wind mission, as well as developing new instruments for other space missions. He has published over twenty scientific research papers and has also published articles in Christian magazines. Dr. Wiens became a Christian at a young age, and has been a member of Mennonite Brethren, General Conference Baptist, and Conservative Congregational, and Vineyard denominations. He does not see a conflict between science in its ideal form (the study of God's handiwork) and the Bible, or between miracles on the one hand, and an old Earth on the other.

GLOSSARY

Alpha decay Radioactive decay in which the atom's nucleus emits an alpha particle. An alpha particle consists of two neutrons and two protons--the same as a helium atom nucleus. In alpha decay, the daughter is four atomic mass units lighter than the parent. Alpha decay is most common in heavy elements.

Atom The smallest unit that materials can be divided into. An atom is about ten billionths of an inch in diameter and consists of a nucleus of nucleons (protons and neutrons) surrounded by electrons.

Beta decay Radioactive decay in which the atom's nucleus emits or captures an electron or positron. The daughter ends up with the same mass as the parent, but ends up with one more neutron and one less proton, or vice versa. Because of the different number of protons, the daughter is a different element with different chemical properties than the parent.

Bound-state beta decay A special kind of beta decay in which an electron is given off by the nucleus, and the electron ends up in an inner orbital, or electron shell. This kind of decay only occurs if the nucleus is stripped of the electrons that would normally be in the inner electron shells. As such, this decay only occurs in the center of stars, and was only confirmed experimentally in the 1990s.

Calibration The cross-checking of one measurement with another, usually more certain measurement. Essentially every method of measurement, whether a thermometer, a ruler, or a more complicated instrument, relies on calibration for accuracy.

Carbonate A term used rather loosely in this context to describe deposits containing the carbonate anion. Carbonates play an important role in many caves, where cave formations are the result of dissolution and re-precipitation of material interacting with carbonic acid. Carbonates in recent cave deposits are useful because of their high carbon content, which can be used to calibrate radiocarbon with uranium-series ages.

Closed system A system (rock, planet, etc.) which has no influence or exchange with the outside world. In reality there is always some exchange or influence, but if this amount is completely insignificant for the process under consideration (e.g., for dating, if the loss or gain of atoms is insignificant) for practical purposes the system can be considered closed.

Cosmic ray A very high-energy particle which flies through space. Cosmic Rays are stopped by the Earth's atmosphere, but in the process, they constantly produce carbon-14, beryllium-10, chlorine-36, and a few other radioactive isotopes in small quantities.

Cosmic-ray exposure dating Dating of surfaces exposed to cosmic rays by measuring the neon-21, helium-3, or other cosmogenic isotopes produced in rocks or meteorites exposed to cosmic rays.

Cosmogenic Produced by bombardment of cosmic rays. Carbon-14 is said to be cosmogenic because it is produced by cosmic rays hitting the Earth's atmosphere.

Daughter The element or isotope which is produced by radioactive decay.

Decay The change from one element or isotope to another. Only certain isotopes decay. The rest are said to be stable.

Dendrochronology The counting of yearly growth rings on trees. A continuous record of growth rings has been used to calibrate radiocarbon ages back as far as 10,000 years ago. "Floating" dendrochronologies (non-continuous records) go back farther in time.

Deposit Mineral or sandy matter settled out of water or accumulated in a vein.

Deuterium 'Heavy hydrogen'; the heavy isotope of hydrogen which contains one proton and one neutron, as compared with only a single proton in normal hydrogen. Water consists of molecules mostly containing normal hydrogen, but with a few molecules containing deuterium.

Electron-capture decay The only type of radioactive decay that requires the presence of something--an electron--outside of the atom's nucleus. Electron capture decay of light atoms--those having the fewest electrons--can be very slightly affected by extremely high pressures or certain chemical bonds, so as to change their half-lives by a fraction of a percent. But no change in the half-lives of elements used for radiometric dating has ever been verified.

Element A substance that has a certain number of protons in the nucleus. Each element has unique properties. Elements may be further broken down into isotopes, which have nearly all of the same properties except for their mass and their radioactive decay characteristics.

Extinct Once in existence, but no longer existing in nature.

Radioactive Subject to change from one element to another. During the change, or decay, energy is released either in the form of light or energetic particles.

Radiocarbon Carbon-14, which is used to date dead plant and animal matter. Radiocarbon is generally not used for dating rocks.

Radiometric dating Determination of a time interval (e.g. the time since formation of a rock) by means of the radioactive decay of its material. Radiometric dating is one subset of the many dating methods used in geology.

Stalactite A cylindrical or conical deposit of minerals, generally calcite or aragonite (forms of calcium carbonate), hanging from the roof of a cavern, and generally formed by precipitation (or crystallization) of carbonates from water dripping from the roof.

Stalagmite Columns or ridges of carbonate rising from a limestone cave floor, and formed by water charged with carbonate dripping from the stalactites above.

Thermoluminescence (TL) dating A method of dating minerals and pottery. Rather than relying on a half-life, this method relies instead on the total amount of radiation experienced by the mineral since the time it was formed. This radiation causes disorder in the crystals, resulting in electrons dwelling in higher orbits than they originally did. When the sample is heated in the laboratory in the presence of a sensitive light detector, these electrons return to their original orbits, emitting light and allowing an age to be determined by comparison of the amount of light to the radioactivity rate experienced by the mineral. Variations on this method include optically-stimulated luminescence (OSL) and infrared-stimulated luminescence (IRSL) dating.

Three-isotope plot In dating, this is a plot in which one axis represents the parent isotope and the other axis represents the daughter isotope. Both parent and daughter isotopes are ratioed to a daughter-element isotope that is not produced by radioactive decay. So the vertical axis gives the daughter/stable ratio while the horizontal axis gives the parent/stable isotope ratio. This type of plot gives the age independent of the original amounts of the isotopes.

Tree ring A ring visible in the sawed or cored section of a tree which indicates how much it grew in a year. The age of a tree can be determined by counting the growth rings.

Two-component mixing The mixing of two different source materials to produce a rock. On rare occasions this can result in an incorrect age for certain methods that use three-isotope plots. Two-component mixing can be recognized if more than one dating method is used, or if surrounding rocks are dated.

Uranium-series decay chain The decay of the long-lived uranium-238 and -235 and thorium-232 which produce shorter-lived radioactive daughters, each of which decay to lighter radioactive elements until they eventually end up as various stable isotopes of lead.

Varve A sedimentary layer showing distinct texture or color for different seasons within a single year. Varve layers can be counted like tree rings.

Xenolith Literally, a foreign chunk of rock within a rock. Some rocks contain pieces of older rocks within them. These pieces were ripped off of the magma chamber in which the main rock formed and were incorporated into the rock without melting. Xenoliths do not occur in most rocks, and they are usually recognizable by eye where they do occur. If unrecognized, they can result in an incorrect date for a rock (the date may be of the older xenolith).

NOTE: This and other studies can be found at:

www.truthforthealldays.com

www.theseecretofeternallife.com

www.clparker.com